

**THE TEXT IS FLY  
WITHIN THE BOOK  
ONLY**





208 P55c

1273748

Phillips

The choice is always ours.

kansas city



public library

kansas city, missouri

Books will be issued only  
on presentation of library card.

Please report lost cards and  
change of residence promptly.

Card holders are responsible for  
all books, records, films, pictures  
or other library materials  
checked out on their cards.



THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO







**THE CHOICE  
IS ALWAYS OURS**



# THE CHOICE IS ALWAYS OURS

*An Anthology on the Religious Way*

CHOSEN FROM PSYCHOLOGICAL, RELIGIOUS,  
PHILOSOPHICAL AND BIOGRAPHICAL SOURCES

*Edited by*

DOROTHY BERKLEY PHILLIPS

*Co-editors*

ELIZABETH BOYDEN HOWES

LUCILLE M. NIXON



RICHARD R. SMITH

NEW YORK

1948



COPYRIGHT, 1948, BY DOROTHY B. PHILLIPS  
PUBLISHED BY RICHARD R. SMITH  
120 East 39th Street, New York 16, N. Y.

*All Rights Reserved*

No part of this book may be reproduced in any  
form without permission of the publisher.

TYPOGRAPHY BY BROWN BROTHERS LINOTYPERS  
PRINTED IN THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA  
BY THE FERRIS PRINTING COMPANY

*TO*  
*OUR DEAR FRIEND AND COOPERATOR*  
*HELEN PRICE*  
(1892-1943)

The choice is always ours. Then, let me choose  
The longest art, the hard Promethean way  
Cherishingly to tend and feed and fan  
That inward fire, whose small precarious flame,  
Kindled or quenched, creates  
The noble or the ignoble men we are,  
The worlds we live in and the very fates,  
Our bright or muddy star.

ALDOUS HUXLEY

## *Acknowledgments*

This anthology has been a cooperative venture in the broadest sense. Its origin, plan of research, process of editing, and organization of material have been the joint responsibility of a small group, three of whom worked closely together through portions of the past ten years. These three were assisted in recent years on special editing problems by Sheila Moon. The editors are very appreciative of her valuable help. Because of the force of circumstances the final work on the book, the revision and the binding together of the whole, had to be left to the chairman. A major share of responsibility for the compilation in its present form, therefore, rests with her.

There are both advantages and disadvantages to a long-term cooperative effort, but in this case, though the emphases throughout the book do not necessarily represent the most mature viewpoint of each editor, the composite whole is so much the richer for the years of steady pooling of insight.\*

The editors wish to express their gratitude to each of the many persons who helped with the research in varying degrees, especially during the first years of our work. The enthusiasm and practical help which they lent to the undertaking were very heartening. Among those contributing most substantially were Ruth Raymond, Beatrice Shipley, Marshall Rhew, Mary Joyce McGoodwin, Helen Salisbury, Ruth Patterson Wolfe, Julia Phillips Ruopp, Alvin Scaff, Barbara Delkin, and Sophia Buckingham. In addition, we wish to thank the several individuals who graciously responded to our request for original statements, as included herein.

We are also indebted to a number of persons who read the manuscript at its various stages, in whole or in part, and gave valuable suggestions. Among these were Eugene Exman, Gerald Heard, Allan and Elizabeth Hunter, Denver Lindley, Bernard E. Meland, Dora Willson and Clarence H. Yarrow.

Then there are those friends who encouraged us with financial aid

\* The use of a single asterisk (\*) at the close of a selection indicates an abridgment of material. The use of two asterisks (\*\*) indicates that the material is slightly rearranged. Special care has been taken to avoid distortion of meaning.

from time to time, and many others who through the years assisted with the enormous amount of mechanical detail. Among this latter group are several whose devoted effort over the past year was largely responsible for getting the book into publication. Our very special thanks therefore go to Beatrice Shipley, Luella Sibbald, Julia Ruopp, Ruth Warnick, Georgianna Overbaugh and Gladys Bardey. Also the chairman wishes to express her loving gratitude to a sister, Ruth M. Phillips, for her constant interest and support throughout the preparation of the book.

Finally, there is a group of individuals who through the years have in their own writings and in personal contacts richly and profoundly influenced the thinking and living of the editors. They have, in a very real sense, proved determining factors in whatever insight is to be found in the selection of material for these pages. One among this group is Henry Burton Sharman, whose seminars yielded intellectual and religious insights that definitely contributed to the form and structure of the book. To him, as to the others, we tender our deep gratitude.

The editors and their co-workers are appreciative of the considerate cooperation accorded them by the publishers and authors in granting requests for reprint privileges on copyrighted material, some of which represented longer selections than are usually released for reprint. The names of these authors and publishers and the titles of the books follow.

Lucille M. Nixon

Elizabeth Boyden Howes

Dorothy Berkley Phillips, *Chairman*

Monrovia, California

February, 1948

Abingdon-Cokesbury Press; *Ways of Praying* by Muriel Lester, 1932; *The Springs of Creative Living* by Rollo May, copyright 1940 by Whitmore and Stone; used by permission of the publisher, Abingdon-Cokesbury Press. Abingdon-Cokesbury Press and E. Stanley Jones for a selection from *Victorious Living* by E. Stanley Jones, copyright 1936 by the author.

George Allen and Unwin, Ltd.; *Inner Light*, First Series by Helen Wodehouse.

D. Appleton-Century & Co. and Frances G. Wickes; *The Inner World of Childhood* by Frances G. Wickes; *The Life and Letters of Thomas Huxley* by Leonard Huxley, 1901.

D. Appleton-Century Co. and John MacMurray; *Reason and Emotion* by John MacMurray, copyright 1936 by the author.

Association Press: *Three Trumpets Sound* by Allan Hunter; *Prayer and*

- Worship* by Douglas Steere; *Christian Faith and Democracy* by Gregory Vlastos.
- Baillere, Tindall and Cox (London); *Mythology of the Soul* by H. G. Baynes; *Two Essays on Analytical Psychology* by Carl G. Jung, trans. by H. G. and C. F. Baynes.
- Behrman House, Inc.; *The Jewish Anthology* by Edmond Fleg, trans. by Maurice Samuel.
- A. C. Black & Co., Ltd. (London); *On the Edge of the Primeval Forest* by Albert Schweitzer, trans. by C. T. Champion.
- John Elof Boodin; *Cosmic Evolution* by John Elof Boodin.
- Burns, Oates and Washburne, Ltd.; *Holy Wisdom* by Fr. F. Augustine Baker; *An Introduction to the Devout Life* by Saint Francis de Sales, trans. by Allan Ross; *The Cloud of Unknowing*, edited by Dom Justin McCann.
- Jonathan Cape, Ltd. (London) and John Middleton Murry; *To the Unknown God* by John Middleton Murry; and *The Necessity of Communism* by John Middleton Murry.
- Clarendon Press, Oxford; *The Dhammapada*, in *Sacred Books of the East*, trans. by F. Max Müller; and *The Discourses and Manual of Epictetus*, trans. by P. E. Matheson.
- William Cleveland, Jr., Editor of *Inward Light*, for selections by Richard Gregg, William Penn, Gerald Heard, Elise Morgan and Rufus Jones.
- Stanwood Cobb for poem in *Patterns of Jade* by Wu Ming Fu, published by Avalon Press, 1935.
- Howard F. Collier and The Guild of Pastoral Psychology; for selections from a lecture, *Place of Worship in Modern Medicine* by Howard F. Collier, M.D., 1944.
- Columbia University Press; for two poems from *Rainer Maria Rilke Poems*, trans. by Jessie Lemont, 1943.
- Thomas Y. Crowell Company; selections from *Tolstoy's Complete Works*, trans. by Aline Delano, reprinted by permission of the publisher Thomas Y. Crowell Co.
- John Day Company, Inc.; Special permission to reprint from *The Discovery of India* by Jawaharlal Nehru, copyright 1946 by John Day Company, Inc.
- John Day Company, Inc., and to Witter Bynner; for two sayings: "Men of Stamina" and "A Sound Man's Heart" from *Laotzu's Way of Life*, trans. by Witter Bynner.
- Doubleday and Co., Inc.; a quotation from *Personal History* by Vincent Sheean, copyright 1934, 1935, 1936 by Vincent Sheean.
- E. P. Dutton and Co., Inc.; *The Little Flowers of St. Francis*, trans. by T. Okey; *The Mirror of Perfection*, trans. by Robert Steele; *The Republic of Plato*, trans. by A. D. Lindsay; *The Life of Prayer* by Freiderich Von Hugel.

- Germanica*, trans. by Susanna Winkworth; *The Avatars* by George E. Russell.
- Methuen and Co., Ltd. and Executrix of Evelyn Underhill's Estate; *Mysticism* by Evelyn Underhill, copyright 1911.
- Morehouse-Gorham Co.; *The Art of Mental Prayer* by Rev. Bede Frost, copyright 1932.
- William Morrow & Co., Inc. and Gerald Heard; *The Third Morality* by Gerald Heard, copyright 1937 by Gerald Heard.
- John Murray; *The Spirit of Zen* by Allan W. Watts, copyright 1936.
- John Middleton Murry; *God* by J. Middleton Murry, published by Harper & Brothers, 1929; and for the poem *From the Wilderness* by William Soutar, printed in *The Adelphi*.
- W. W. Norton and Co., Inc.; *Mysticism and Logic* by Bertrand Russell, copyright 1929 by the publisher; *The Neurotic Personality of Our Time* by Karen Horney, copyright 1937 by the publisher; and *Where Is Science Going?* by Max Planck, copyright 1932 by the publisher.
- Harriet Nugent; the poem *Creative Patience*.
- Oxford University Press, New York; *Christian Discourses* by Soren Kierkegaard, copyright 1939; *Studies in Keats* by J. Middleton Murry, copyright 1930; *These Hurrying Years* by Gerald Heard, copyright 1934; and *A Study of History* by Arnold J. Toynbee, abridgment by D. C. Somervell, copyright 1946. (Work published by Oxford University Press on behalf of Royal Institute of International Affairs.)
- Pantheon Books Inc.; *Charles Peguy* Vol. 1, trans. by Ann and Julian Green. Copyright 1943 by the publisher.
- H. S. L. Polak, Executor of the Estate of C. F. Andrews, and the Macmillan Company; *Mahatma Gandhi's Ideas*, by C. F. Andrews.
- Swami Pavitrananda; *Karma-Yoga* by Swami Vivekananda, copyright 1938.
- Swami Prabhavananda; for quotations from *Vedic Philosophy and Religion*, published by President Sri Ramakrishna Math.
- Ramakrishna-Vivekananda Center; *Raja-Yoga* by Swami Vivekananda, copyright 1933.
- Random House, Inc.; *The Golden Mean of Tsesze* and *The Book of Tao*, as quoted in *Wisdom of China and India*, edited by Lin Yutang.
- Random House, Inc. and W. H. Auden for permission to quote from the poem *For the Time Being* by W. H. Auden, copyright by W. H. Auden.
- Reynal and Hitchcock, Inc.; *Kabloona* by Gontran de Poncins, copyright 1941.
- Rinehart and Co., Inc.; *The Integration of Personality* by C. G. Jung, copyright 1939; Rinehart and Co., Inc. and Frances G. Wickes; *The Inner World of Man* by Frances G. Wickes, copyright 1938 by the author.
- Round Table Press; *Come Holy Spirit* by Karl Barth and E. Thurneysen, copyright 1934.

- Dane Rudhyar; for the poem "I Charge You" from *White Thunder* by Dane Rudhyar, copyright 1938.
- Charles Scribner's and Sons; *Discerning the Signs of the Times* by Reinhold Neibuhr; *God and the Common Life* by Robert Calhoun, copyright 1935; *The Christian Fact and Modern Doubt* by George Buttrick, copyright 1934; *Motives of Men* by George A. Coe, copyright 1928; *In Search of Maturity* by Fritz Kunkel, copyright 1943; *How Character Develops* by Fritz Kunkel and Roy E. Dickerson, copyright 1940.
- Sheed and Ward, Inc.; *The Spiritual Letters of Dom John Chapman* by Dom Roger Huddleston, copyright 1944; *Progress Through Mental Prayer* by Edward Leen, copyright 1938.
- Simon and Schuster, Inc. and Joshua Loth Liebman; *Peace of Mind* by Joshua Loth Liebman, copyright 1946 by Joshua Loth Liebman.
- Simon and Schuster, Inc. and Josephine Johnson; for the poem from *Year's End*, copyright 1937 by Josephine Johnson; and a portion of the poem "September" from *Winter Orchard*, copyright 1935 by Josephine Johnson.
- Student Christian Movement Press (London) and John MacMurray; *Creative Society* by John MacMurray, copyright 1938 by the author.
- Mrs. Frances Temple; for the quotation from *The Hope of a New World* by William Temple.
- Rose Terlin; *Prayer and Christian Living* by Rose Terlin.
- University of Chicago Press; *Bhagavad-Gita*, trans. by A. Ryder, copyright 1929; *The Bible—An American Translation*, by J. M. Powis Smith and Edgar J. Goodspeed, copyright 1935 by the University of Chicago; *The Source of Human Good* by Henry Nelson Wieman, copyright 1946 by University of Chicago.
- The Vedanta Centre; *Bhagavad-Gita*, trans. by Swami Paramananda.
- Viking Press; *The Letters of D. H. Lawrence*, edited by Aldous Huxley, copyright 1932 by Estate of D. H. Lawrence, by permission of Viking Press, Inc. New York.
- Ives Washburn, Inc.; *Let's Be Normal* by Fritz Kunkel, copyright 1929; and *God Helps Those* by Fritz Kunkel, copyright 1931.
- John M. Watkins; *The Cloud of Unknowing*, edited by Evelyn Underhill, copyright 1934.
- Henry Nelson Wieman; *The Issues of Life*, by H. N. Wieman.
- Willett, Clark and Co.; *Oberlin, A Protestant Saint* by Marshall Dawson; *The Growth of Religion* by H. N. Wieman and Walter M. Horton, copyright 1938; *The Exploration of the Inner World* by Anton T. Boisen, copyright 1936.
- Miss Toni Wolff and The Guild of Pastoral Psychology (London); for selections from a lecture, "Christianity Within" by Toni Wolff.
- The Woman's Press; *The Religious Way* and *The Religious Person in the*



*Acknowledgments*

*World Today* by Gregory Vlastos; and *Christian Faith and Social Action* by Rose Terlin.

Yale University Press; *A Common Faith* by John Dewey, copyright 1934; *The Meaning of God in Human Experience* by W. E. Hocking, copyright 1912; *The Psychology of Jung* by Jolan Jacobi, trans. by K. W. Bash, 1943; *A Philosophical Study of Mysticism* by Charles A. Bennett, copyright 1923.

Except for a few brief instances, and where otherwise indicated, the Bible quotations used herein were taken from the English Revised Version, Oxford University Press, 1881.

NOTE: Special effort was made to trace the author and copyright ownership of, and to secure reprint permission for, each selection. If any selection has inadvertently been used without the necessary permission, the editors wish to express their regret for the oversight and their desire, on receiving notification, to make acknowledgments in future editions.

# *Contents*

	PAGE
ACKNOWLEDGMENTS	vii
GENERAL INTRODUCTION	xix

## PART ONE

### *THE WAY*

#### CHAPTER

I.	THE SEARCH AND THE FINDING	3
	The Search for the Way	4
	The Finding of the Way	10
	Paradoxical Statements of the Way	12
	General Statements of the Way	18
II.	THE IMPLICATIONS OF THE WAY	39
	The Way Implies Choice	40
	The Way Implies an Inner Purgation	46
	The Way Implies Self-knowledge and Self-acceptance	69
	The Way Implies Devotion to the Good	88
	The Way Implies a Rebirth	101
III.	PROGRESSION ON THE WAY	109
	Rate and Stages of Progression	112
	Obstacles to Progression	128
	Role of Suffering and Crisis	145
	Meeting of Temptation and Failure	158

## PART TWO

*THE TECHNIQUES*

	PAGE
INTRODUCTION	167
CHAPTER	
IV. PRAYER AND MEDITATION	175
Definition	176
Value and Function	183
Kinds and Degrees	195
Role of the Spiritual Director	210
Important Aids to Meditation	218
V. PRAYER AND MEDITATION (Continued)	231
Procedures and Patterns	232
Instruction on Discursive Meditation	235
Suggested Patterns for Meditation	247
Brief Instruction for Affective Prayer	277
Difficulties of the Beginner	282
VI. PSYCHOTHERAPY	299
Relation of Psychotherapy and Religion	300
Role of Dream Analysis	309
Some Self-education Procedures	322
VII. FELLOWSHIP	335
VIII. ACTION	349

PART THREE

*THE OUTCOMES*

	PAGE
INTRODUCTION	371
CHAPTER	
IX. INWARD RENEWAL	373
X. OUTWARD CREATIVITY	397
Between Individuals	398
In Friendship	399
In Marriage	402
XI. OUTWARD CREATIVITY (Continued)	407
Between Individuals and Society	408
In Attitude	408
In Influence and Action	428
Within the Beloved Community	449
APPENDIX: The Object of Devotion	465
Some Modern Ideas of God	469
Some Classic Mystic Ideas of God	489
SUGGESTED READING	497
INDEX OF AUTHORS	501
INDEX OF SUBJECT MATTER	503



## *General Introduction*

This compilation presents a mosaic of human insight. It has as its central theme a "Way" which all men seek, few find, few enter, and still fewer progressively follow, though it proffers the means by which man's most fundamental longing can be realized.

Deep in the psychic structure of every individual there is an urge for the kind of fulfillment which will yield joy, serenity, wisdom, creativity, and power. Man, consciously or unconsciously, desires to obtain the insight whereby he can resolve his own personal turbulences, achieve an organic inter-dependence with his fellow man, and gain a sense of the end for which he was created. Through the ages of man's history there have been some individuals in whom this longing became so heightened that they penetrated to a perception of the way to its achievement. From some of these men have come recorded sayings. Around the teaching of the most proficient of them there have been organized the world's great religions. Unfortunately, in almost every case, accumulations of rigid dogma, superstition and belief have served to conceal the major outlines of the path which they sought to reveal. It is with the original insights and convictions of these individuals and with those who follow them in point of time that we are herein concerned. It is around their writings that the research for this book was begun.

Because there was interest in discovering the furtherest reaches in the *universality* of the Way, and in presenting it stripped of non-essentials, and couched in terms intelligible to those for whom religious terminology forms impenetrable barriers, the research was not limited to religious literature, but was extended to other fields.

In spite of wide variance in emphasis and diversity in expression, significant agreements were discovered in the writing and recorded sayings from men of all ages and all religions.

First, there was found unanimity concerning the nature of man's basic desire. Selections presenting this central motivating factor form the initial aspect of Part One, entitled "The Search for the Way."

A second area of agreement concerned itself with the answer to the

questions: "How can man actualize this basic desire?", "What conditions are required for its fulfillment?". Material formulating these conditions and their implications composes the major portion of Part One, entitled "The Way."

There was concurrence also in the idea that this Way was one of progression, "not a state, but a walk," leading through several stages. These stages or degrees of progression were found to be described with marked similarity by devotees of all religions. In order to overcome obstacles and to accelerate the rate of progress, special training was indicated—a training which reached beyond the conscious self to the unconscious where are rooted the habit patterns needing transformation. The principal methods which were found to be effective in assisting this reconditioning process are described in Part Two, "The Techniques."

A fourth agreement had to do with outcomes resulting in the lives of those who progressively follow the Way. It was found that no particular "set" of outcomes could be expected to occur uniformly in all persons, but rather that they could be foreseen to vary in degree and kind according to individual temperament, background, and stage of clarification. There was essential and convincing agreement that all results at every stage of the Way were releasing of the real and expanding self, as opposed to the false and constricting self. They were Life-giving. It was impressive to note that the outcomes experienced by those far advanced on the Way were similar in quality. They are described variously as "union with God," "enlightenment," "fulfillment," or "realization," and were considered by some as an extension of consciousness, a phenomenon interpreted by several modern writers as representing a next step in man's evolutionary progress.

In summary then, distinctions are made in the three parts between that which motivates man to seek fullness of life; that which leads him to the true goal; the methods by which he progressively achieves fulfillment, and the outcomes of his search.

These significant agreements forming the main structure of the book were found to rest on a minimal philosophic premise, *i.e.*, that there exists an ultimate Reality that is by nature both transcendent and immanent. The immanent aspect, "this something of God in man," traces its ancestry to early Hindu<sup>1</sup> sources, thence to the Socratic movement in philosophy,

<sup>1</sup> "God, the maker of all things, the great Self always dwelling in the heart of man, as perceived by the heart, the soul, the mind." Svetasvatara Upanishad.

and on to the teaching of Jesus.<sup>2</sup> Since then it has been variously expressed as: "the spark within," "the ground of the soul," "the inward Voice," "the inner Light," "the core," "the central autonomous self," "the intuitive faculty," "the Real Self," "the inner Vocation," "that something which binds us to the deeper processes of consciousness," "that potentiality of an extension of consciousness," *et cetera*. The fourteenth century *Theologica Germanica* sums it up thus, "Goodness needeth not to enter into the soul, for it is there already, only it is unperceived."

The approaches by which man becomes convinced of the existence of this "unperceived goodness" of God, within and without, are many and diverse. For the majority of mankind it seems to have become most real when seen historically manifest through a Jesus, a Socrates, a St. Francis, a Buddha; for others the only convincing approach has been through the postulates of reason, and very recently through the frontier findings of science which point irrefutably to "a ground and explanation of fragmentary data." Some seekers experience flashes of vision through nature and art which convince them of an Infinite Life. Still others are able to proceed on the hypothesis of the Real Self (as opposed to the Seeming-Self) such as is basic to several contemporary systems of psychotherapy; and others discern in the processes of history that which reveals purposive direction and meaning.

This leads to a striking observation: *whatever the approach, and however complicated the philosophical or theological super-structure erected upon it, the essentials of the Way whereby Reality becomes transformingly effective in the individual life were found to be identical and universal.*

Although this compilation of material on the Way was not designed to follow any particular tradition, it would, if placed in an historic framework, probably fit best into the Quaker tradition, for its sole concern is how man comes to apprehend and respond to that Inward Light whereby life becomes increasingly illumined.

The arrangement in each section grew out of the material which had been assembled. In no case were selections forced into a pre-arranged outline. As much care was taken at this point as was taken in earlier stages of our work, when readers were cautioned to use care in selecting material that it not be wrested from its natural context, and thus do violence to the author's meaning.

<sup>2</sup> "Neither shall they say, Lo here! or, lo there! for, behold, the kingdom of God is within you." Luke 17:21.



Because the arrangement in Parts One and Two is a sequential one the reader will find it to his advantage to proceed through these sections in their present order, choosing those selections in each aspect, as he goes along, which are most meaningful to him. Since variety of approach was one of the goals of the research it is not expected that all selections will have a like appeal for all readers. It is hoped, however, that each re-reading will uncover new favorites as behind the sometimes difficult phraseology the reality is found.

The compilation was made with three groups of readers in mind: those persons, even of skeptical mind, who are consciously seeking the Way;<sup>3</sup> those who have entered upon it but who seek further clarification; and those more advanced on the Way who may find it useful in their direction of others. The compilation should qualify as a source book for instruction and inspiration for both individuals and groups.

It is with increasing humility that the editors have pursued their work. As beginners on the Way they realize the presumptuous nature of their attempt. It is with reluctance that they release their task, since further research and the hope of greater insight continue to beckon. However, it is believed that a compilation of this kind may be welcome now, when man's inner conflict, as tragic evidence of his unfulfilled nature, has perpetrated on the world another devastating crisis, leaving it prostrate with need. Again man has been given irrefutable evidence of his failure to achieve a sound basis for interdependence with his fellow-men, an interdependence that cannot rise from political or economic adjustments—for it is grounded not in outer circumstance<sup>4</sup> but in the inner life of man. It is to those who seek the cultivation of this inner life that the authors herein speak. It is to them that this book is dedicated.

<sup>3</sup> The completely uninitiated will probably profit most by using this collection in conjunction with a more simple treatment of the religious Way by a single author. The very richness and variety of an anthology if used alone might be confusing to some. (See Suggested Reading.)

<sup>4</sup> "Society is a 'field of action' but the source of all action is in the individuals composing it." *A Study of History* by A. J. Toynbee, p. 211.

## PART ONE

### *The Way*

I give you the end of a golden string;  
Only wind it into a ball,  
It will lead you in at Heaven's gate—  
Built in Jerusalem's wall.

WILLIAM BLAKE

Let not the authority of the writer offend  
thee whether he be of great or small learning;  
but let the love of pure truth draw thee  
to read.

THOMAS A KEMPIS



## CHAPTER ONE

### *The Search and the Finding*

Do you not seek a light, ye who are surrounded by darkness?

THE DHAMMAPADA

Whosoever shall seek to save his life shall lose it; and whosoever shall lose his life shall preserve it.

JESUS OF NAZARETH

Never to have seen the truth is better than to have seen it and not to have acted upon it.

ANONYMOUS

## CHAPTER ONE

### *The Search and the Finding*

#### THE SEARCH FOR THE WAY

"There is one great and universal wish of mankind expressed in all religions, in all art and philosophy, and in all human life; *the wish to pass beyond himself as he now is.*"<sup>1</sup>

In this statement we find one expression on the part of man of a persistent desire continuing throughout the centuries for a fulfillment which brings to actuality the capacities and capabilities that are truly his own nature but which lie dormant. This search has been conceived of and expressed in an infinite number of ways within the fields of religion, philosophy, psychology, art, literature, and those other fields which concern themselves with dynamic life processes. At its core has been the consciousness that man could and wanted to live with an orientation towards all happenings and events which gave to his life a sense of meaning, of purpose, of reality and of eternity.

This desire is the underlying motive for the search, the finding, and the actuation of the religious way of life as defined in this book. Behind the diverse expressions of it which follow there is a basic unity—a common denominator, the "wish of man to pass beyond himself as he now is."

#### As a Desire for Orientation

Psychologists well know that the deepest element of human happiness is embodied in the idea of movement toward something; movement in the "right" direction; and all of the devices of therapeutic psychiatry are really only shoves and pushes and suggestions intended to help a mind find its particular right direction of movement. Continued observations of this basic dynamic nature of

<sup>1</sup> Beatrice Hinkle, *The Re-creating of the Individual*.

happiness, especially in clinical psychological practice, leads almost inevitably to the conclusion that deeper and more fundamental than sexuality, deeper than the craving for social power, deeper even than the desire for possessions, there is a still more generalized and more universal craving in the human make-up. *It is the craving for knowledge of the right direction—for orientation.*

This craving is not quite so obvious as the other patterns of human desire, because it is more general, deeper, and the positive and negative feeling-tones it engenders are not locally felt, hence come less often to a specific attention focus. Yet every system of philosophy, whether called religious or not, is at bottom a human attempt to satisfy the craving to be pointed in the right direction.

William H. Sheldon, M.D., 1899-. American psychologist.  
*Psychology and the Promethean Will.*

### As the Intent of Nature

Know that, by nature, every creature seeks to become like God. Nature's intent is neither food nor drink nor clothing, nor comfort, nor anything else in which God is left out. Whether you like it or not, whether you know it or not, secretly nature seeks, hunts, tries to ferret out the track on which God may be found.\*

Meister Johannes Eckhart, 1260-1327. German scholar, mystic.  
*Meister Eckhart*, Trans. R. Blakney.

### As the Quest of Consciousness

No one is born a new being. He bears in his psyche the imprint of past generations. He is a combination of ancestral units from which a new being must be fused, yet he also bears within him an essential germ, a potential of a unique individual value. The discovery of this unique essence and its development is the quest of consciousness.

Frances G. Wickes, 1882-. American psychotherapist.  
*The Inner World of Man.*

### As a Surging Purpose

We all know that there are regions of the human spirit untrammelled by the world of physics. In the mystic sense of the creation around us, in the expression of art, in a yearning towards God, the

\* The use of a single asterisk indicates an abridgment of material.

soul grows upward and finds fulfilment of something implanted in its nature. The sanction for this development is within us, a striving born of our consciousness or an inner light proceeding from a greater power than ours. Science can scarcely question this sanction, for the pursuit of science springs from a striving which the mind is impelled to follow, a questioning that will not be suppressed. Whether in the intellectual pursuits of science or in the mystical pursuits of the spirit, the light beckons ahead and the purpose surging in our natures responds.

Sir Arthur Eddington, 1882-1944. English physicist, astronomer.  
*The Nature of the Physical World.*

As the hart panteth after the water brooks,  
So panteth my soul after thee, O God.  
My soul thirsteth for God, for the living God.

Hebrew, perhaps second century B.C.  
*Forty-second Psalm.*

### As a Mystical Aspiration

The religious spirit is in us. It preceded the religions, and their task as well as that of the prophets, of the initiated, consists in releasing, directing, and developing it. This mystical aspiration is an essentially human trait. It slumbers at the bottom of our souls awaiting the event, or the man capable, in the manner of an enzyme, of transforming it into true mysticism, into faith.

Lecomte du Noüy, 1883-1947. French bio-physicist.  
*Human Destiny.*

### As an Intrinsic Longing for Unity

We do not understand, but somehow we are part of a creative destiny, reaching backward and forward to infinity—a destiny that reveals itself, though dimly, in our striving, in our love, our thought, our appreciation. We are the fruition of a process that stretches back to star-dust. We are material in the hands of the Genius of the universe for a still larger destiny that we cannot see in the everlasting rhythm of worlds. Nothing happens but what somehow counts in the creative architecture of things. We fail and fall by the way, yet redeeming grace fashions us anew and eliminates our failures in the

larger pattern. The pangs of pain, of failure, in this mortal lot, are the birth-throes of transition to better things. We are separated for a time by the indifference of space and by our blindness which particularizes and isolates us. But in us is the longing for unity. We are impelled by a hidden instinct to reunion with the parts of the larger heart of the universe.

John Eloy Boodin, 1869-. American philosopher.  
*Cosmic Evolution.*

All creatures seek after unity; all multiplicity struggles toward it—the universal aim of all life is always this unity. All that flows outward is to flow backward into its source—God.

Johann Tauler, 1290-1361. German Friar-Preacher.

### As the End of Creation

When I shall once attain to be united unto thee in every part of me, then shall I no more feel either sorrow or labour; yea, then shall my life truly be alive, every way full of thee.

For thou hast created us for thyself, and our heart cannot be quieted till it may find repose in thee.

Saint Augustine, 354-430. Latin church Father.  
*Confessions*, Trans. W. Watts.

### As the Desire of Intentional Living

Life does not need comfort, when it can be offered meaning, nor pleasure, when it can be shown purpose. Reveal what is the purpose of existence and how he may attain it—the steps he must take—and man will go forward again hardily, happily, knowing that he has found what he must have—intentional living—and knowing that an effort, which takes all his energy because it is worth his full and constant concentration, is the only life deserving the devotion, satisfying the nature and developing the potentialities of a self-conscious being.

Anonymous.

### As the Desire for Oneness with the Universe

Ask yourself what you would wish, if God would grant you the fulfillment of your one deepest request. And what do you think



other people would wish for? Very soon you would discover that there are layers of desire and the deeper desire often contradicts the more superficial one. We need a careful explanation and definition of the more general wishes to be happy or good or a child of God. Moreover, there are unconscious goals which control our behaviour in contradiction to our conscious evaluation. One may wish to be humble, in order to be acknowledged by the Lord as the most humble and best of all his servants.—If we could be perfectly honest and transparent, what would we find to be the deepest and most central need of the human being?

The first answer would be: it is the desire to exist. But then our ideas, and our emotions, too, split into two opposite directions. On one hand, existence means to be, as we are, to persist; and the deepest desire becomes self-preservation. Then the greatest danger is change, commitment, giving up oneself. On the other hand we discover—or at least we could discover, if we were able to see reality as it is—that persistence without change is death, is nothing, is just what we are afraid of. But the second desire, the deeper one, tells us that we should renounce our self-preservation, we should not try to be like Olympic gods, above time but in time, above change in everlasting youth, and emptiness. This deep desire tells us to face reality, to be as human as possible, and that means going through time, through change, through death, keeping nothing, not even our life, giving everything, even our own will, being poor in spirit, being one with the universe, with our darkest enemy and with God. That is what we wish for most whether we know it or not.

Fritz Kunkel, 1889–. German psychotherapist.  
Written for this collection.

### As the Sense of Being Sought by "Another"

One is not likely to describe easily or reliably the underlying motivations that have led him to the religious life. It is too easy to read back into past situations and experiences what one sees very clearly at the present time. Somehow it seems that there never was a time when I was not religious, though there certainly have been times when I have felt strong revulsions against certain forms of religious behaviour and practice. One thing that has frequently

been present is the desire to see and know myself as I really am. Another has been the longing to achieve serenity and inner integrity where there was much that was chaotic and broken. More important has been the urgency of a moral imperative which through the years has come insistently and persistently to place life under radical tensions.

But in looking over my past experience, I cannot resist the conviction that it has not been primarily my seeking and searching that has been important, but rather the awareness of *being sought and found* by Another. It is possible that I am reading certain present attitudes into my past; somehow or other the thought that a purposive, personal, active Reality has gone forth to meet me tends to dominate my thought more and more. In my best moments it is most natural to think of a Living God who has 'invaded' the chaos and confusion of life to give it strength and vitality and hope. It is He who 'fashions' and 'creates' and 'finds,' and thus *gives* existence. It is He who 'speaks' and reveals His will, and sets life before its imperative. The sense of moral obligation is His commanding, and my response is the will to obey or disobey. It is He who judges sin, and sends me back to Him in contrition and repentance. It is He who forgives and heals and wins life to its possibilities.

The language of the Bible seems to express my own experience best of all. Moses' characteristic responses to the divine impulses, Elijah's forlornness before the mountain cave, Amos' encounter with Amaziah the priest, Isaiah's dilemma in a national crisis, Jeremiah in the presence of the collapse of his world, Second Isaiah's sense of mission, Jesus' vision as He comes out of the baptismal waters—these situations have an authenticity about them which seems not merely personally convincing but almost universally recognizable. And I suppose that the influence of the Bible as a Scripture wrought from the heart of the world's life has accounted largely for many of my attitudes and the forms in which experience has been clothed. But paralleled with the appreciation of the Bible has come some understanding and appreciation of history, first of all the history of the Semitic East, but also the history of our own modern times.

But whatever the underlying psychological forces that have been

at play, for me religion has simply been a necessity. Indeed, it has been the only real possibility. Other ways seem to have led to dead-ends. In the only kind of world I have ever known, and in the kind of world that historical records reveal to me, relative loyalties are not enough. Hebrew Christian faith places life in a context of dynamic meaning and cosmic support; it kindles living by placing it under absolute commands which are adequately expressed in the Old and New Testaments; it provides a goal in the fullness and richness of its conception of the Sovereign Rule of God.

James Muilenberg, 1896-. American theologian.  
Written for this collection.

### As the Fountain of Spirit

As rivers have their source in some far off fountain, so the human spirit has its source. To find his fountain of spirit is to learn the secret of heaven and earth.

Laotzu, sixth century B.C. Chinese philosopher.  
*Tao-Teh-King*, Chapter 6. Trans. Wai-tao and D. Goddard.

## THE FINDING OF THE WAY

The reader may well ask, "Why, if all men seek the way to fulfillment, do so few find it?" There are many possible speculations upon this question,<sup>2</sup> but one very real and practical answer<sup>3</sup> can be found in the widespread misconceptions of the Way itself.

One group of misconceptions arises from mistaking the *outcomes* of the Way for the Way. The half-truths that result often tragically mislead the seeker. Briefly some of these half-truths are: that the Way is "living for others"; that it is following the Golden Rule; that it is living according to a set of high principles or ideals; that it is imitating the virtues of the saints (instead of seeking to discover the source of their life quality); that it is giving oneself to a philanthropic cause. These in a sense are what the Way is not. They are "outer" and imitative instead of "inner" and

<sup>2</sup> The question points to philosophic speculations into the nature of man and of the universe and may be unanswerable in its profoundest sense.

<sup>3</sup> Also see Chapter Three on *Obstacles to Progression*.

creative. The importance of discrimination at this point of outcomes cannot be overemphasized.

Another widespread misconception comes from identifying the Way with specific sets of cosmological ideas and beliefs. The Way is undeniably the Religious Way as opposed to the way of specific religions. Failure to make this distinction results in confusion and blocks awareness for many.

In this compilation an attempt is made to present material which cuts through the accumulation of dogmas and creeds in order to reveal the Way in high relief—to set it forth so that it will be seen as an inexorable law involving all of life. In doing this there has been no intention of riding roughly over the significant variations which characterize specific religious faiths. It would have been valuable to examine the divergences in tradition, but limitations of time and space precluded such a wide range of endeavor. Those variations which were indigenous to the period wherein they had their inception, and those few among the many which have been retained that are appropriate to modern culture, undoubtedly had and have high value as aids to spiritual progress. The difficulty arises when, instead of being relegated to a minor position, they assume first place. Then they definitely obscure the Way and frequently prevent needed enlargements of cosmology.

Probably the most insidious of all misconceptions is that which holds to the idea that the Way to fullness of life is easy. Were this true, the majority of mankind might long ago have entered upon it since the need is so pressing and universal. The process of clarification is neither easy nor, except in rare instances, is it attained quickly. A reconditioning of both the conscious and unconscious elements of the personality is involved, and for most people this is a long and slow process calling for perseverance and for the development of special skills.

The research for this book led first to the earliest known accounts of those in whom there was unmistakable evidence of truly enlightened living. The impact of these lives on their contemporaries and the authoritative nature of their teaching have caused their words and the reports of their lives to be designated as Sacred Literature. In these accounts were discovered clues to the way by which each had become free in spirit. Two major conditions were outlined representing the negative and positive aspects of this single process. The negative emphasis was found reiterated over and over throughout all the accounts as a

paradoxical law. Positively emphasized, it appeared over and over as a commandment. In the teaching of Jesus both aspects received what we consider their most lucid description. Jesus' expression of the paradox appears in Luke 17:33—"Whosoever shall lose his life shall preserve it," and the commandment in Luke 10:27, "Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind."

The major portion of Part One is made up of a pattern of statements presenting this Way and its far-reaching implications in both their negative and positive aspects.

The search was not limited to the earliest accounts but was extended to include the writings of other "authentic" who followed in point of time, and whose writings further illumined the conditions of the Way. Selections from recent and contemporary sources were also sought. We believe they serve the special function of bringing the precious insights closer to our understanding through their modern terminology, while at the same time adding to those insights through the means of newly available psychological knowledge into the nature of human conduct—knowledge such as is represented by the several psychological systems.

In describing the Way it seemed best to start with the negative emphasis thus presenting some of the most succinct and ultimate of all expressions—those in paradoxical form. In them it is seen as an inexorable law, the fulfillment of which determines the difference between life and death in every area of life. Though some expressions of the paradox have become dulled by familiarity, its truth is inescapable, and its relevancy in a world faced by atomic power becomes ever more desperately urgent.

The great paradox is "the golden string" which threads its way through this entire compilation—forming the underlying theme.

## THE WAY AS A PARADOX

Whosoever shall seek to save his life shall lose it; and whosoever shall lose his life shall preserve it.

Jesus of Nazareth.  
*New Testament (Luke 17:33).*

Diminish and continue to diminish until you arrive at the state of non-striving.

All things come from being, and being comes from non-being.

Laotzu, sixth century B.C., Chinese, founder of Taoism.  
*Tao-Teh-King*. Trans. Hu Shih.

Oh, let the self exalt itself,  
Not sink itself below:  
Self <sup>4</sup> is the only friend of self,  
And self Self's only foe.

For self, when it subdues itself,  
Befriends itself. And so  
When it eludes self-conquest, is  
Its own and only foe.

So calm, so self-subdued, the Self  
Has an unshaken base  
Through pain and pleasure, cold and heat,  
Through honor and disgrace.

The New Testament of Hindu Scriptures, present form, first century B.C.  
*Bhagavad-Gita*, Trans. A. W. Ryder.

## In Nature

And the more he (the individual) studies Nature, the more he will discover that death is not opposed to life, or decay to growth, but that they are mutually dependent; that just as the seed will only grow if the outer mass of it decays and thus generates the germ of life in its midst, so the individual can only complete his being through absorbing the creative energy released by the continuous death of his private self and its exclusive appetites.

The intimate dependence of growth on decomposition in the

<sup>4</sup> *The Way* rests on the basic assumption of a "false" and a "true" element within the structure of the personality. This distinction is expressed variously by different authors, i.e. "the self" and "the Self" as above; "The Seeming-Self" and the "Real-Self"; "The Conventional Self" and the "Self of an Individual Vocation"; the "old" man and the "new" man; the "outer" self and the "inner" self, et cetera. See Chapter Two under Self-knowledge. (Editors.)

physical world may seem at first to bear but remotely upon the processes of the spiritual world. But the more we study the chemistry of the body, the more kindred it appears to the chemistry of the soul. That we must give, for example, if we are to receive, is not a rule, as is so often supposed, in defiance of Nature. Rather all the processes of Nature reflect its unconscious action. Life could sustain its being in no other way. And the same is true of the law, that in dying we live and in living, die.

Those, therefore, who no longer feel instinctively the subtle ties which knit together the diverse forces of Nature's energy and no longer obey instinctively her laws can only cease to be alien to the earth on which they dwell and at cross-purposes with life even in their yearning for some heavenly home, by rediscovering these ties rationally as a prelude to re-experiencing them imaginatively.

Hugh I'Anson Fausset, 1895-. English critic, poet.  
*Proving of Psyche.*

The seed that is to grow  
must lose itself as seed;  
And they that creep  
may graduate through  
chrysalis to wings.

Wilt thou then, O mortal,  
cling to husks which  
falsely seem to you  
the self?

Wu Ming Fu, Chinese poet, philosopher.  
*Patterns in Jade.*

## In Art

It is because the artist loses himself in the reality of that which he describes or depicts or reveals, because of his individual self-effacement, that his work is a spontaneous expression of himself. That is one meaning of the penetrating saying of Jesus: "He that saveth his life shall lose it, and he that loseth his life shall keep it unto life eternal." Personal spontaneity is always objective, always in terms of

the independent reality of an object which absorbs us. There is no other self-expression possible. If we block the avenues of the outpouring of self, if we withdraw from the reality of the world, if we allow our actions to be subjectively determined by mere instincts and habits, following our inclinations, we do not express ourselves, we frustrate our own self-expression, surrender our freedom and suffocate all creative spontaneity. The artist does not act by impulse, still less by the compulsion of rules, but by the nature of the reality which he apprehends. By doing this he becomes free and his action becomes a self-expression. In no other way can self-expression be achieved. In particular it cannot be achieved by will or purpose. The man of iron will is always the man who cannot be spontaneous, who cannot act in terms of reality, who cannot be free.

John MacMurray, 1891-. English professor of philosophy.  
*Reason and Emotion.*

He who humbles himself shall be saved;  
He who bends shall be made straight;  
He who empties himself shall be filled.

Laotzu, sixth century B.C. Chinese philosopher.  
*Tao-Teh-King.*

## In Science

(Indeed) it may be said that every individual science sets about its task by the explicit renunciation of the egocentric and anthropocentric standpoint. In the earlier stages of human thought mankind turned its attention exclusively to the impressions received through the senses, and primitive man made himself and his own interests the center of his system of reasoning. As long as he remained bound within the limits of this method of treating his environment it was impossible for him to make any approach toward real scientific knowledge. His first advance in this knowledge was accomplished only after he had taken leave of his own immediate interests. At a later stage he succeeded in abandoning the idea that the planet whereon he lives is the central point of the universe. Then he took up the more modest position of keeping as far as possible in the background, so as not to intrude his own idiosyncrasies and personal



ideas between himself and his observations of natural phenomena. It was only at this stage that the outer world of nature began to unveil its mystery to him, and at the same time to furnish him with means which . . . he could never have discovered if he had continued looking for them in the candlelight of his own egocentric interests. The progress of science is an excellent illustration of the truth of the paradox that man must lose his soul before he can find it.\*

Max Planck, 1858-. German mathematical physicist.  
*Where Is Science Going?* Trans. J. Murphy.

A death blow is a life blow to some  
Who, till they died, did not alive become;  
Who, had they lived, had died, but when  
They died, vitality begun.

Emily Dickinson, 1830-1886. American poet.

### In Man's Psychic Life

The problem of releasing our powers is the problem of both mastering and submitting to the process of becoming a person. A submission that is also a mastering! Here is the paradox of rationality in a finite and growing being. A sort of dialectic is involved: self-affirmation, followed by self-denial, and then realization that this denial of self is in reality a higher and fuller affirmation of selfhood.

George Albert Coe, 1862-. American educator, author.  
*Motives of Men.*

It is not surprising that many men, who have adopted a certain pose towards themselves, should feel the process of psychoanalysis as torture. In accordance with the old mystical saying, "Give up what thou hast, then shalt thou receive," they are called upon to abandon their dearest illusions in order to let something deeper, fairer, and more embracing grow up within them. For it is only through the mystery of self-sacrifice that a man may find himself anew.

Carl G. Jung, M.D., 1875-. Swiss psychotherapist.  
*Two Essays on Analytical Psychology.*

For the garden is the only place there is, but you will not find it  
Until you have looked for it everywhere and found nowhere that is  
not a desert;  
The miracle is the only thing that happens, but to you it will not be  
apparent,  
Until all events have been studied and nothing happens that you  
cannot explain;  
And life is the destiny you are bound to refuse until you have con-  
sented to die.

Wystan H. Auden, 1907-. English poet.  
*For the Time Being.*

Die and Become.  
Till thou hast learned this  
Thou art but a dull guest  
On this dark planet.

Johann Wolfgang von Goethe, 1749-1832. German philosopher, poet.  
From *Selige Sehnsucht*.

*God Speaks:*

It is innocence that is full and experience that is empty.  
It is innocence that wins and experience that loses.

It is innocence that is young and experience that is old.  
It is innocence that grows and experience that wanes.

It is innocence that is born and experience that dies.  
It is innocence that knows and experience that does not know.

It is the child who is full and the man who is empty,  
Empty as an empty gourd and as an empty barrel:

That is what I do with that experience of yours.

Now then, children, go to school.  
And you men, go to the school of life.  
Go and learn  
How to unlearn.

Charles Péguy, 1873-1913, French writer.  
From the poem *Innocence and Experience*.

## In History

If history reveals anything it is that dissolution and growth have been aspects of the same phenomenon. Growth has not occurred anywhere without involving dissolution. Every major cultural change throughout history has involved this two-fold process of death and emergence.\*

Bernard Eugene Meland, 1899-. American religious philosopher, professor.  
From an article in *The Personalist*.

## In the "World Body"

Neither in the world of nations, nor in the world of the nation, will all individuals sacrifice their interests. They cannot do it. It is impossible. They have not reached that stage of ethical development. But there is a handful of individuals—hundreds, thousands, maybe hundreds of thousands who have reached it. They have learned, or begun to conjecture, that the moment is come when they must sacrifice their *all*. At first slowly, then with slowly increasing speed, then in the last hundred years with a truly sickening acceleration, first the nation, then the world of nations has become one *body*. The vast world is one Man. And that one Man is sick, as individual men, time out of mind, have been sick; he is divided within him. There is unconscious growth below; the mind above is fixed. The pangs of rebirth are at hand. He dreams of better things, he desires better things; but how to achieve them he does not know. The World Man now longs, as the individual man has longed, time after time, for newness of life. And the answer to the World Man is the same answer that was given to the individual men two thousand years ago: "He that loseth his life, the same shall save it."

John Middleton Murry, 1889-. English author, critic.  
*The Necessity of Communism*.

## GENERAL STATEMENTS OF THE WAY

The paradoxical expressions of the Way stress the negative requirement for becoming free in spirit. They point to the necessary "losing of life," "dying to self," "leave-taking of egocentric goals"—noughting of

the "I" whereby Ultimate Reality—the "Ground of the Soul"—the "not I"—becomes transformingly effective in the individual life.

The selections which follow further amplify this negative aspect of the Way. In addition they include the other half of the process—that positive element of the transaction, wherein the will is transferred from the direction of the ego-driven limited self to the direction of the real, expanding Self—the Eternal Good. This positive requirement is designated as "commitment," as "fidelity," as "plastic responsiveness." It completes "the emptying and the filling" conditions of the Life-giving process.

Because of the misconceptions concerning the Way nothing seemed more difficult to find stated in lucid terms. Most general statements were in the often narrow framework of institutionalized beliefs. Those finally selected were chosen because of a singular freedom in this regard. Even so, they will be seen to vary in philosophical bases and terminology. They range from the minimal humanistic approach (Dewey) to the mystical approach (Eckhart, *Theologica Germanica*). The reader who finds this variety confusing or burdensome, rather than clarifying and convincing, will do well on first reading to disregard all except the selections which are meaningful to him. Other readers will, by holding their focus on the centrality of the process, come to see behind the differences to that oneness which infuses the whole with its spirit.

### The Way as One in All Its Expressions

There is, as we all know, a rich variety of detail in the legal and moral codes of various times and places, yet in fundamental principle there is more agreement in the actual working codes of society than we of the "higher" civilizations like to acknowledge. For the working code, we may say generally, is of the nature of a compromise between self and society. It takes the ordinary man just as he is with all his confused and often conflicting impulses, good and bad, social and selfish, and it puts him under certain restraints. He must not move his neighbour's landmark, but on the whole he may do what he will within his own. Life is a kind of game, in which each is expected to play for his own hand, only he must play according to rule. But some few centuries before our era there emerged a very different conception of life and duty. According to this conception life is not a game to be played by man against man, or family against family, or community against community. Life rests on a secret,

profound, yet exceedingly simple once revealed, which dissipates all its difficulties, puts an end to strife and sorrow, shows us the way of light, emancipation, and peace. The secret is to put off self-hood, and merge ourselves in the life of others, of all living things, perhaps of the universe, to ask for nothing, to be ready to give everything. Such a man is in charity, not only with all mankind, but with all created things.

"And he lets his mind pervade one-quarter of the world with thoughts of love, and so the second, and so the third, and so the fourth. And thus the whole wide world, above, below, around, and everywhere, does he continue to pervade with heart of Love, far-reaching, grown great, and beyond measure. Just, Vasettha, as a mighty trumpeter makes himself heard—and that without difficulty—in all the four directions, even so of all things that have shape and life, there is not one that he passes by or leaves aside, but regards them all with mind set free, and deep, full love."<sup>5</sup>

How far this Buddhist conception is original and what elements it may have derived from earlier Brahmanic teaching we need not here enquire. We may remark only on the striking analogies in the doctrine of Lao-Tse: "Whosoever humbleth himself shall be exalted, and whosoever exalteth himself shall be abased." "I would return good for good, I would also return good for evil. I would likewise meet suspicion with confidence."<sup>6</sup> We may think also of the doctrine of equal universal benevolence upheld by the philosopher Mih against the protests of the classical moralists as evidence that wherever or whenever these conceptions originated they took root in China as well as in India. Spreading West they inspired various ethical and religious disciplines, and received one of their noblest expressions in the Christianity of the Gospels.

Vary as it may in details and in the cosmological ideas associated with it, the doctrine of the selfless<sup>7</sup> life is one, and easily recognizable in all its expressions. Its promulgation constitutes the one really great epoch in moral evolution, and is comparable in its effect to the

<sup>5</sup> Buddhist Suttas, *Sacred Books of the East*, vol. xi, p. 201.

<sup>6</sup> *The Path of Virtue*, Tr. by Old.

<sup>7</sup> See Chapter II under Self-knowledge for discussion of the two kinds of self.

Copernican revolution in astronomy and the remodelling of scientific method achieved in the period from Galileo to Newton.\*

L. T. Hobhouse, 1864-. English philosopher.  
*The Rational Good.*

### The Way as "Steps" to Real Simplicity

In the world when people call any one simple they generally mean a foolish, ignorant, credulous person. But real simplicity, so far from being foolish, is almost sublime. All good men like and admire it, are conscious of sinning against it, observe it in others, and know what it involves, and yet they could not precisely define it. I should say that simplicity is an uprightness of soul which prevents self-consciousness. It is not the same as sincerity, which is a much humbler virtue. Many people are sincere who are not simple; they say nothing but what they believe to be true, and do not aim at appearing anything but what they are; but they are forever thinking about themselves, weighing their every word and thought, and dwelling upon themselves, in apprehension of having done too much or too little. These people are sincere, but they are not simple; they are not at their ease with others, or others with them; there is nothing easy, frank, unrestrained, or natural about them; one feels one would like less admirable people better, who were not so stiff.

To be absorbed in the world around, and never turn a thought within, as is the blind condition of some who are carried away by what is present and tangible, is one extreme as opposed to simplicity. And to be self-absorbed in everything, whether it be duty to God or man, is the other extreme, which makes a person wise in his own conceits—reserved, self-conscious, uneasy at the least thing which disturbs his inward self-complacency. Such false wisdom, in spite of its solemnity, is hardly less vain and foolish than the folly of those who plunge headlong into worldly pleasure. The one is intoxicated by his outer surroundings, the other by what he believes himself to be doing inwardly; but both are in a state of intoxication, and the last is a worse state than the first, because it seems to be wise, though it is not really, and so people do not try to be cured. Real simplicity lies in a *juste milieu*, equally free from thoughtlessness and affectation, in which the soul is not overwhelmed by externals so as to be

unable to reflect, nor yet given up to the endless refinements which self-consciousness induces. That soul which looks where it is going, without losing time arguing over every step, or looking back perpetually, possesses true simplicity.

Verily such simplicity is a great treasure! How shall we attain to it? I would give all I possess for it; it is the costly pearl of Holy Scripture.

The first step is for the soul so to put away outward things and look within as to know its own real interests; so far all is right and natural; thus much is only a wise self-love which seeks to avoid the intoxication of the world.

In the next step the soul must add the contemplation of God, Whom it fears, to that of self. This is a faint approach to the real wisdom, but the soul is still greatly self-absorbed: it is not satisfied with fearing God; it wants to be certain that it does fear Him, and fears lest it fear Him not, going round in a perpetual circle of self-consciousness. All this restless dwelling in self is very far from the peace and freedom of real love; but that is yet in the distance—the soul must needs go through a season of trial, and were it suddenly plunged into a state of rest, it would not know how to use it.

The third step is that, ceasing from a restless self-contemplation, the soul begins to dwell upon God instead, and by degrees forgets itself in Him—it becomes full of Him and ceases to feed upon self. Such a soul is not blinded to its own faults or indifferent to its own errors; it is more conscious of them than ever, and increased light shows them in plainer form, but this self-knowledge comes from God, and therefore it is not restless or uneasy.

But, you will ask, how can I help being constantly self-engrossed when a crowd of anxious thoughts disturb me and set me ill at ease? I only ask that which is in your own power. If you are steadfast in resisting them whenever you become conscious of their existence, by degrees you will get free, but do not hunt them out with the notion of conquering them. A continual attempt to repress thoughts of self and self-interest is practically continual self-consciousness, which will only distract you from the duties incumbent on you and deprive you of the sense of God's Presence.

The great thing is to resign all your interests and pleasures and comfort and fame to God. He who unreservedly accepts whatever God may give him in this world—humiliation, trouble, and trial from within or from without—has made a great step towards self-victory; he will not dread praise or censure, he will not be sensitive; or if he finds himself wincing, he will deal so cavalierly with his sensitiveness that it will soon die away. Such full resignation and unfeigned acquiescence is true liberty, and hence arises perfect simplicity. Blessed indeed are they who are no longer their own, but have given themselves wholly to God! \*

Francois Fénelon, 1651-1715. French Archbishop of Cambray.  
*Letters to Women*, Trans. H. L. Lear.

### The Way as Voluntary Change of Will

What are the *attitudes* that lend deep and enduring support to the processes of living? I have, for example, used the words "adjustment" and "orientation." What do they signify?

While the words "accommodation," "adaptation," and "adjustment" are frequently employed as synonyms, attitudes exist that are so different that for the sake of clear thought they should be discriminated. There are conditions we meet that cannot be changed. If they are particular and limited, we modify our own particular attitudes in accordance with them. Thus we accommodate ourselves to changes in weather, alterations in income when we have no other recourse. When the external conditions are lasting we become inured, habituated, or as the process is now called, conditioned. The two main traits of this attitude, which I should like to call accommodation, are that it affects *particular* modes of conduct, not the entire self, and that the process is mainly *passive*. It may, however, become general and then it becomes fatalistic resignation or submission. There are other attitudes toward the environment that are also particular but that are more active. We re-act against conditions and endeavor to change them to meet our wants and demands. Plays in a foreign language are "adapted" to meet the demands of an American audience. A house is rebuilt to suit changed conditions of the household; the telephone is invented to serve the demands for speedy communication at a distance; dry soils are irrigated so that they may



bear abundant crops. Instead of accommodating ourselves to conditions, we modify conditions so that they will be accommodated to our wants and purposes. This process may be called adaptation.

Now both of these processes are often called by the more general name of adjustment. But there are also changes in ourselves in relation to the world in which we live and are much more inclusive and deep-seated. They relate not to this and that want in relation to this and that condition of our surroundings, but pertain to our being in its entirety. Because of their scope, this modification of ourselves is enduring. It lasts through any amount of vicissitude of circumstances, internal and external. There is a composing and harmonizing of the various elements of our being such that, in spite of changes in the special conditions that surround us, these conditions are also arranged; settled, in relation to us. This attitude includes a note of submission. But it is voluntary, not externally imposed; and as voluntary it is something more than a mere Stoical resolution to endure unperturbed throughout the buffetings of fortune. It is more outgoing, more ready and glad, than the latter attitude, and it is more active than the former. And in calling it voluntary, it is not meant that it depends upon a particular resolve or volition. It is a change of will conceived as the organic plenitude of our being, rather than any special change in will.\*

John Dewey, 1859-. American philosopher, educator.  
*A Common Faith.*

### The Way as Total Responsiveness to the Best in Each Situation

This religious way of living is different from every other found among men. It differs from that of the moral idealist. The idealist picks out of each situation whatever will promote his ideal. All the rest he ignores or fights or tolerates. He is blind to all the abundance that overflows or conflicts with his ideal. Over against the idealist stands the man of uninhibited desire. His way of living differs from that of the religious just as much as does that of the idealist, but at the opposite extreme. He picks out of the riches of each situation whatever will satisfy his specific desires, but all the rest flows over him unappreciated and unapprehended. The religious man on the

other hand, in contradistinction from both of these, explores sensitively and reverently for the emerging new meanings in each situation, the while holding his desires and ideals in control as experimental instruments to be used in guiding him into the situation where they are bound to be transcended or submerged by the richness of value which he cannot possibly apprehend before he experiences it in the full concreteness of consummatory synthesis.

The steps by which one achieves this way of religious living<sup>8</sup> cannot be taken once and for all. They constitute a practice that is repeated again and again. This life is the faith that saves the world. It serves both the needs of individual personality and of society in the only ways which can enable this age to escape destruction.

This spontaneity of free and full and plastic responsiveness down to the deepest level of the organization of the psycho-physical organism is the prime condition for all mental health. The psychological desperation of our time is shown in all the multiple forms of mental ill and derangement of personality which are increasing steadily and amounting to madness in many cases. The religious way does surely protect from these mental ills. A glance at some of the major sources of the derangements of personality will make this plain. Men suffer these psychic ills when they struggle to do what is impossible and cannot resign themselves to the inevitable; when they strive to maintain a certain view of themselves in the face of incoming evidence to the contrary; when they cannot relinquish some desire in the face of a conscience or society that condemns. But all these disorganizing conditions fade out and disappear when the total personality becomes plastic; when it becomes freely and fully responsive to the best possible in each situation; when it finds in the full flood of circumstance the riches of laughter, or tragedy, and of fulfillment, but does not cling to the impossible and does not demand that any fixed desire or fixed ideal be satisfied.\*

Henry Nelson Wieman,<sup>9</sup> 1884-. American philosopher, theologian, educator.

<sup>8</sup> These steps Dr. Wieman designates as propulsion, crisis, decision, release, specification and fellowship. For a description of each step see pages 299-307 of *The Growth of Religion*. It was impossible to abridge these pages sufficiently to include here.

<sup>9</sup> *The Growth of Religion*—Part I by Walter M. Horton, Part II by Henry N. Wieman.

### The Way as Commitment

Of the many half-truths floating about in sermons and articles today I know few so misleading as this: "Religion is life." It is misleading just because it is not obviously false. It contains important truths. For one thing, it says this: Religion, wherever it exists, spreads over the whole of life. One cannot take it up as one takes up golf—by giving it a couple of afternoons a week. That kind of amateur religion is not religion. Religion is either the whole of one's life, or else it is not religion, no matter how much fuss is made over it. This is true, and dangerously true. "Religion is life," so understood, cuts with condemnation. To all those who want religion, but want it "in its place," that is, apart from their business, their politics, their luxuries or their conveniences, or anything else, this says, "My good friend, what you call your 'religion' is something or other, but you had better find its name and call it by its name; don't call it religion."

Religion can never be lived except with one's whole life, and what cannot be humanly lived is not religion or any concern of religion. So far "religion is life" makes sense. But how much farther? Does it hint at the all-important fact that religion is not any kind of life, but a difficult and exacting way to which many are called but few chosen? Does it suggest just what it is that marks off religion from all the other kinds of lives that have been lived and can be lived—the life of the dilettante or of the egotist or the cynic or the romantic, or of the healthy cabbage? Jesus told Nicodemus, "You must be born again." He told the rich young ruler, "Sell all you have," and the disciples, "He who would save his life must lose it." Could you have guessed any of these things from "religion is life"? Where is the way of the cross, the demand for decision, the necessity for absolute loyalty? Something slips between the fingers of this plausible generality and this something is commitment.

Commitment is all-important in our understanding of religion because it expresses clearly, as "life" does not, this fact: Religion is a relationship. This may sound like a truism. Yet even a truism is significant when it is denied. Every kind of subjectivism is such a denial. Nothing is so attractive to the tired sophisticate as the call to leave awhile the world that ~~it~~ too much with him and retreat to a

place of stillness within his own soul. That there is such a place is an exciting discovery, and so is the art of finding it, steering safely to it, and avoiding the dangerous turmoils of the world of outer fact or the world of the inner self, both full of confusion and strife. To explore this middle ground of introspection and reverie, and flavor its precarious peace, is an engrossing adventure, especially when it is dignified with the name of religion.

To such religious romanticism the word "commitment" brings a rude corrective. It reminds one inescapably of the essential thing in religion—God. It is easy to forget God when one is most concerned about one's inner experiences. It is not so easy to forget Him when one is concerned about commitment. One can give oneself only to something which is there, which can be observed, understood and obeyed; to something which makes demands and holds out promises and obligations. It warns against subjectivity. One's own subjectivity can hide God from one just as much as the pressure of work or the hypocrisies of polite society.

If one is not clear about God, one will always tend to shy away toward something more accessible, like one's own conscious states. To talk about commitment brings one face to face with the question of God, so that one cannot dodge it. . . . God is that within and beyond the universe which expresses the greatest good which now is and ever can be: the direction of life against death, the direction of unity against discord, the direction of creation and increasing growth against destruction and decay. God is the power of good in all its various forms: in the order and structure of inorganic matter, in the process of growth and sensitivity in the realm of life, in the conditions of intelligence, cooperation, appreciation and creative love on the human level.

This cosmic reach in our description of God must not distract our attention from the specific human focus within which our experiences of the good are most intense and most decisive. It is here most of all that we know God as a daily fact. We have tried the ways of ambition, of self-aggrandizement, of aggressive opportunism, and we have seen the kind of flimsy success to which they lead, we have tasted the bitter poisons they generate, we have known the

conflict, the disgust, the inner division, the outer isolation that follow in their wake. We have also tried in some small measure the other way, and known that every man and woman must have love; that there is no life or peace without love; only strife, waste, madness, destruction, death. There is that in life which makes it necessary that men should find the way of truth, of understanding, of justice, or else destroy themselves and each other. You have not seen it? You cannot move a step but you stumble into it; it is in the structure of your world; you cannot live a day or an hour without saying either yes or no to it, without finding life through it or death without it.

Even a faint glimpse of this reality brings you back to yourself. Whither do you move? With it or without it? The alternatives are simple—terrifyingly simple and clear. To compromise in this matter is to decide; to waver is to decide; to postpone and evade decision is to decide; to hide the matter is to decide. There is no escape. You must say yes, or no. There are a thousand ways of saying no; one way of saying yes; and no way of saying anything else.\*

Gregory Vlastos, 1909-. Canadian professor of philosophy.  
*The Religious Way.*

### The Way as Willing One Thing

Purity of heart is to will one thing, but to will one thing could not mean to will the world's pleasure and what belongs to it, even if a person only named one thing as his choice, since this one thing was one only by a deception. Nor could willing one thing mean willing it in the vain sense of mere bigness which only to a man in a state of giddiness appears to be one. *For in truth to will one thing a man must will the good.* On the other hand, as for each act of willing the Good which does not will it in truth, it must be declared to be double-mindedness. Then there is a type of double-mindedness that in a more powerful and active sort of inner coherence seems to will the Good, but deceptively wills something else. It wills the Good for the sake of reward, out of fear of punishment, or as a form of self-assertion. But there is another kind of double-mindedness that wills the Good in a kind of sincerity, but only wills it 'to a certain degree.'

If, then, a man in truth wills the Good, then *he must be willing to do all for it or he must be willing to suffer all for it.*

Let us first consider: the willingness to do all for the Good. All—yet will not this talk easily exceed all bounds, if all is named? Will it not become an impossibility to master all the differences included under the term “all,” and as a result will the talk not become vague, since the Good can demand the most different things of different people? It can sometimes demand that a man leave his esteemed calling and put on lowliness, that he give away all his possessions to the poor, that he shall not even dare to bury his father. Again it can demand of others that they shall assume the power and the dignity that are offered them, that they shall take over the working power of wealth, that they shall bury the father, and that perhaps a large part of their lives shall be consecrated to faithfulness which is to be faithful over the little to this extent, that their own life has no claims of its own, but rather is faithful to the memory of a departed one. Now let us not multiply confusion and distraction in a host of individual details. For these also remind us of the struggle of pettiness for preference, where one person thinks that by doing one thing he is doing more for the Good than another who does something else. For if both in relation to the demand do all, then they do equally much. And if neither of them does all, then they do equally little. Instead of multiplying details, let us simplify this all into its essential unity and likeness by saying that to will to do all is: in the commitment to will to be and to remain loyal to the Good. Because the commitment is just the committing of all, just as it is also that which is essentially one thing. No one believes that this is a long-drawn-out affair. On the contrary, from the standpoint of eternity, if I dare say so, it is this abbreviating of all of life’s fractions (for eternity’s length is the true abbreviation) that frees life of all its difficulties, and it is through deciding to will to be and to remain loyal to the Good that so much time is gained. For that which absorbs men’s time when they complain about the lack of time is irresoluteness, distraction, half thoughts, half resolutions, indecisiveness, great moments—great moments. It was because of these that we said: to be and to

remain loyal to, so that the commitment should not be confused with the extravagance of an expansive moment. The person, who in decisiveness wills to be and to remain loyal to the Good, can find time for all possible things. No, he cannot do that. But neither does he need to do that, for he wills only one thing, and just on that account he will not have to do all possible things, and so he finds ample time for the Good.

So now let us talk of doing all, and speak of the men who, in this or that way, are assigned to the external world as to a stage. It makes no difference at all, God be praised, how great or how small the task may be. All the ruinous quarreling and comparison which swells up and injures, which sighs and envies, the Eternal does not recognize. Its claim rests equally on each, the greatest who has ever lived, and the most insignificant. Yes, the sun's rays do not shine with more equality on the peasant's hut and the ruler's palace, than the equality with which the Eternal looks down upon the highest and the lowest. The demand upon each is exactly the same: to be willing to do all. If this be fulfilled then the Good bestows its blessing equally upon each one who makes and remains loyal to his commitment.\*-\*\*

Søren Kierkegaard, 1813-1855. Danish philosopher.  
*Purity of Heart*. Trans. Douglas Steere.

### The Way as Denying of Self-Will

People say: "Alas, sir, but I would prefer to stand well with God, to have the devotion and divine calm of some people." Or they say: "It will never do if I cannot be here or there and do thus and so. I must get away—or go into a cloister or a cell."

The truth is that you yourself are at fault in all this or no one else. It is pure self-will. Whether you realize it or not, there can be no restlessness unless it come from self-will, although not every person understands this. This is what I mean: people fly from this to seek that—these places, these people, these manners, those purposes, that activity—but they should not blame ways or things for thwarting them. When you are thwarted, it is your own attitude that is out of order.

Begin, therefore, first with self and forget yourself! If you do not

\*\* The use of two asterisks indicates material is slightly rearranged.

first get away from self, then whatever else you get away from you will still find obstacles and restlessness. People look in vain for peace, who seek it in the world outside, in places, people, ways, activities, or in world-flight, poverty and humiliation, whatever the avenue or degree; for there is no peace this way. They are looking in the wrong direction, and the longer they look the less they find what they are looking for. They go along like someone who has missed his road; the farther they go the more they are astray.

What, then, is to be done?

Let everyone begin by denying self and in so doing he will have denied all else. Indeed, if a man gave up a kingdom, or even the whole world and still was selfish, he would have given up nothing. If, however, he denies himself, then whatever he keeps, be it wealth, honor, or anything else, he is free from it all.

\* \* \* \* \*

There is no way of making a person true unless he gives up his own will. In fact, apart from complete surrender of the will, there is no traffic with God. But if it did happen that we gave up completely and dared to put off everything, physical and spiritual, for God's sake—then we should have done all and not before.

Such people are rare. Aware of it or not, people have wanted to have the "great" experiences; they want it in this form, or they want that good thing; and this is nothing but self-will. Yield completely to God and then be satisfied, whatever he does with his own.

\* \* \* \* \*

We must learn always to find and procure the advantage of God. For God does not give gifts, nor did he ever give one, so that man might keep it and take satisfaction in it; but all were given—all he ever gave on earth or in heaven—that he might give this one more: himself. With all his giving, he is trying only to prepare us for the gift that he himself is; and all his works—all that he ever did on earth or in heaven—he did for the sake of this one more: to perfect our happiness. Therefore I say that we must learn to look through every gift and every event to God and never be content with the thing itself. There is no stopping place in this life—no, nor was there ever one for any man, no matter how far along his way he'd



gone. This above all, then, be ready at all times for the gifts of God and always for new ones.\*

Meister Johannes Eckhart, 1260-1327. German scholar, mystic.  
*Meister Eckhart*. Trans. R. Blakney.

### The Way as Conscious Fidelity to "Inner Vocation"<sup>10</sup>

Personality is an act of greatest courage in the face of life, and means unconditional affirmation of all that constitutes the individual, the most successful adaptation to the universal conditions of human existence, with the greatest possible freedom of personal decision. It is impossible to foresee what an infinite number of conditions must be fulfilled to bring this about. A whole human life span in all its biological, social, and spiritual aspects is needed. Personality is the highest realization of the inborn distinctiveness of the particular living being. To educate someone to *this* seems to me to be no small matter. It is surely the heaviest task that the spiritual world of today has set itself. And, indeed, it is a dangerous task— . . .

The development of personality means fidelity to the law of one's being . . . Fidelity to the law of one's being is a trust in this law, a loyal perseverance and trustful hope; in short, such an attitude as a religious man should have to God. But personality can never develop itself unless the individual chooses his own way consciously. Not only the causal motive, the need, but a conscious, moral decision must lend its strength to the process of the development of personality. If the first, that is, need is lacking, then the so-called development would be mere acrobatics of the will; if the latter is missing, that is, the conscious decision, then the development will come to rest in a stupefying, unconscious automatism. But a man can make a moral choice of his own way only when he holds it to be the best. If any other way were held to be better, then he would live and develop that other personality in place of his own. The other ways are the conventions of a moral, social, political, philosophic, or religious nature. The fact that the conventions always flourish in one

<sup>10</sup> See pages 281-305 of Dr. Jung's text for the full discussion of this Way—termed by the author as "the process of individuation." This selection is of necessity an abridgment of the author's original, profound and illuminating analysis, *The Integration of Personality*, Farrar and Rinehart, Inc., 1939.

form or another proves that the overwhelming majority of mankind chooses not its own way, but the conventions, and so does not develop itself, but a collectivity at the cost of its own fullness.<sup>11</sup>

To undertake to develop personality is an unpopular venture, an uncongenial deviation from the highway. No wonder then, that from the beginning only the few have hit upon this strange adventure. They thrust themselves up like mountain peaks out of the mass that clung to its collective fears, convictions, laws and methods, and chose their own way. And to the ordinary human being it always seemed wonderful that someone should prefer to the beaten track, with its known destination, a small and steep path that leads into the unknown. This is why it was always believed that such a man, if not out of his mind, was yet inhabited by a demon or god.

What, in the last analysis, induces a man to choose his own way and so to climb out of unconscious identity with the mass as out of a fog bank? It cannot be necessity, for necessity comes to many and they all save themselves in convention. It cannot be moral choice, for as a rule a man decides for convention. What is it, then, that inexorably tilts the beam in favour of the *extraordinary*?

It is what is called vocation: an irrational factor that fatefully forces a man to emancipate himself from the herd and its trodden paths. True personality always has vocation and believes in it, has fidelity to it as to God, in spite of the fact that, as the ordinary man would say, it is only a feeling of individual vocation. But this vocation acts like a law of God from which there is no escape. That many go to ruin upon their own ways means nothing to him who has vocation . . . Who has vocation hears the voice of the inner man; he is *called*. This inner voice is the voice of a wider, more comprehensive consciousness.

Now, vocation, or the feeling of vocation, is not perchance the prerogative of great personalities, but also belongs to the small ones

<sup>11</sup> Just as the psychic and social life of mankind at a primitive level is exclusively a group life with a high degree of unconsciousness in the individual, so the later historical process of development is also a collective matter and will, no doubt, remain so. This is why I believe in convention as a collective necessity. It is a makeshift and not an ideal, whether in respect to morals or religion, for subjection to it always means repudiation of wholeness and a flight from the final consequences of one's own being. (Dr. Jung)

all the way down to the *duodecimo format*; only, with the decrease of proportions, it becomes more veiled and unconscious till it finally merges into one with society . . . into the collective necessities . . . Likewise to become a personality is not the absolute prerogative of the man of genius. He may even have genius without either having personality or being a personality. In so far as every individual has his own inborn law of life, it is theoretically possible for every man to follow this law before all others and so to become a personality—that is, to achieve completeness.

Only the man who is able consciously to affirm the power of the vocation confronting him from within becomes a personality; he who succumbs to it falls a prey to the blind flux of happening and is destroyed. The greatness and the liberating effect of all genuine personality consists in this, that it subjects itself of free choice to its vocation and consciously translates into its own individual reality what would lead only to ruin if it were lived unconsciously by the group.

One of the most shining examples of the life and meaning of personality that history has preserved for us is the life of Christ. . . . Following the inner voice, his vocation and his calling, Jesus freely exposed himself to the attack of the imperialistic delusion that filled everyone, conqueror and conquered alike. In this way he recognized the nature of the objective-psychic, which had plunged the whole world into a state of suffering and had produced a yearning for salvation that found its expression even in the heathen poets. He did not suppress this psychic onslaught, but consciously let it act upon him; nor did he allow himself to be suppressed by it, but assimilated it. While the Jewish people as a whole was expecting an imperialistic and politically active hero, Jesus fulfilled the Messianic vocation less for his nation than for the Roman world, and pointed out to humanity the old truth that, where force rules, there is no love, and where love rules, force does not count. The religion of love was the exact psychological counterpart to the Roman bedevilment with power.

The example of Christianity perhaps best illustrates the abstract

discussions I have presented above. This apparently unique life has become a sacred symbol because it is the prototype of the only meaningful realization of its own particular law, such realization being absolute and unconditional.

The deification of Jesus as well as of Buddha is not surprising, but strikingly shows the enormous valuation that humanity puts upon these heroes, and so upon the ideal of the development of personality. . . . The ideal of personality is an indestructible need of the human soul.

Just as great personality acts upon society to alleviate, liberate, transform, and heal, so the birth of personality has a restoring effect upon the individual. It is as if a stream that was losing itself in marshy tributaries suddenly discovered its proper bed, or as if a stone that lay upon a germinating seed were lifted away so that the sprout could begin its natural growth.\*-\*\*

Carl G. Jung, M.D., 1875-. Swiss psychologist.  
*The Integration of the Personality*, Trans. S. Dell.

The Way as Forsaking of Self and Cleaving to the "Best as Dearest"

Alas! all men, nay the whole world lieth in disobedience! Now were a man simply and wholly obedient as Christ was, all disobedience were to him a sharp and bitter pain. But though all men were against him, they could neither shake nor trouble him.

Behold! albeit no man may be so single and perfect in this obedience as Christ was, yet it is possible to every man to approach so near there unto as to be rightly called Godlike, and "a partaker of the divine nature."

Now men say, "I am in no wise prepared for this work, and therefore it cannot be wrought in me," and truly there is no one to blame for this but themselves. For if a man were striving after nothing but to diligently give his whole mind to see how he might become prepared; verily God would well prepare him, for God giveth as much care and earnestness and love to the preparing of a man as to the pouring in of his Spirit when the man is prepared.

Let him therefore who wisheth that God should help him to

what is best, and best for him, give diligent heed to God's counsels and teachings. Now God teacheth and admonisheth man to forsake himself and all things, and to follow Him only. "For he who loveth his soul," that is himself, and will guard it and keep it, "he shall lose it"; that is, he who seeketh himself and his own advantage in all things, in so doing loseth his soul. He who forsaketh himself and his own things, and giveth up his own will, and fulfilleth God's will, his soul will be kept and preserved unto Life Eternal.

Furthermore, ye must mark, that to receive God's commands and His counsel and all His teaching, is the privilege of the inward man, after that he is united with God. And where there is such a union, the outward man is surely taught and ordered by the inward man, so that no outward commandment or teaching is needed. But the commandments and laws of men belong to the outer man, and are needful for those men who know nothing better, for else they would not know what to do and what to refrain from, and would become like unto the dogs or other beasts.

\* \* \* \* \*

Furthermore, it is a good way and access unto this life, to feel always that what is best is dearest, and always to prefer the best, and cleave to it, and unite oneself to it. When therefore among the creatures the man cleaveth to that which is the best that he can perceive, and keepeth steadfastly to that, in singleness of heart, he cometh afterward to what is better and better, until, at last, he findeth and tasteth that the Eternal Good is a Perfect Good, without measure and number above all created good. Now if what is best is to be dearest to us, and we are to follow after it, the One Eternal Good must be loved above all and alone, and we must cleave to Him alone, and unite ourselves with Him as closely as we may. And now if we are to ascribe all goodness to the One Eternal Good, as of right and truth we ought, so must we also of right and truth ascribe unto Him the beginning, middle, and end of our course, so that nothing remain to man or the creature. So it should be of a truth, let men say what they will.\*

Written anonymously by one of the "Friends of God" in fourteenth century.  
*Theologica Germanica,*

The Way and "The Voice of the Beloved"

I am weary, often, to read and hear many things—  
in Thee is all that I desire and long for.  
Let all teachers hold their peace; let all  
creatures be silent in Thy sight; speak unto me  
Thou alone.

The Voice of the Beloved:

I am He who in one instant do lift up the humble  
mind to comprehend more reasonings of eternal  
Truth, than if one had studied ten years in the schools . . .  
The more a man is at one within himself and becometh  
single in heart, so much the more and higher things  
doth he without labor understand; for that he receiveth  
the light of the understanding from above . . .  
If thou wilt have me come unto thee, and remain with  
thee; purge out the old leaven, and make clean the  
habitation of thy heart. I am the Lover of purity  
and the Giver of all holiness. I seek a pure heart,  
and there is the place of my rest . . .  
If thou couldest but perfectly bring thyself to  
nothing, and empty thyself of all created love, then  
ought I with great grace to flow into thee . . .  
Howsoever little any thing be, if it is inordinately  
loved and regarded, it keepeth thee back from the  
Highest, and corrupteth the soul . . .  
My son forsake thyself and thou shalt find me.

O Thou Beloved:

Love eternal, my whole Good, Happiness which hath  
no bounds, I desire to appropriate Thee with the  
most vehement desire, and the most worthy reverence.  
I desire to reserve nothing unto myself.

O everlasting Light, surpassing all created  
luminaries, flash forth Thy lightning from above,  
piercing all the most inward parts of my heart.  
Make clean, make glad, make bright and make alive  
my spirit, with all the powers thereof, that I  
may cleave unto Thee in ecstasies of joy.\*\*

Thomas a Kempis, 1380-1471. German mystic; belonged to Augustinian Order of Monks.  
*The Imitation of Christ*.<sup>12</sup>

<sup>12</sup> Some authorities credit at least part of this book to Gerard de Groote, Founder of the "Brothers of the Common Life," fourteenth century.

## CHAPTER TWO

### *The Implications of the Way*

Which of you, desiring to build a tower, doth not first sit down and count the cost whether he have wherewith to complete it?

JESUS OF NAZARETH

No one can be enlightened unless he be first cleansed or purified and stripped.

THEOLOGICA GERMANICA



## CHAPTER TWO

### *The Implications of the Way*

In Chapter One were assembled selections which presented the Way in a general over-all manner. This chapter attempts to break down the religious process into specific steps. While these steps possibly never occur in the sequence described, nonetheless each is essential to the progressive achievement of that "dying to self" whereby the divine Goodness is permitted to function within the life of man.

These steps are designated as Choice, Purgation, Self-knowledge and Self-acceptance, Devotion to the Good, and Rebirth. They imply a reconditioning of the whole personality structure, conscious and unconscious. They imply an integrity of attitude that assures a progressive unlayering of the ego-centered self, and a commitment that engenders a gradual destruction of ego-limiting goals. Finally they imply a process of transformation so thorough-going that it resembles and has often been described as a rebirth. The selections which follow give content to each of these implications.

For those who have no conviction of an Ultimate Reality—to whom an attitude of devotion is meaningless because they have no infinite "object" to which to direct their devotion—the Appendix titled *The Object of Devotion* should be helpful. Therein are assembled ideas of God as expressed by contemporary philosophers as well as by ancient mystical writers.

### THE WAY IMPLIES CHOICE

The choice is always ours. Then let me choose  
The longest art, the hard Promethean way  
Cherishingly to tend and feed and fan  
That inward fire, whose small precarious flame,

Kindled or quenched creates  
The noble or the ignoble men we are,  
The worlds we live in and the very fates,  
Our bright or muddy star.

Aldous Huxley, 1894-. English writer, literary critic.  
From the poem *Orion*.

The creature has nothing else in its power but the free use of its will, and its free will hath no other power but that of concurring with, or resisting, the working of God in nature.

William Law, 1686-1761. English clergyman, mystic.  
*Serious Call to a Devout and Holy Life*.

Until man appeared, evolution strove only, from an observer's point of view, to manufacture an organ, the brain, in a body capable of assuring its protection. All the ancestors of man were but irresponsible actors playing an imposed part in a play which they did not understand, or try to understand. Man continues to play his part but wants to comprehend the play. He becomes capable of perfecting himself, and he is even the only one capable of doing this. But in order to improve himself he must be free, since his contribution to evolution will depend on the use he makes of his liberty.

This transformation of man into an active, responsible individual is the new event which, more than any other, characterizes man. Of course the ancient mechanism of evolution, natural selection, will again enter into play. But, instead of depending as formerly on the slow action of biological laws and of chance, natural selection now depends on conscience, a manifestation of cerebral activity based on freedom which becomes, in each of us, the means put at our disposal to advance. According to the degree of evolution we have reached we will choose to progress or regress. Our choice will indicate precisely the state of perfection we have attained.

Lecomte du Noüy, 1883-1947. French bio-physicist.  
*Human Destiny*.

The distresses of choice are our chance to be blessed.

W. H. Auden.  
*For the Time Being*.

*The Way**Wise Men*

Not In but With our time Love's energy  
 Exhibits Love's immediate operation;  
 The choice to love is open till we die.

*Shepherds*

O Living Love, by your birth we are able  
 Not only, like the ox and ass of the stable,  
     To love with our live wills, but love,  
     Know we love.

*Tutti*

O Living Love replacing phantasy,  
 O Joy of life revealed in Love's creation;  
 Our mood of longing turns to indication:  
 Space is the Whom our loves are needed by,  
 Time is our choice of How to love and Why.

W. H. Auden, 1907-. English poet.  
 From *For the Time Being*, a Christmas oratorio.

All the length of our conscious life, God for Whom we were made, in Whom alone we can find what we want and understand what we mean, presents Himself to the apprehension of our soul, tempts our desire, pursues our will. To this pressure we must react, either with it or against it.

R. H. J. Stewart, S.J., 1874-. English priest.  
*The Inward Vision.*

For the most part, of course, the presence and action of the great spiritual universe surrounding us is no more noticed by us than the pressure of air on our bodies, or the action of light. Our field of attention is not wide enough for that; our spiritual senses are not sufficiently alert. Most people work so hard developing their correspondence with the visible world, that their power of corresponding with the invisible is left in a rudimentary state.

The moment in which, in one way or another, we become aware of this creative action of God and are therefore able to respond or resist, is the moment in which our conscious spiritual life begins. In all the talk of human progress, it is strange how very seldom we hear anything about this, the most momentous step forward that a human being can make: for it is the step that takes us beyond self-interest.

There are many different ways in which the step can be taken. It may be, from the ordinary human point of view, almost imperceptible: because, though it really involves the very essence of man's being, his free and living will, it is not linked with a special or vivid experience. Bit by bit the inexorable pressure is applied, and bit by bit the soul responds; until a moment comes when it realizes that the landscape has been transformed, and is seen in a new proportion and lit by a new light. But sometimes the step is a distinct and vivid experience. Then we get the strange facts of conversion: when through some object or event—in the external world, another world and its overwhelming attraction and demand is realised. An old and limited state of consciousness is suddenly, even violently, broken up and another takes its place. It was the voice of a child saying "Take, read!" which at last made St. Augustine cross the frontier on which he had been lingering, and turned a brilliant and selfish young professor into one of the giants of the Christian Church; and a voice which seemed to him to come from the Crucifix, which literally made the young St. Francis, unsettled and unsatisfied, another man than he was before. It was while St. Ignatius sat by a stream and watched the running water, and while the strange old cobbler Jacob Boehme was looking at a pewter dish, that there was shown to each of them the mystery of the Nature of God. A spring is touched, a Reality always there discloses itself in its awe-inspiring majesty and intimate nearness, and becomes the ruling fact of existence; continually presenting its standards, and demanding a costly response. And so we get such an astonishing scene, when we reflect upon it, as that of the young Francis of Assisi, little more than a boy, asking all night long the one question which so many apparently mature persons have never asked at all: "My God and All,

what are Thou and what am I?" and we realise with amazement what a human creature really is—a finite centre of consciousness, which is able to apprehend, and long for, Infinity.\*

Evelyn Underhill, 1875-1944. English writer, mystic.  
*The Spiritual Life.*

---

We think we must climb to a certain height of goodness before we can reach God. But He says not "At the end of the end of the way you may find me"; He says "I am the Way; I am the road under your feet, the road that begins just as low down as you happen to be." If we are in a hole the Way begins in the hole. The moment we set our face in the same direction as His, we are walking with God.

Helen Wodehouse, 1880-. Educator.

God impels nobody, for he will have no one saved by compulsion . . . God has given free will to men that they may choose for themselves, either the good or the bad. Christ said to his disciples, "Will ye go away?" as tho he would say, "You are under no compulsion," and, "God forces no one, for love cannot compel and God's service is, therefore, a thing of complete freedom." \*

Hans Denck, 1495-1527. German mystic, spiritual reformer.  
*On the Law of God.*

The world is tired of individualism (which economic-dominated minds call by its economic symptom, capitalism). Many men are so desperate that they will use violence to rid themselves of individualism, though it itself is the product of violence, and grows with violence. They are like men adrift and dying of thirst who in their madness drink sea-water.

The compulsory economic communism is based on hate. The psychological (communism) is based on love, on the steadily expanding power which grows by giving. Because consciousness and the psyche are more fundamental than the means of life, it will always be the emotion and motive, and not the supposed aim, that will govern and shape the actual achievement. If the psychology is right, then the right economics, the only economics bearable to a

happy, just, social and charitic nature, will follow. If a man realises how he must and how he may lose his individuality, he will not thereafter cling to greed which can prevent his deliverance and ruin his happiness.

This, then, it would seem, is the future of religion, and one neither otherworldly nor distant. Men may enter on their happiness when they will, and they should not hesitate, for the old order is over anyhow. Man may be far more happy than any but the saints have so far been, or far more wretched than it is possible for a man to be and not to become a beast. Which he will choose to be no one can say. He may see the choice, make the effort and attain the new life. Or he may drift, persuade himself that things are well enough, and that they will last his time. But it is certain that here in our day the middle path ends. Nationalism and individualism are outraged by the integration of the world; they must cut these tendrils and rootlets that are binding the world together, or they will be obliterated. Physical science puts at their disposal forces that can really tear in pieces these connections and rupture every artery of the world's economic life. Everyone may destroy, and so none may escape.

Here therefore, and here alone, in the advance of religion there seems to lie to our hand the solution of the aeonic conflict of the individual, and with that solution, at the same stroke (for this is but its other side), the salvation of civilization. Here lies the reconciliation of the individual's intense passion to survive and the race's apparently disregardful continuance. Here is the door passing through which the individual returns to society, society becomes the race, the race is reunited with life, and life is one with the universe.\*

Gerald Heard, 1889-. English author, religious philosopher.  
*The Social Substance of Religion.*

Every one who hears these words of mine and does them will be like a wise man who built his house upon the rock; and the rain fell, and the floods came, and the winds blew and beat upon that house, but it did not fall, because it had been founded on the rock. And every one who hears these words of mine and does not do them will be like a foolish man who built his house upon the sand; and

the rain fell, and the floods came, and the winds blew and beat against that house, and it fell; and great was the fall of it.

Jesus of Nazareth.  
*New Testament*, (Matt. 7). Revised Standard Version.

## THE WAY IMPLIES INNER PURGATION

If the doors of perception were cleansed, everything would appear to man as it is, infinite.

For man has closed himself up, till he sees all things thro' narrow chinks of his cavern.

William Blake, 1757-1827. English poet, artist, mystic.  
*The Marriage of Heaven and Hell*.

Except for those rare spirits that are born without sin, there is a cavern of darkness to be traversed before that temple can be entered. The gate of the cavern is despair, and its floor is paved with the gravestones of abandoned hopes. There Self must die; there the eagerness, the greed of untamed desire must be slain, for only so can the soul be freed from the empire of Fate. But out of the cavern the Gate of Renunciation leads again to the daylight of wisdom, by whose radiance a new insight, a new joy, a new tenderness, shine forth to gladden the pilgrim's heart.

Bertrand Russell, 1872-. English mathematician, philosopher.  
*Mysticism and Logic*.

## Abandon Hope All Ye That Enter Here

To die—for this into the world you came.

Yes, to abandon more than you ever conceived as possible:

All ideals, plans—even the very best and most unselfish—all hopes and desires,

All formulas of morality, all reputation for virtue or consistency or good sense; all cherished theories, doctrines, systems of knowledge.

Modes of life, habits, predilections, preferences, superiorities, weaknesses, indulgences,

Good health, wholeness of limb and brain, youth, manhood, age—nay life itself—in one word: To die—

For this into the world you came.

All to be abandoned, and when they have been finally abandoned,

Then to return to be used—and then only to be rightly used, to be free and open forever.

Edward Carpenter, 1844–1929. English author, poet.  
*Towards Democracy.*

No man is free until he is free at the center. When he lets go there he is free indeed. When the self is renounced, then one stands utterly disillusioned, apart, asking for nothing. He anticipates the sorrows, the buffetings, the slights, the separations, the disappointments of life by their acceptance in one great renunciation. It is life's supreme strategic retreat. You can then say to life, "What can you do to me? I want nothing!" You can say to death, "What can you do to me? I have already died!" Then is a man truly free. In the bath of renunciation he has washed his soul clean from a thousand clamoring, conflicting desires. Asking for nothing, if anything comes to him, it is all sheer gain. Then life becomes one constant surprise.

Everything belongs to the man who wants nothing. Having nothing, he possesses all things in life, including life itself. Nothing will be denied the man who denies himself. Having chosen to be utterly solitary he now comes into possession of the most utterly social fact in the universe, the kingdom of God. He wants nothing of the world of man or of matter. He has God. That is enough. Now he is ready to come back into the world. He is washed clean of desires, now he can form new ones, from a new center and with a new motive. This detachment is necessary to a new attachment. The fullest and most complete life comes out of the most completely empty life.\*

E. Stanley Jones, 1884–. American, Christian missionary to India, author.

The recognition and careful observation of non-personal psychical factors entails and leads to a sacrifice of the ego—not in the form of an abolition, but in the form of a renunciation of its supremacy. It



is no longer possible always to say: I want, I decide, I do, and so on, because it is evident that things happen to me, which are decided for me, and that factors other than the conscious "I" do or think in me. The ego is the vehicle for these other factors and it is responsible for them; but their roots are not in it but in the larger psyche. This is an attitude comparable to that of St. Paul when he says (Gal. ii 20): "I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me"; and it is certainly an attitude which can be called religious. It is, in a way, a kind of death of the ego and is often represented in dreams. This entails a deliberate renunciation of the hitherto dominating position of the ego, the conscious person as I know myself to be.\*

Toni Wolff, contemporary Swiss analytical psychologist.  
*Christianity Within.*

We all have so much good about us, so many selfless motives, so much loveliness, childlikeness, joyousness. But why do men generally feel so little of it? Why does it not penetrate through? Why does it not radiate victoriously from us? Why is not "good" king of the world? For this reason—because it possesses only the forefield. It does not possess the central, inner place. *There*, in the inner place, something else, the defiant, crafty "I" of man reigns, which has not yet fully surrendered itself, which still remains for itself, which still wants to be something by itself, not fully good nor fully bad. As long as this "I" sits in this fortress, all this busy chasing and running after the good is futile. This fortress must be stormed, this human place must finally surrender, must allow itself to be overcome. Before that happens, the good will never be king on earth.

Above all, He (Jesus) saw that this last inner stronghold is most unbroken in the pious and believing people whose piety serves to establish more firmly the defiant, crafty "I" of man.

Jesus made short shrift of all the ideals and religious and patriotic endeavors of His time. He possessed the profound insight that man must be overcome. A sacrifice must be made; no, not just *a* sacrifice, but *the* sacrifice, the sacrifice of man. And He made it Himself.\*

Karl Barth, 1886-. German theologian, author.  
Edward Thurneysen, contemporary Swiss minister.  
*Come Holy Spirit.*

Forsake thyself, resign thyself, and thou shalt enjoy great inward peace.

Lord, how often shall I resign myself? and wherein shall I forsake myself? Always and at every hour; as well in small things as in great. I except nothing, but in all things I will thee to be found naked. Otherwise, how canst thou be Mine, and I thine, unless thou be stript of self-will both within and without? The sooner thou doest this, the better it will be with thee; and the more fully and sincerely thou doest this, the greater shall be thy gain.

Give all for all; ask for nothing, require back nothing; abide purely and unhesitatingly in Me, and thou shalt possess Me; thou shalt be free in heart, and darkness shall not tread thee down.\*\*

Thomas a Kempis, 1380-1471. German mystic; belonged to Augustinian Order of Monks.  
*The Imitation of Christ.*

"It seems to me that to discover what to put before oneself in the first place, is the whole problem of life," he said.

"It seems so to you now. So it did to me—for years. But it is not a problem that any man is under compulsion to solve."

"An artist has his answer, I suppose," Lewis continued, "and a saint. But most of us have none. We snatch at any answer that comes—Freedom, Country, and now, in Russia, Class. Is there any answer that endures except Art and God?"

"Death is the answer," Narwitz said. "No," he added swiftly, "not in the sense in which men say stupidly that 'death is the answer to all things,' meaning only that they are tired of thought. When we are young children, we know nothing of death. Then we become aware of it, recognize it, fear it or conquer our fear of it, seeing it always objectively as something outside ourselves, a final pit perhaps, or a pit we shall climb out of, as some believe, into another life. But there is another stage in the knowledge of death. A man who ceases to regard it as something outside himself and, so to speak, draws it into his consciousness and assimilates the idea of it is completely changed. He is in all truth born again. He sees himself now in a second place absolutely—not relatively to something else in the first place. What occupies the first place he may, or may not, learn some

day, but that is not of present importance. The arrogance, the delusion that I have found it hardest to overcome," he said, leaning towards Lewis as though this aided his confession, "the fatal delusion is our belief that we are entitled to first place until we have discovered in our own experience something that transcends us. So we set up idols, our country, our creed, our art, our beloved one, what you will, and pour all our spiritual possessions into the idol's lap. We call that humility or love—Turgenev would call it self-sacrifice. Except to the gods we make out of our experience or dreams we will not kneel down. But the true saint and philosopher," Narwitz concluded in a tone not of assertion but of longing, "is he who can kneel without an image because he sees himself in a second place absolutely, and to kneel is an inward necessity to him. Fate cannot touch such a man—or, rather, though it rend his mind and body, it cannot affect him."

Charles Morgan, 1894-. English novelist.  
*The Fountain.*

"Beauty is Truth, Truth Beauty." The words to many are meaningless. And it is certain that by no poring over the words themselves can the vision which they express be attained. Nor, probably, if we turn them about, like a jewel of many facets, will they reflect a gleam.

We may turn them in many ways. We may say that the Real is Beautiful. The answer straightway is that the Real is full of ugliness and pain. And this is true: who will deny it? But the Beauty of the Real is a Beauty which resides as surely in pain and ugliness as in beauty itself. There is the sorrow which makes

Sorrow more beautiful than Beauty's self.

But that sorrow may still be called, by our human standards, beautiful. The Beauty of the Real is beyond this. It lies in the perfection of uniqueness which belongs to every thing, or thought, simply because it *is*.

But this is not Beauty. And indeed it is not what men commonly call Beauty, any more than the Love with which all high religion invests its Deity is what is commonly called Love among men, any

more than the Perfection which, Spinoza said, belonged to every existence is what men commonly call perfection. None the less, the great sayings that "God is Love," and that "*Omnis existentia est perfectio*," have their meaning for those who understand them. Keats uttered another saying worthy to stand with these simple and lucid finalities. "Beauty is Truth, Truth Beauty" belongs to the same order as they; nor can any one truly understand any one of these sayings without understanding the others.

For the only name for the faculty by which we can discern that element of Beauty which is present in every Fact, which we must discern in every Fact before it becomes Truth for us, is Love. Whether it is Love which discovers the Beauty in Fact, whereby it becomes Truth; or whether it is the Beauty of Fact which causes the motion of Love to arise in our souls, and so to discern its Truth—to such questions there is no answer, nor any need to answer them. The relation between these things is simple and inextricable. When we love a Fact, it becomes Truth; when we attain that detachment from our passions whereby it becomes possible for us to love all Facts, then we have reached our Peace. If a Truth cannot be loved, it is not Truth, but only Fact. But the Fact does not change, in order that it may become Truth; it is we who change. All Fact is beautiful; it is we who have to regain our innocence to see its Beauty.

But this is inhuman, it may be said. And if it is indeed inhuman to be detached for a moment from all human passion, to see for a moment all things that happen as sheer happenings, to cease for a moment to feel what men call love and hate in the peace of a Love that is distinct from, and beyond them both, then it is inhuman. But this ultimate disinterestedness begins at home. It is achieved only by disinterestedness towards the pain and ugliness of one's own experience; and it is achieved chiefly by those to whom the pain of others has been as their own pain. This detachment is reached not through insensibility, but through sensibility grown intolerable.

None can usurp this height  
But those to whom the miseries of the world  
Are misery, and will not let them rest.

Whether or not it is easily intelligible, there is a meaning in "Beauty is Truth, Truth Beauty" which satisfies the conditions which we proposed as necessary. It is simple, but not easy; and it involves a great renunciation. That the first condition is satisfied is abundantly evident from our efforts to expound it. It is its utter simplicity which makes it so impossible to explain.

And perhaps it is equally evident that it involves a great renunciation. To attain the vision which Keats describes as the knowledge that "Beauty is Truth, Truth Beauty" we are required to put away all our human desires and beliefs and anxieties. We have to forget all those cares, delightful or painful, which appertain to our animal existence. Our joys and sorrows must become remote as though they happened to others than ourselves, or to ourselves in some other mode of existence from which we have awakened as from a dream. All the infinite, the all but total activities of man, conscious or unconscious, which are directed towards the maintenance and assertion of the instinctive will to live, must be put away. Cease they cannot, nor can we make them cease; but we must cease to be identified with them. They are the substrate of our vision; without them we cannot see as we desire to see. But when we have become an Eye, the Eye cannot belong to them, or they to it. It sees them with the same utter detachment with which it sees all things else. And this detachment is a real detaching.

Than this no greater renunciation is possible. All we are is become object to the pure vision of this Eye. Our secretest desires, our most precious aspirations, the finest point of our being—all is "out there," naked to the contemplation of eternity, of which contemplation we are the momentary instruments. A chasm divides the being that we are from the seeing that is ourselves. The renunciation is entire, the spirit is pure.\*

John Middleton Murry, 1889-. English author, critic.  
*Studies in Keats.*

#### PURGATION MORE SPECIFICALLY CLARIFIED

He that hath ears, let him hear.

The kingdom of heaven is like unto a treasure hidden in the

field; which a man found, and hid; and in his joy he goeth and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field.

Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man that is a merchant seeking goodly pearls: and having found one pearl of great price, he went and sold all that he had, and bought it.

Jesus of Nazareth.

From the Gospel According to Luke, *New Testament*.

Therefore if a heart is to be ready for him, it must be emptied out to nothingness, the condition of its maximum capacity. So, too, a disinterested heart, reduced to nothingness, is the optimum, the condition of maximum sensitivity.

Take an illustration from nature. If I wish to write on a white tablet, then no matter how fine the matter already written on it, it will confuse me and prevent me from writing down (my thoughts); so that, if I still wish to use the tablet, I must first erase all that is written on it, but it will never serve me as well for writing as when it is clean. Similarly, if God is to write his message about the highest matters on my heart, everything to be referred to as "this or that" must first come out, and I must be disinterested. God is free to do his will on his own level when my heart, being disinterested, is bent on neither this nor that.

Meister Johannes Eckhart, 1260-1327. German scholar, mystic.  
*Meister Eckhart*, Trans. R. Blakney.

### Turning from the Unreal to the Real

By false desires and false thoughts man has built up for himself a false universe: as a mollusc, by the deliberate and persistent absorption of lime and rejection of all else, can build up for itself a hard shell which shuts it from the external world, and only represents in a distorted and unrecognizable form the ocean from which it was obtained. This hard and wholly unnutritious shell, this one-sided secretion of the surface-consciousness, makes as it were a little cave of illusion for each separate soul. A literal and deliberate getting out of the cave must be for every mystic, as it was for Plato's prisoners, the first step in the individual hunt for reality.

In the plain language of old-fashioned theology "man's sin is

stamped upon man's universe." We see a sham world because we live a sham life. We do not know ourselves; hence do not know the true character of our senses and instincts; hence attribute wrong values to their suggestions and declarations concerning our relation to the external world. That world, which we have distorted by identifying it with our own self-regarding arrangements of its elements, has got to reassume for us the character of Reality, of God. In the purified sight of the great mystics it did reassume this character; their shells were opened wide, they knew the tides of the Eternal Sea. This lucid apprehension of the True is what we mean when we speak of the Illumination which results from a faithful acceptance of the trials of the Purgative Way. . . .

Whatever form, then, the mystical adventure may take, it must begin with a change in the attitude of the subject; a change which will introduce it into the order of Reality, and enable it to set up permanent relations with an Object which is not normally part of its universe. Therefore, though the end of mysticism is not adequately defined as goodness, it entails the acquirement of goodness. . . .

Primarily, then, the self must be purged of all that stands between it and goodness; putting on the character of reality instead of the character of illusion or "sin." It longs ardently to do this from the first moment in which it sees itself in the all-revealing radiance of the Uncreated light. "When love openeth the inner eyes of the soul for to see this truth," says Hilton, "with other circumstances that come withall, then beginneth the soul forsooth to be vastly meek. For then by the sight of God it feeleth and seeth itself as it is, and then doth the soul forsake the beholding and leaning to itself." . . .

The first thing that the self observes, when it turns back upon itself in that awful moment of lucidity—enters, as St. Catherine says, into "the cell of self-knowledge,"—is the horrible contrast between its clouded contours and the pure sharp radiance of the Real; between its muddled faulty life, its perverse self-centered drifting, and the clear onward sweep of that Becoming in which it is immersed. It is then that the outlook of rapture and awe receives the countersign of repentance. The harbinger of that new self

which must be born appears under the aspect of a desire: a passionate longing to escape from the suddenly perceived hatefulness of selfhood, and to conform to Reality, the Perfect which it has seen under its aspect of Goodness, of Beauty, or of Love—to be worthy of it, in fact to be *real*. . . .

To the true lover of the Absolute, Purgation no less than Illumination is a privilege, a dreadful joy. It is an earnest of increasing life. "Let me suffer or die!" said St. Teresa: a strange alternative in the ears of common sense, but a forced option in the spiritual sphere. However harsh its form, however painful the activities to which it spurs him, the mystic recognizes in this breakup of his old universe an essential part of the Great Work; and the act in which he turns to it is an act of loving desire, no less than an act of will. . . .

The purgation of the senses, and of the character which they have helped to build is always placed first in order in the Mystic Way; though sporadic flashes of illumination and ecstasy may, and often do, precede and accompany it. Since spiritual no less than physical existence, as we know it, is an endless Becoming, it too has no end.

In this sense, then, purification is a perpetual process. That which mystical writers mean, however, when they speak of the Way of Purgation, is rather the slow and painful completion of Conversion. It is the drastic turning of the self from the unreal to the real life: a setting of her house in order, an orientation of the mind to Truth. Its business is the getting rid, first of self-love; and secondly of all those foolish interests in which the surface-consciousness is steeped.

Evelyn Underhill, 1875-1944. English writer, mystic.  
*Mysticism.*

### Compromise Untenable

After experience had taught me that the common occurrences of ordinary life are vain and futile, and I saw that all the objects of my desire and fear were in themselves nothing good nor bad, save in so far as the mind was affected by them; I at length determined to search out whether there were not something truly good and communicable to man, by which his spirit might be affected to the ex-



clusion of all other things: yea, whether there were anything, through the discovery and acquisition of which I might enjoy continuous and perfect gladness forever. I say that I at length determined, because at first sight it seemed ill-advised to renounce things, in the possession of which I was assured, for the sake of what was yet uncertain. . . . I therefore turned over in my mind whether it might be possible to come at this new way, or at least to the certitude of its existence, without changing my usual way of life, (a compromise which I had often attempted before, but in vain). For the things that commonly happen in life and are esteemed among men as the highest good (as is witnessed by their works) can be reduced to these three, Riches, Fame, and Lust; and by these the mind is so distracted that it can scarcely think of any other good. With regard to Lust, the mind is as much absorbed thereby as if it had attained rest in some good: and this hinders it from thinking of anything else. But after fruition a great sadness follows, which, if it does not absorb the mind, will yet disturb and blunt it. . . . But love directed towards the eternal and infinite feeds the mind with pure joy, and is free from all sadness. Wherefore it is greatly to be desired, and to be sought after with our whole might . . . (and) although I could perceive this quite clearly in my mind, I could not at once lay aside all greed and lust and honour. . . . One thing I could see, and that was that so long as the mind was turned upon this new way, it was deflected, and seriously engaged therein; which was a great comfort to me; for I saw that those evils were not such as would not yield to remedies: and though at first these intervals were rare and lasted but a short while, yet afterwards the true good became more and more evident to me, and these intervals more frequent and of longer duration.\*

Benedict Spinoza, 1632-1677. Dutch philosopher.

### Renunciation of Immaturities

Every person must learn the art of renouncing many things in order to possess other things more securely and fully. This is a most important and difficult step. As children, we knew very little about

the necessity of renunciation. The young mind simply has no experience in the postponement of satisfaction. Yet as we grow older we learn that every stage of human development calls upon us to weigh differing goods in the scales and to sacrifice some for the sake of others. . . .

The man who wishes to achieve stature in the mature world will have to renounce many careers in order to fulfill one. The same truth exists in the realm of emotions. It is fitting and proper for the adolescent to transfer his love interest from one object of affection to another, but it is tragic in our monogamous society when the grown man still plays the role of the adolescent and sacrifices himself and his family upon the altar of his unstable feelings and daydreams.

Time is an irreversible arrow, and we can never return to the self that we sloughed off in childhood or adolescence. The man trying to wear youth's carefree clothing, the woman costuming her emotions in doll's dresses—these are pathetic figures who want to reverse time's arrow. They have not yet learned to renounce the desires that once were appropriate for an earlier level of being but are utterly out of place in succeeding chapters. Human existence means the closing of doors, many doors, before one great door can be opened—the door of mature love and of adult achievement.

No person can attain genuine self-respect until he achieves the knowledge of the consistent and the inconsistent. As an adult he must accept duties and responsibilities and cultivate his true fulfillment in the acre he has chosen—the acre of love and marriage, vocation, and avocation. He must be able not only to say, but to realize deeply within himself, that he is no longer an uninvolved free human atom. "Everything that I do," such a man must say, "is like the pebble thrown into a pool, making larger and larger ripples in the waters of other lives."

Renunciation is often painful, and we cling stubbornly to the romantic cloak-and-dagger characters of our fantasy life. But dangerous and vain is the attempt to relive in actuality the fantasies of childhood, or to attempt to breach those barriers between the possible and the impossible which maturing years have erected. . . .

It should be noted that there is a difference between renunciation and repression. A person who represses all his ambitions and wishes and denies any reality to them is on the road to misery. The person, on the other hand, who consciously renounces unrealizable and unworthy desires has strengthened himself by daring to face his life as it is and making clear to himself why he has chosen that course of action. A man who can say to himself, "I know that there is still something of the adolescent within me, and yet I know that I can ruin my life and the lives of others if I should smash the mature pattern which I now possess; therefore, for the sake of abiding and permanent happiness, I willingly sacrifice the ephemeral temptation"—such a man has achieved the wisdom of renunciation without repression.

We shall become free of inner conflict and burden only when we have looked renunciation directly in the face and persuaded ourselves that it is essential for the fulfillment of our true and permanent happiness. Persons who have made such renunciation have learned to live not for the fleeting and perishable ecstasy of the moment, but for the eternal and abiding values which alone are the sources of self-respect and peace of mind.\*

Joshua Loth Liebman, 1907-. Jewish Rabbi, educator.  
*Peace of Mind.*

### Renunciation of the Spirit of the World

Every person, when he first applies himself to the exercise of the virtue of humility, must consider himself as a learner. He has not only as much to do, as he that has some new art or science to learn, but he has also a great deal to unlearn: He is to forget and lay aside his own Spirit, which has been a long while fixing and forming itself; he must forget, and depart from abundance of passions and opinions, which the fashion, and vogue, and spirit of the world have made natural to him. Because the vogue and fashion of the world, by which we have been carried away as in a torrent, before we could pass right judgments of the value of things, is, in many respects, contrary to humility.

To abound in wealth, to have fine houses and rich clothes, to

be beautiful in our persons, to have titles of dignity, to be above our fellow-creatures, to overcome our enemies with power, to subdue all that oppose us, to set out ourselves in as much splendor as we can, to live highly and magnificently, to eat, and drink, and delight ourselves in the most costly manner, these are the great, the honourable, the desirable things, to which the spirit of the world turns the eyes of all people. And many a man is afraid of standing still, and not engaging in the pursuit of these things, lest the same world should take him for a fool.

This is the mark of Christianity; you are to be dead, that is, dead to the spirit and temper of the world, and live a new life in the Spirit of Jesus Christ.

William Law, 1686–1761. English clergyman and mystic.  
*Serious Call to a Devout and Holy Life.*

### Forms of Self-love to be Renounced

In broadest outline we see the universe evolving life, and life evolving to continually extended awareness. We see our individuality as a phase—perhaps a “hairpin bend” in the zig-zag spiral of ascent—and we see that our task in co-operating with the purpose of life and the universe is so to act and to think that we become increasingly aware of our extra-individuality—that is, the common life which unites us with our fellow creatures with all life and the universe. . . .

The first aim is to keep the individual from losing his flexibility, sensitiveness, adaptability, power of growth. Against the constant tendency to settle down, stiffen, “to be subdued by what it works in,” to accept as absolute the current assumptions and partial prejudices, the human spirit has to practise a compensatory expansion, a constant keeping in training, an athleticism. . . . However, it is not denial, but a wider acceptance that is aimed at, an expansion which casts off, as atrophied, confining husks, its old practices and passions. . . . So a rationed life is pursued in order that the individual may attain the maximum of growth with the minimum of effort—for few of us can grow as we would unless we give ourselves every available help. Reciprocally it also aims at innocence. The individual who concentrates on his extra-individual life encroaches less and less on the lives

of others. He is essentially innocent, harming none, exacting from none, and able to give because he draws on an extra-individual generosity.

The rationed life, then, aims at two things: efficiency and innocence. How can the individual find his path to this double freedom? Nearly everyone finds himself involved in a threefold entanglement of body, personality, and society. As an animal, as a propertied individual, and as a social constituent, each one has a treble involvement from which to extricate himself. The mortificator would cut the knot. . . . The knot cannot be cut, but must be untied, because, as individualism is a phase to be surmounted, there can, clearly, be no private salvation. The individual cannot forsake society or call life evil. He grows by developing each power until it transcends its limits and what, contracted, would have been a private vice becomes, expanded, a public virtue.

We must then examine in turn the three levels on which individuality is present, threatens to make itself permanent, but must and can be made transitional, leading to a larger, correlating consciousness.

### The Three Involvements to be Solved by Growth:

(a) *Physical: Addiction*—The first level is the physical. Appetite may become an addiction, an end in itself. Then, as the original creative energy, which informed it, volatilizes out of it, the pointless repetition becomes a habit, no longer with any gusto or keen delight in it, but a process dictated by what is becoming an autonomous reflex. The pleasure grows less but the compulsion is irresistible, because the habit is so strongly confirmed by constant practice and the energy, thus drawn away, is lacking to resist the reflex. The vice is no longer interesting, but power of interest in any other compensatory activity is gone and the individual becomes a slave to an ever-narrowing function. This can be avoided if appetite is kept as a means and so prevented from becoming a fixation. To do this successfully, three things are necessary: mentally, a point of view; psychophysically, a breadth of alternatives; and, psychically, exercise in strengthening the will.

One of the chief troubles about physical appetite today is that it is for all Mechanomorphists the ultimate reality and as such has Freud recognized it. . . . In the state of civilization where a larger cosmology was recognized, where consciousness was assumed to be more than the body, appetite could not be so dangerous. The nearer a psychic activity is to the subconscious, the more it tends to be able to look after itself, provided the individual will live just healthily and follow on (or rather let himself be carried forward by) the natural flow of interest. Appetite then is not a severe problem in simpler communities. . . .

It is one of the unsuspected tragedies of a falsely intellectualized society (such as the mechanomorphic) that lust becomes the only aim and purpose in the whole universe. Its presence is the one sure guarantee of life—of death being still far away . . . The ecstasy of union through psychological means, through the fact that in its higher stages the individual consciousness blends with others, with all life, this ecstasy can, in a mechanomorphic age, only be obtained at the lower (at the pre-individual instead of at the post-individual) end.

Appetite, especially sexual appetite, needs then, direction. The hope that by leaving the reins on the horse's neck, by getting rid of all tabus and yielding freely to impulse, impulse would become eliminated is not true in a mechanomorphic society and may—as man has no specific instincts—be untrue of any human society. . . . The fact that our emotions are very flexible means that they easily become suited to any habit or lack of habit. . . . We know that sex begins by being diffused and reaches a focus, so in fully healthy living, where the individual realizes his evolution and his present phasal condition, sex will expand again, after having passed through its specific focus. (Such seems to happen in successful parenthood where general tenderness takes the place of intense passion and cherishing is substituted for possessing.) . . .

The small insurance-cost which an ordered and rationed life entails is, after all, a slight exaction beside the bankrupting charges made by uncontrolled desire. Yet, again it must be repeated, this is not to advocate the life of mortification or denial. The conventional ascetic

is a very dangerous person. Better an addict who hates his failure, as nearly all do, than an arrogant who, as nearly all do, prides himself on his achievement. The aim of ordering appetite is not for ordering's sake—not for a sense of power or display—but as a means to a fuller life.

(b) *Social: Possessiveness*—Possessiveness, we have seen, already appears in sexual relationships. It extends, however, much more widely. Man has a necessary capacity for saving, but this passion, if he conceives of himself as nothing but an individual, and happens to be of a timid and cautious nature, will become morbid and dominant. This state is, however, easily cured, once the individual realizes the phasic nature of his individuality. Possessiveness itself is the characteristic symptom of individualism, and so the passion for security and over-saving have naturally marked the culmination and crisis of the mechanomorphic age, in which individuality was taken to be the final and absolute term.

There are, however, forms of possessiveness which are loftier and therefore more subtle and dangerous. . . . The individual argued out of his love of money-avarice, and forbidden it, may yet be uncured of the root passion. He will still suffer from a possessive wish to influence those particularly loved. Because he cannot realize that this individual experience is part of a vast development and that there are ahead of him stages of power and influence far above any help he can give today . . . he acts precipitately, impatiently. He would coerce those over whom his love gives him power. . . . "I must use authority to save them from my mistakes." It is the gentlest of violences and yet may do the authentic damage violence must always inflict. If, however, the individual realizes that he and his charge both have a vast time of development before them, he will no longer be tempted to take the short-cut. He will realize that everyone must freely accept for himself, and not to please another, the way of advance.

This, however, may seem an almost inhuman patience. But, . . . he who lives for the larger individual life has already begun to transcend his individuality. He thinks too often that he is making no progress and that his superficial, still unresolved egotism spoils and

betrays his every effort to serve and show forth the larger life. He can comfort himself by realizing that the last thing which will be melted will be that defensive crust of personality, for personality is most intransigent and rigid on the surface. Underneath the deeper levels are being made more fluid and, as it is in the deeper levels of the mind (we see through telepathy) that individuals have their profound and decisive contact, he who cares, if he cares only for the other's growth and not for the expansion of his own power, is all the while transmitting influence. . . . To attempt to influence consciously is either to arouse opposition—opposition all the more efficacious, the more it is unconscious—or to reduce the patient to a stage of psychological parasitism. Until all individualism is transcended and fused, unconscious influence alone is safe and pure. . . .

From military influence and coercion, which "makes a desolation and calls it peace," to that possessive maternalism which will not let its child be "weaned" . . . it is clear that the better the end and motive, the more the mistaken means does such damage as to prevent the end being attained.

The man who is rationed has therefore few possessions, and these he would at any moment hand to any other who might use them better; they are simply the tools of his craft. Even in personal relationships he would guard against all possessiveness. . . . This is, need it be said, no scorn of life or coldness of heart, but the vivid and continual awareness that, until individuality is transcended, love and life have not in reality begun. Until each can recognize in each their common transcendent life, affection and sympathy are still no more than rudiments.

(c) *Psychical: Pretension*—The third danger is great because it inflames the judgment itself and has no natural limit or satiety. That danger is Pretension: pride, the claim to be honoured, respected, recognized, praised, deferred to, valued not for beauty or wealth but for character. It is all the more dangerous because it comes last and cannot indeed really envelop the man and net him in his individuality unless first he has rid himself, or been rid, of the two lower involvements—bodily addictions and ordinary possessiveness. He will not be able to dominate unless he is strong, and the man who is liable



to be dominated by lust or love of goods is always liable to be beaten by the man who is superior to these lures. Most dictators are abstemious. Ambition, like morphia, takes away the more innocently animal lusts. The will for power is insatiable, for it can have no limit. . . . Ambition, as the mythos says, is the individual determined to become god. Therefore it is deadly and all profound morality diagnoses it as the supreme sin. . . . Great wealth can be like a huge sledgehammer in one's hand—you try to touch gently with it, you cannot, it smashes at every touch. Great charm can be like the face of Moses—something which should be shrouded, for others will yield to its splendour, dazzled, and he who wields will soon wrest. It is true wisdom, confirmed by our present psychological knowledge, when Patanjali rules as a preliminary step to advance: "You must yield up power<sup>1</sup> over anyone."

The fundamental principle whereby the growing spirit knows all those things which should be avoided is this: Whatsoever will keep the individual arrested in his individuality and incapable of growing into the enlarged life that lies ahead, that is deadly to life.\*-\*\*

Gerald Heard, contemporary English author and religious philosopher.  
*The Third Morality.*<sup>2</sup>

### Possessiveness and Attachment

Almost every form of religion has insisted that many possessions are a bar to spiritual progress, but while the Zen monk has certainly the minimum of material possessions, Zen interprets poverty as an attitude of mind rather than a physical condition. One of the most common ways of trying to fix life into rigid definitions is to qualify something, whether a person, a thing, or an idea, with the statement, "This belongs to me." But because life is this elusive and perpetually changing process, every time we think we have really taken possession of something, the truth is that we have completely lost it. All that we possess is our own idea about the thing desired, an idea which tends to remain fixed, which does not grow as the thing

<sup>1</sup> "Power always corrupts; absolute power absolutely corrupts. All great men are bad."  
—Lord Acton.

<sup>2</sup> This abridged selection was chosen from pages 186–204 of the author's text. The reader will profit by a full reading of these pages.

grows. Thus one of the most noticeable facts about those obsessed with greed for possessions, whether material goods or cherished ideas, is their desire that things shall remain as they are—not only that their possessions shall remain in their own hands, but also that the possessions themselves shall not change. There are theologians and philosophers who show the greatest concern if anyone questions their ideas about the universe, for they imagine that within those ideas they have at last enshrined ultimate truth, and that to lose those ideas would be to lose the truth. But because truth is alive it will not be bound by anything which shows no sign of life—namely a conception whose validity is held to depend partly on the fact that it is unchangeable. For once we imagine that we have grasped the truth of life, the truth has vanished, for truth cannot become anyone's property, the reason being that truth *is* life, and for one person to think that he possesses all life is a manifest absurdity. The part cannot possess the whole. Therefore Chuang-Tzu tells the following story:

Shun asked Ch'eng, saying, "Can one get Tao so as to have it for one's own?"

"Your very body," replied Ch'eng, "is not your own, how should Tao be?"

"If my body," said Shun, "is not my own, pray whose is it?"

"It is the delegated image of Tao," replied Ch'eng. "Your life is not your own. It is the delegated harmony of Tao. . . . Your individuality is not your own. It is the delegated adaptability of Tao . . . you move, but know not how. You are at rest, but know not why? These are the operations of the laws of Tao. How then should you get Tao so as to have it for your own?"

Just as no person can possess life, so no idea which a person can possess can define it; the idea of possession is illusory, for apart from the fact that all things must eventually pass away into some other form, and can never remain in one place for eternity, at the root of possession lies the desire that things shall not alter in any way, and this is a complete impossibility. If, therefore, life can never be grasped, how can it be understood? How can truth be known if it can never be defined? Zen would answer: by not trying to grasp or

define it, and this is the fundamental Buddhist ideal of non-attachment, or the Taoist ideal of *wu-wei*.

But Buddhism and Taoism go further than saying that nothing can ever be possessed; they declare that those who try to possess are in fact *possessed*, they are slaves to their own illusions about life. Spiritual freedom is just that capacity to be as spontaneous and unfettered as life itself, to be "as the wind that bloweth where it listeth and thou hearest the sound thereof but cannot tell whence it cometh nor whither it goeth." "Even so," said Jesus, "is everyone that is born of the Spirit." But non-attachment does not mean running away from things to some peaceful hermitage, for we can never escape from our own illusions about life; we carry them with us, and if we are afraid of them and wish to escape it means that we are doubly enslaved. For whether we are content with our illusions or frightened of them, we are equally possessed by them, and hence the non-attachment of Buddhism and Taoism means not running away from life but running with it, for freedom comes through complete acceptance of reality. Those who wish to keep their illusions do not move at all; those who fear them run backwards into greater illusions, while those who conquer them "Walk on."

Thus the poverty of the Zen disciple is the negative aspect of his spiritual freedom; he is poor in the sense that his mind is not encumbered with material and intellectual impedimenta—the significant Latin word for "baggage." This state of mind is the realization of the Mahayana doctrine of *sunyata*, of the emptiness of transitory things; nothing can be grasped for everything is emptiness; nor is there anything which can grasp, for the self is emptiness. Therefore the Yuen-Chieh Sutra declares that all component things are "like drifting clouds, like the waning moon, like ships that sail the ocean, like shores that are washed away," and the Zen masters, realizing the evanescence of the outer world, of their own ideas and of the ego itself, cease to cling to these passing forms. In the words of the *Dhammapada* they are "those who have no possessions . . . who have realized the causeless and unconditioned freedom through understanding the emptiness of that which passes away—the path of these men it is impossible to trace, just as the track of birds in the

sky cannot be followed." For the Zen, life does not move in ruts; it is the freedom of the Spirit, unfettered by external circumstances and internal illusions. Its very nature is such that it cannot be described in words, and the nearest we can get to it is by analogy. It is like the wind moving across the face of the earth, never stopping at any particular place, never attaching itself to any particular object, always adapting itself to the rise and fall of the ground. If such analogies give the impression of a dreamy *laissez-faire*, it must be remembered that Zen is not always a gentle breeze, like decadent Taoism; more than often it is a fierce gale which sweeps everything ruthlessly before it, an icy blast which penetrates to the heart of everything and passes right through to the other side! The freedom and poverty of Zen is to leave everything and "Walk on," for this is what life itself does, and Zen is the religion of life.

Therefore the masters tell their disciples to forget all that they have ever learnt before coming to the practice of Zen, to forget even their knowledge of Buddhism. For the Buddha himself declared that his teaching was only a raft with which to cross a river; when the opposite bank has been reached it must be left behind, but so many of his followers mistook the raft for the opposite bank. Yet this negative aspect of Zen, this giving up, is only another way of expressing the positive fact that to give up everything is to gain all. "He that loseth his life shall find it."

Professor Suzuki points out that while it was the custom of some of the masters to express their poverty, others would refer rather to the complete sufficiency of things. Thus while Hsiang-yen says:

My last year's poverty was not poverty enough;  
My poverty this year is poverty indeed.  
In my poverty last year there was room for a gimlet's point;  
But this year even the gimlet has gone—

Mumon emphasizes the other side of the picture:

Hundreds of spring flowers, the autumnal moon,  
A refreshing summer breeze, winter snow—  
Free thy mind from idle thoughts,  
And for thee how enjoyable every season is!

Here we find the acceptance and affirmation of the seasonal changes, and in the same way Zen accepts and affirms the birth, decay and death of men; there are no regrets for the past, and no fears for the future. Thus the Zen disciple gains all by accepting all, since ordinary possessiveness is loss—it is the denial of the right of people and things to live and change; hence the only loss in Zen is the loss of this denial.\*

Alan W. Watts, 1915-. English author.  
*The Spirit of Zen.*

As he was starting again on his journey, a man came running up to him, and knelt at his feet and asked him,

“Good master, what must I do to make sure of eternal life?”

But Jesus said to him,

“Why do you call me good? No one is good but God himself. You know the commandments—‘Do not murder, Do not commit adultery, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Do not defraud, Honor your father and mother.’”

But he said to him,

“Master, I have obeyed all these commandments ever since I was a child.”

And Jesus looked at him and loved him, and he said to him,

“There is one thing that you lack. Go, sell all you have, and give the money to the poor, and then you will have riches in heaven; and come back and be a follower of mine.”

But his face fell at Jesus’ words, and he went away much cast down, for he had a great deal of property.

And Jesus looked around and said to his disciples,

“How hard it will be for those who have money to enter the Kingdom of God!”

But the disciples were amazed at what he said. And Jesus said to them again,

“My children, how hard it is to enter the Kingdom of God! It is easier for a camel to get through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to get into the Kingdom of God!”

From the Gospel According to Mark, first century.  
*New Testament*, Trans. E. J. Goodspeed.

THE WAY IMPLIES SELF-KNOWLEDGE  
AND SELF-ACCEPTANCE

One must be able to strip oneself of all self-deception, to see oneself naked to one's own eyes before one can come to terms with the elements of oneself and know who one really is.

Frances G. Wickes, 1882-. American psychotherapist.  
*The Inner World of Man.*

A man has many skins in himself, covering the depths of his heart. Man knows so many other things; he does not know himself. Why, thirty or forty skins or hides, just like an ox's or a bear's, so thick and hard, cover the soul. Go into your own ground and learn to know yourself.

Meister Johannes Eckhart, 1260-1327. German scholar, mystic.  
*Meister Eckhart*, Trans. R. Blakney.

To get at the core of God at his greatest, one must first get into the core of himself at his least, for no one can know God who has not first known himself. Go to the depths of the soul, the secret place of the Most High, to the roots, to the heights; for all that God can do is focused there.

Meister Johannes Eckhart, 1260-1327. German scholar, mystic.  
*Meister Eckhart*, Trans. R. Blakney.

We should mark and know of a very truth that all manner of virtue and goodness, and even that Eternal Good, which is God Himself, can never make a man virtuous, good or happy so long as it is outside the soul, that is, so long as the man is holding converse with outward things through his senses and reason, and doth not withdraw into himself and learn to understand his own life, who and what he is.

Written anonymously by one of the "Friends of God" in fourteenth century.  
*Theologica Germanica.*

If the desire to be honest is greater than the desire to be "good" or "bad," then the terrific power of one's vices will become clear. And behind the vice the old forgotten fear will come up (the fear of

being excluded from life) and behind the fear the pain (the pain of not being loved) and behind this pain of loneliness the deepest and most profound and most hidden of all human desires: the desire to love and to give oneself in love and to be part of the living stream we call brotherhood. And the moment love is discovered behind hatred all hatred disappears.

Fritz Kunkel, 1889-  
*In Search of Maturity.*

### THE NATURE OF THE SELF<sup>3</sup>

#### The Seeming-Self and the Real Self

All feelings about one's value and worth and about what one can or cannot do are embodied in the Ego. So distorted and inaccurate are they that the Ego is always a false image of the Self—yet to the individual it seems to be what he really is and he acts accordingly.

In seeking to understand the effect of this Seeming-Self upon the life of the individual, it is helpful to think of the Ego as something in the nature of a psychological shell encasing the Self which may be thought of as the heart at the centre of personality. No figure or comparison can ever be relied upon to depict fully the reality we are now discussing. At the moment the figure of the shell encasing the "heart" serves us well in understanding the psychological situation.

This shell, with all its mistaken feelings and inaccurate ideas, does indeed wall up the Self. The more firmly these errors are fixed—the more inflexible one's ideas and feelings—the thicker and more rigid this wall is. That means that the Ego limitations placed upon one's productivity are greater and more inflexible, and the Self is more and more restricted in its expressions. Life is less rich and meaningful and creative than it might be otherwise, yet the individual often has no idea of how vast are the unrealized potentialities of his being.

<sup>3</sup> The Way rests on the basic assumption of a "false" and a "true" element within the structure of the personality. This distinction is expressed variously by different authors, i.e. "The Seeming-Self" and the "Real Self"; "The Conventional Self" and the "Self of an Individual Vocation"; the "old" man and the "new" man; the "outer" self and the "inner" self, *et cetera*. (Ed.)

Every human being is unconsciously shut up within a system of mistaken ideas and feelings which thwart the fullest expression of the powers of the Self. They add to the necessary limitations of the natural laws of his being which he must take into account.

The individual is limited, also, by the defects of the culture of his time. Its biases, prejudices, unscientific assumptions, historic errors, mistaken beliefs all bind him with fetters that seem to be unbreakable and often are never discarded. Such is our human fate that however good may be the intentions of our educators, in the broad sense, we suffer from the mistakes they unconsciously reflect in their dealings with us. Being human, all such persons express in their behaviour the mistakes of their own Ego and unconsciously influence us accordingly.

Under that influence we accept their own errors for ourselves, or develop other mistaken ideas to counterbalance them. We enact these errors and mistakes into laws which we now unconsciously accept and submit to as the natural laws of our being. Thus we come back to the basic psychological truth that the Ego serves as a shell, limiting the expression of the capacities of the Self.

Now it follows that one basic task of man is the removal of this shell. A lifelong problem is the discovery of the errors built into one's Ego, for only by discovering them does one come to crack his shell and remove its limitations even piecemeal. This discovery grows only out of the realization that one's system of living does not work.

It is possible for one to learn his mistaken ways from the reasonably calm contemplation of his life in the light of kindly observations by a friend or helpful suggestions in a book. But we must distinguish between an intellectual insight into the broad fact that the Ego is only our second, not our real, nature—and the actual breakdown of the shell. In only a very few instances is insight alone sufficient. In the end, it seems that nothing short of the severest kind of pressure is enough to shatter the shell.

This drastic experience we call the major crisis. All egocentricity leads toward it. Moreover, it should be welcomed; for through its suffering, as will be seen, we may move into that joy and peace



which comes from releasing the Self within from the limitations of its shell into the creative, productive, courageous, loving expressions of which it is capable. That is indeed the abundant life.\*-\*\*\*

Fritz Kunkel, M.D., German psychotherapist, and Roy E. Dickerson, American author.  
*How Character Develops.*

### The False and the True Self

Both Hinayana and Mahayana Buddhism have a common basis in the elementary principles of the Buddha's doctrine. Briefly, this doctrine is that man suffers because of his craving to possess and keep forever things which are essentially impermanent. Chief among these things is his own person, for this is his means of isolating himself from the rest of life, his castle into which he can retreat and from which he can assert himself against external forces. He believes that this fortified and isolated position is his best means of obtaining happiness; it enables him to fight against change, to strive to keep pleasing things for himself, to shut out suffering and to shape circumstances as he wills. In short it is his means of resisting life. The Buddha taught that all things, including this castle, are essentially impermanent and that as soon as man tries to possess them they slip away; this frustration of the desire to possess is the immediate cause of suffering. But he went further than this, for he showed that the fundamental cause is the delusion that man *can* isolate himself from life. A false isolation is achieved by identifying himself with his castle, the person, but because this castle is impermanent it has no abiding reality, it is empty of any "self-nature" (*atta*) and is no more the Self than any other changing object. What, then, is the Self? The Buddha remained silent when asked this question, but he taught that man will find out only when he no longer identifies himself with his person, when he no longer resists the external world from within its fortification, in fact, when he makes an end of his hostility and his plundering expeditions against life. In contrast to this philosophy of isolation the Buddha proclaimed the unity of all living things and charged his followers to replace this hostility by divine compassion (*karuna*).

The Mahayana considers that a true self is found when the false

one is renounced. When man neither identifies himself with his person nor uses it as a means for resisting life, he finds that the Self is more than his own being; it includes the whole universe.

Alan W. Watts, 1915-. English author.  
*The Spirit of Zen.*

### The "Outward" and "Inner" Man

The Scriptures say of human beings that there is an outward man and, along with him, an inner man.

To the outward man belong those things that depend on the soul but are connected with the flesh and blended with it, and the co-operative functions of the several members such as the eye, the ear, the tongue, the hand, and so on. The Scriptures speaks of all this as the old man, the earthy man, the outward person, the enemy, the servant.

Within us all is the other person, the inner man, whom the Scriptures calls the new man, the heavenly man, the young person, a friend, the aristocrat.

Relative to the aristocracy of the inner, spiritual man and the commonalty of the outward, physical person, the heathen philosophers, Tully and Seneca, maintain that no rational soul is without God. The seed of God is in us. Given an intelligent farmer and a diligent fieldhand, it will thrive and grow up to God whose seed it is and, accordingly, its fruit will be God-nature. Pear seeds grow into pear trees; nut seeds into nut trees, and God-seed into God.

Meister Johannes Eckart, 1260-1327. German scholar, mystic.  
*Meister Eckhart*, Trans. R. Blakney.

### Ego Investigation

We should ask ourselves what type of egocentricity may be ours. In the main, the Ego conforms more or less to one single pattern, and it is ordinarily possible for a person through self-observation to recognize which role he is acting, even though it is true that appearances are often deceptive. It seems almost as if the Ego were a living being seeking to deceive us by wearing a mask so lifelike that it is almost impossible to distinguish it from the reality it covers.

The best way to conduct this Ego investigation is to ask oneself what goal we would like to attain, if we could choose.<sup>4</sup> It is important to imagine this choice as made quite alone or together with some completely understanding comrade, not in the presence of moralizing friends or relatives. We must be prepared to recognize a choice which may seem somewhat embarrassing to us because it would not be commended and might even be condemned. Frankly, perhaps even jokingly, we should imagine ourselves in the situation in which we should really like to be, laying aside all idealism. Otherwise, our moral or philosophical or religious convictions would be likely to keep us from being quite honest with ourselves. This choice is bound to reflect the mistakes in our Ego. We seek that understanding because we are misled and deceived by these mistakes.

We must have something akin to Paul's reaction.<sup>5</sup> We feel like saying, "It is I and yet not I. This choice seems to represent what I am, yet it is not. If I were freed from the influence of my egoistic thinking, I would choose differently. I would be no longer egocentric but objective. I would see clearly. My Self would be free from its shell, and my choices would be sound and wholesome. Until that freedom comes, I, like all others, am the victim of the human process by which the Ego is developed, and I am misled as they are." That is the inevitable fate of every human being. All others have had the same experience. If we could really know their egocentricity, we should find in them mistakes and errors which are on the same level as any of ours even though of quite a different type. There is no necessity of judging ourselves harshly if we find that we are seeking that which should not be sought. Our responsibility in character development is to face what we find unflinchingly and when we have become aware of mistakes to correct them as soon as we can.

Suppose now that, pursuing your inquiry in this spirit and for this purpose, you discover you feel you want to be secure, peaceful, unpretentious, left alone in calmness with sufficient supply of food.

<sup>4</sup> Sometimes it is useful to try to recall one's earliest recollections in order to find out what kind of fear or wish may have been developed. Our experience has shown that the choice of our early recollections is influenced by our Ego and therefore our idea about our earliest recollections may reflect our egocentricity and help us discover our type.

<sup>5</sup> Romans 7 : 15-17.

Are you acting objectively as a follower of Rousseau and a priest of pure nature? Or would it be more honest to admit that you are thinking of yourself in a rather well-formed Gaby Ego pattern?

If your goal, your highest value, is security with indulgence, and the protection of a good, reliable person: if you are looking all the time to see whether this godlike person—a priest or employer or husband or wife—may find you (without thinking too much of trying to find him or her yourself), are you then a loyal and modest servant of the good? Or wouldn't you acknowledge that you are reacting according to the passive and dependent Clinging-Vine pattern.

If you dream of laurels, fame, glory, and riches in order to be admired, or of splendid achievements in arts or sciences, probably you are playing the role of an egocentric Star. You may object that good achievements are objectively necessary for cultural progress and that your ideal is to serve the whole race and not just your Ego. Well, that may be. If so, you would not be offended if you invent something greatly beneficial to mankind and another person becomes famous because of it. Could you even imagine this without rebellion? And if you could, you must somewhat distrust your reaction and be ready to recognize some egocentric remnants in your We-feeling attitude. Even the martyr to injustice may be acting a Star role.

Finally, if power is what you want and you think you want it for the service of humanity, don't trust your thinking too much. It is better to test it carefully. Imagine, for example, that you do everything necessary to form and build up a new and needed organization, but someone else, who has done nothing, is made president and exercises many privileges, great authority, and extensive influence. Would you be satisfied? St. Francis built a monastery and then lived in it as a simple monk, one of the others being the abbot. He seems clearly not to have had a Nero type Ego. And you? The more you really want the power for the power's sake only—and that means for your own sake—the less you would feel you could tolerate such injustice! And the more you are playing the part of a Nero.

The next step is to consider the abyss. For all of us there is some-

thing that seems to be an abyss into which we must not fall, an experience or situation so dreadful that we can scarcely bear to imagine it for ourselves. This abyss is always closely connected with our Ego. It is the depth of life which is the very extreme opposite of the heights of experience which our Ego leads us to seek. Therefore, to know one's abyss is to know much about one's Ego type.

What would be the most unbearable, most horrible situation in which you could imagine yourself? What seems to you worse than death? Is it more the loss of esteem and recognition (*e.g.*, the preacher who is laughed at), the loss of power (*e.g.*, the officers whose commands are not obeyed), the loss of security and protection (*e.g.*, the spoiled rich woman who loses all her money) or the loss of seclusion and privacy (*e.g.*, the official who retired early but who is called back to service again)?

We should work out this part of our investigation as carefully as possible, preferring always to think of the concrete situation—the scene, the immediate experience—and not of the abstract term or name for our reactions and apparent qualities. Only at last, having collected many memories and made many “experiments by imagination,” can we come to see what intermixture of types is involved in our Ego.\*-\*\*\*

Fritz Kunkel, M.D., German psychotherapist, and Roy E. Dickerson, American author.  
*How Character Develops.*

#### DIFFICULTIES OF SELF-KNOWLEDGE

Many are the devices and marvelous the elaborations by which men everywhere seek to avoid condemnation before that inner tribunal known as conscience. To be at one with that which is supreme in our hierarchy of loyalties, that to which men generally give the name of God, is ever essential to mental health; to be isolated or estranged through the consciousness that there is that within which we cannot acknowledge without being condemned means mental disorder and spiritual death.

Anton T. Boisen, 1876-. American educator, theologian.  
*The Exploration of the Inner World.*

So long as one has not attained perfection, one can know one's self but imperfectly. The same self-love which causes our faults is very subtle in hiding them both from ourselves and from others. Self-love cannot endure to see itself; it would die of shame and vexation! If by chance it gets a glimpse, it at once places itself in some artificial light, so as to soften the full hideousness and find some comfort. And so there will always be some remains of self-delusion clinging to us while we still cling to self and its imperfections. Before we can see ourselves truly, self-love must be rooted up, and the love of God alone move us; and then the same light which showed us our faults would cure them. Till then we only know ourselves by halves, because we are only half God's, and hold a great deal more to ourselves than we imagine or choose to see. When the truth has taken full possession of us, we shall see clearly, and then we shall behold ourselves without partiality or flattery, as we see our neighbors. Meanwhile God spares our weakness, by only showing us our own deformity by degrees, and as He gives strength to bear the sight. He only shows us to ourselves, so to say, by bits; here one and there another, as He undertakes our correction.

Francois Fénelon, 1651-1715. French Archbishop of Cambray.  
*Spiritual Letters of Archbishop Fénelon*, Trans. H. L. Lear.

### Difficulties and the Role of Pressure

The point at which the egocentric person is most readily touched is his egocentric welfare; therefore, the original impulse toward self-education often must be formulated as an appeal to our egocentricity, wherein a strange paradox becomes apparent. We must face the alternative either of suffering the consequences of our egocentricity even to the extent of experiencing a major crisis or of taking this next step in the direction of religious and social progress. The paradox is that even from the egocentric viewpoint it seems to be advisable to decrease our egocentricity for the sake of decreasing the suffering from it.

This paradox is the very kernel of our theory of the crisis. Even egoism itself recommends that we become less egoistic. Here we

meet the first principle in the art of self-education as the We-Psychology is to display it. Its name is: Pressure.

The task of character development is the destruction of our own egocentric shell in order to set free and develop the We-feeling productivity which was shut up within the shell. That would be well-nigh an impossible task without the help of some power coming from without. At first the shell is realized in the form of the Ego. When I say I, I usually mean my Ego. The imprisoned Self is felt—if at all—as an It, a kind of unknown, almost foreign force of which one is ordinarily afraid. Thus the task is that I, saying I, should not identify myself—as formerly—with the Ego, but now with the Self. My viewpoint should shift from the Egocentre, the Seeming-Self, to the true centre, the real Self.<sup>6</sup>

If this were possible by mere will-power the shell and the egocentricity would not be what they are—the old fortifications against anguish and fear. Suppose that I have learned that I have to be the “good,” that is, the obedient, child. In playing my egocentric role, I am impelled to look for approval and to avoid everything which may displease my companions, but when I lay it aside I display the courage and We-feeling qualities of my Self by opposing injustice and objecting to my companions when they are wrong.

Insofar as I act my egocentric role, I feel afraid that my reactions might, in a certain case, be the kind inspired by We-feeling and courage. I fear such reactions because they seem to be dangerous to what seems to be my best interests seen from the viewpoint of the Ego or the Seeming-Self. Thus, the greedy Star fears his kindly impulses because they tend to separate him from his money, which seems so essential to his stardom, and the Nero fears his We-feeling impulses because they are seemingly tendencies to that weakness which would make others less fearful of him and therefore less submissive. Therefore we unconsciously oppose the destruction of these walls—these egocentric fortifications—even though we are consciously trying to demolish them and to laugh at them as being obsolete, useless, and childish.

<sup>6</sup> In the later stages of development, when “I” has grown to mean the Self, the Ego is—not always but sometimes—realized as the It, *i.e.*, the bad old habit, the moral weakness we repudiate, or even something like “the fiend” or temptation.

We cannot pull ourselves out of the swamp by our own hair as the famous knight in the fairy tale did. Therefore, we cannot succeed here unless an outer force—the pressure—comes to our assistance. Mere idealism, or moral endeavour, or, in most cases, even insight would not be sufficient. . . .

Pressure, it must be said, is inevitable. Egocentric living involves acting on mistaken ideas, pursuing false goals, being swayed by unsound emotions, and all this leads certainly to difficulty and distress. Life cannot be lived on untrue premises or filled with deluded behaviour without creating pressure sooner or later even though it be felt only in the haunting fears or vicious nightmares of one's dreams.

It follows, then, that one ought not to rebel against pressure. Like bodily pain, this psychic discomfort is unpleasant and should be relieved as soon as possible by dealing wisely with its cause. But like pain, it is a beneficent thing, because it warns of danger. It points out an unwholesome condition which might otherwise go unnoticed far longer than it should. One of the first lessons in self-education is that one should welcome the discomfort of pressure because of the opportunities for growth which it is capable of revealing. One ought not to be sorry for himself but rather glad that some source of difficulty in one's life may be disclosed by the pressure.

In discussing pressure we see that it is difficult to know when real pressure, as opposed to mere imaginative suffering, is at work and to what sources it can be traced. It is hard to distinguish between the two so that we know when we have to deal with nothing more than neurotic, imaginative suffering.

Here a certain amount of objective research is a necessary part of the self-education that develops character. Unconscious connections must be discovered and cleared up; faults, weak spots, fears, or aims of which we were not hitherto aware must be explored. We must look at them with the curiosity of the scientist, not with shame or moral devaluation or horror, as would be the case with the moralist.

The moralistic standpoint strengthens the egocentric resistance against self-knowledge, as we never see what our mistakes are, if



we wish to be "stainless." The most serious errors in the Ego will not be realized as such because they are an essential part of this Seeming-Self. The only way to escape self-deception and to unmask ourselves successfully is to suspend all moral and ethical judgment until the investigation has been ended. We must add at once a psychological observation very important in our day. Many persons live in what we call "reversed valuation." The mistakes of their Ego are such that they would not have inferiority feelings even if recklessness or sensuality or wantonness were discovered in the depth of their unconscious life. On the contrary, they would be pleased. In these cases the egocentric goal (+100) is something such as being the Don Juan who conquers the greatest number of girls or the "good fellow" who drinks the most wine or the shrewd trader who "gets ahead of" every person with whom he deals. Those who pursue such goals would feel devalued if this research would prove them more "moral" than they want to be.

From the viewpoint of their Ego, they cannot value loyalty, kindness, righteousness, love, and religion. They are "forbidden" and repressed or suppressed and seem intolerable when viewed from the viewpoint of the Seeming-Self. Therefore, even in these cases it is necessary, if a person would discover his mistakes, for him to suspend at first all valuation of a situation as moral or immoral.

This unconscious defence of our Ego—the Seeming-Self may be very helpful in our efforts to investigate our own lives. It may supply us with an important clue as to our own weaknesses. The more we feel offended by what we interpret as a reproach, the more it is probable that the criticism hits the nail on the head, even if we do not at the time find anything in our conscious life to support the reproach.

Strong negative emotions like anger, irritation, and indignation usually but not always indicate that our weak spot has been touched consciously or unconsciously. In order to discover our true inner situation, it is necessary to overcome our own egocentric inner resistance which often takes the form of negative moods. We should, therefore, learn to understand and handle them.\*

Fritz Kunkel, M.D., German psychotherapist, and Roy E. Dickerson, American author.  
*How Character Develops.*

Meeting One's Own "Shadow"

The man who looks into the mirror of the waters does, indeed, see his own face first of all. Whoever goes to himself risks a confrontation with himself. The mirror does not flatter, it faithfully shows whatever looks into it; namely, the face we never show to the world because we cover it with the persona, the mask of the actor. But the mirror lies behind the mask and shows the true face.

This confrontation is the first test of courage on the inner way, a test sufficient to frighten off most people, for the meeting with ourselves belongs to the more unpleasant things that may be avoided as long as we possess living symbol-figures in which all that is inner and unknown is projected.

The meeting with oneself is the meeting with one's own shadow. To mix a metaphor, the shadow is a tight pass, a narrow door, whose painful constriction is spared to no one who climbs down into the deep wellspring. But one must learn to know oneself in order to know who one is. For what comes after the door is, surprisingly enough, a boundless expanse full of unprecedented uncertainty, with apparently no inside and no outside, no above and no below, no here and no there, no mine and no thine, no good and no bad. It is the world of water, where everything living floats in suspension; where the kingdom of the sympathetic system, of the soul of everything living, begins; where I am inseparably this and that, and this and that are I; where I experience the other person in myself, and the other, as myself, experiences me.

No, the unconscious is anything but a capsulated, personal system; it is the wide world, and objectivity as open as the world. I am the object, even the subject of the object, in a complete reversal of my ordinary consciousness, where I am always a subject that has an object. There I find myself in the closest entanglement with the world, so much a part of it that I forget all too easily who I really am. "Lost in oneself" is a good phrase to describe this state. But this self is the world, if only a consciousness could see it. This is why we must know who we are.\*

### Facing the Darkness

There has come to me an insight into the meaning of Darkness. The reason one must face his darkness, and enter into that darkness is not that he may return purified to face God. One must go into the darkness because that is where God is. The darkness is not sin, not evil. Those are by-ways, side paths by which one can escape. The darkness is pure terror, and the last terror of all is to know as one turns downward that there is no God. Then the darkness is upon you, and there is God Himself, for God is the greatest destroyer of gods.

It seems as though we must each make himself a god of his own, one not too big to carry. For some, the good will be God, or Nature, or the Creative Idea, or the Indulgent Father. One must stay with Him and in His universe, or go down into the darkness alone. It is as though one had to take a hammer and smash his god to bits, only to find that there on the instant stood God, God Himself, filling the universe and personally near.

The meaning of the Crucifixion must be like this. One can imagine the disciples talking among themselves: "How could God have let him be killed? He was so good, so kind. He was surely doing God's work if ever a man did. What kind of a God is it that lets His own followers, His best follower die so?" Until at last, they had to deny their God, the God who wouldn't waste a good man's life—and in that instant they found the God who sent them all over the world, the God about whom no more can be said than that He Is.

God is. That is so real, that to talk of His love, or of serving Him is saying less, not more. He is, and He is with us, and there is no need of promises.

Alfred Romer, 1907—. American professor of physics.

I have fallen into the hands of God: the terrible wheel of providence is grinding me out of myself. I bleed well-nigh unto death. Let me alone, for it is better thus. Every atom of vanity and evil will be crushed in me. I become truer, diviner, every day. Grieve not

even if I go down under the process. But verily I will not die. I will live, and declare the glory of God.

Protap Chundar Mozoomder, 1827-1905. Brahmin leader.  
*Heart Beats.*

Progress in self-knowledge leads inevitably to progress in humility and to self acceptance—an acceptance which admits not only the “false” self which needs “losing” but which includes the “real” self, which is to be “preserved.” (Editors)

Meekness is imperfect when it is caused of any other thing mingled with God although He be the chief; and it is perfect when it is caused of God by Himself. And first it is to wit, what meekness is in itself.

Meekness in itself is nought else, but a true knowing and feeling of a man’s self as he is. For surely whoso might verily see and feel himself as he is, he should verily be meek. Two things there be, the which be cause of this meekness; the which be these. One is the filth, the wretchedness, and the frailty of man, into the which he is fallen by sin; and the which always him behoveth to feel in some part the whiles he liveth in this life, be he never so holy. Another is the over-abundant love and the worthiness of God in Himself; in beholding of the which all nature quaketh, all clerks be fools, and all saints and angels be blind. Insomuch, that were it not that through the wisdom of His Godhead He measured their beholding after their ableness in nature and in grace, I defail to say what should befall them.

And therefore swink and sweat in all that thou canst and mayest, for to get thee a true knowing and a feeling of thyself as thou art; and then I trow that soon after that thou shalt have a true knowing and a feeling of God as He is. Not as He is in Himself, for that may no man do but Himself; nor yet as thou shalt do in bliss both body and soul together. But as it is possible, and as He vouchsafeth to be known and felt of a meek soul living in this deadly body.

And think not because I set two causes of meekness, one perfect and another imperfect, that I will therefore that thou leavest the travail about imperfect meekness, and set thee wholly to get the

perfect. Nay, surely; I trow thou shouldest never bring it so about. I think to tell thee how that a privy love pressed in cleanness of spirit upon this dark cloud of unknowing betwixt thee and thy God, truly and perfectly containeth in it the perfect virtue of meekness without any special or clear beholding of any thing under God. And because I would that thou knewest which were perfect meekness, and settest it as a token before the love of thine heart, and didst it for thee and for me. And because I would by this knowing make thee more meek.

For oftentimes it befalleth that lacking of knowing is cause of much pride as me thinketh. For peradventure and thou knewest not which were perfect meekness, thou shouldest ween when thou hadst a little knowing and a feeling of this that I call imperfect meekness, that thou hadst almost gotten perfect meekness: and so shouldest thou deceive thyself, and ween that thou wert full meek when thou wert all belapped in foul stinking pride. And therefore try for to travail about perfect meekness; for the condition of it is such, that whoso hath it, and the whiles he hath it, he shall not sin, nor yet much after.\*

An unknown English mystic of the fourteenth century.  
*The Cloud of Unknowing.*

## SELF-ACCEPTANCE

The biological will is to biological self-perpetuation; the meta-biological will is to the perpetuation of significant variations. But these wills are not, save in rare conditions of ultimate crisis, discrepant. Self-perpetuation is the condition of the perpetuation of significant variations.

The position is this. The first necessity is metabiological unity; only when emotion and intellect have achieved their own synthesis is the true metabiological will operative. Instead of a will to this or that posited and ideal end, there is a will to pure self-emergence. We learn to wait upon the unknown which we are; we are dedicated to whatever of creative newness may emerge through us. In that condition, is given the possibility of complete self-acceptance; and that is the whole duty of men.

Than complete self-acceptance man can go no further. By taking upon himself the final responsibility, he has reached the point where he has none. What values he is destined to perpetuate, those will be perpetuated in and through him; what values he is destined to let die, those will die in and through him. He can no more; nor is it conceivable that he should desire more. Whether he has been a significant variation, the organic process will ultimately and irrevocably decide.

To those who ask: "What shall I do?" we have finally one simple answer: "Accept yourself." To those who ask: "But when I have accepted myself, what then?" we answer: "By your question you show that you have read without comprehension." To those who demur: "But you say nothing of man's duties—the world problems—peace or war—social reform—morality," we reply: "No, we say nothing of these things." His attitude to these things each man must let his accepted self determine. We have our own attitude to these things, but it is not required to be formulated or defended here. What values a man will perpetuate, what values he can perpetuate, is for himself to decide. We claim no more than perhaps to help him to a condition where these questions decide themselves with a different and higher authority than any imposed decisions of the unintegrated self could ever possess.

John Middleton Murry, 1889-. English author, critic.  
*God.*

## I CHARGE YOU

When men shall face their destiny like stones .  
    with powerful indifference;  
When men shall have the strength to say "Yes"  
    to the deepest hell  
And walk unmoved across depths most desperate  
    and most absolute;  
  
When they shall assume the burdens of darkness  
    and pass joyfully through all stench  
Because in them abides the deathless fragrance  
    of their own soul;

When they shall forget their own little self,  
 their little purity and little comfort  
 And grow tragically into the great serenity,  
 quintessence of all storms;

When they shall wipe out the horrors of past days,  
 by facing evil as the elder brother of good,  
 Accepting the dead with the strength of living  
 and the understanding which is the core of love;

When they shall look beyond to Him  
 who tore from gods the fire of Self  
 And blessed us all with its curse,  
 bearing in their hearts His cross and His glory;

Then shall there be peace and beauty in the lands of men.

Dane Rudhyar, 1895-. American poet, artist, philosopher.  
*White Thunder.*

Recently I received a letter from a former patient which pictures the necessary transformation in simple but expressive words. She writes: "Out of evil, much good has come to me. By keeping quiet, repressing nothing, remaining attentive, and hand in hand with that, by accepting reality—taking things as they are, and not as I wanted them to be—by doing all this, rare knowledge has come to me, and rare powers as well, such as I could never have imagined before. I always thought that, when we accept things, they overpower us in one way or another. Now this is not true at all, and it is only by accepting them that one can define an attitude toward them.<sup>7</sup> So now I intend playing the game of life, being receptive to whatever comes to me, good and bad, sun and shadow that are forever shifting, and, in this way, also accepting my own nature with its positive and negative sides. Thus everything becomes more alive to me. What a fool I was! How I tried to force everything to go according to my idea!"

Only on the basis of such an attitude, which renounces none of

<sup>7</sup> And thus become freer of the compulsive power ("participation mystique") that arises from over-identification with them. (Ed.)

the values won in the course of Christian development, but which, on the contrary, tries with Christian charity and forbearance to accept the humblest things in oneself, will a higher level of consciousness and culture be possible. This attitude is religious in the truest sense, and therefore therapeutic, for all religions are therapies for the sorrows and disorders of the soul. The development of Western intellect and will has lent us the almost devilish capacity for imitating such an attitude, apparently with success too, despite the protests of the unconscious. But it is only a matter of time when the counter position always forces recognition of itself with an even harsher contrast. A more and more unsafe situation comes about by reason of this crass imitation, and, at any time, can be overthrown by the unconscious. A safe foundation is only found when the instinctive premises of the unconscious win the same recognition as the viewpoints of the conscious. No one will deceive himself as to the fact that this necessary recognition of the unconscious stands in violent opposition to the Western Christian, and especially to the Protestant, cult of consciousness. Despite the fact that the new is always hostile to the old, a deep desire to understand cannot fail to discover that, without the more serious application of our acquired Christian values, the new can never gain ground.

Carl G. Jung, M.D., 1875-. Swiss psychologist.  
*Secret of the Golden Flower*, Trans. C. F. Baynes.

#### EMERGENCE OF THE REAL SELF

True self-revelation has always as its counter-part a growth in knowledge of God. For it is only in the light of God that we see ourselves for what we are. Hence self-abnegation in its full import is not a merely negative thing. According as the soul ceases to be "*self regarding*" in its activities, it becomes "*God-regarding*." As the soul is being emptied of what is material, transient and perishable, it is being filled with what is spiritual, enduring and incorruptible.

Edward Leen, 1885-. Irish Catholic Cleric, educator.  
*Progress Through Mental Prayer*.

I am aware of something in myself whose shine is my reason. I see clearly that something is there, but what it is I cannot under-



stand. But it seems to me that, if I could grasp it, I should know all truth.

Anonymous.

Though God is everywhere present, yet He is only present to thee in the deepest and most central part of thy soul. The natural senses cannot possess God or unite thee to him; nay, thy inward faculties of understanding, will and memory can only reach after God, but cannot be the place of his habitation in thee. But there is a root or depth of thee from whence all these faculties come forth, as lines from a centre, or as branches from the body of the tree. This depth is called the centre, the fund or bottom of the soul. This depth is the unity, the eternity—I had almost said the infinity—of thy soul; for it is so infinite that nothing can satisfy it or give it rest but the infinity of God.

William Law, 1686–1761. English clergyman, mystic.

Do you know that you are God's temple and that God's Spirit makes its home in you? If anyone destroys the temple of God, God will destroy him. For the temple of God is sacred, and that is what you are.

Saint Paul, first century Christian Apostle.

*The First Epistle to the Corinthians*, Trans. E. J. Goodspeed.

## THE WAY IMPLIES DEVOTION TO THE GOOD <sup>8</sup>

Being true to oneself is the law of God, trying to be true to oneself is the law of man.

There is only one way for a man to be true to himself. If he does not know what is good, a man cannot be true to himself. . . . He who learns to be his true self is one who finds out what is good and holds fast to it.

Tsesze, Chinese philosopher, grandson of Confucius.

*The Golden Mean of Tsesze*, Trans. by Ku Hungming and Lin Yutang.

<sup>8</sup> See Appendix on *The Object of Devotion*.

Cleanse your own heart, cast out from your mind pain, fear, envy, ill-will, avarice, cowardice, passion uncontrolled. These things you cannot cast out unless you look to God alone; on him alone set your thoughts, and consecrate yourself to his commands. If you wish for anything else, with groaning and sorrow you will follow what is stronger than you, ever seeking peace outside you, and never able to be at peace; for you seek it where it is not, and refuse to seek it where it is.

Epictetus, 60 A.D. Greek philosopher.  
*Discourses and Manual of Epictetus*, Trans. R. E. Matheson.

I have often said that a person who wishes to begin a good life should be like a man who draws a circle. Let him get the center in the right place and keep it so and the circumference will be good. In other words, let a man first learn to fix his heart on God and then his good deeds will have virtue; but if a man's heart is unsteady, even the great things he does will be of small advantage.

Meister Johannes Eckhart, 1260-1327. German scholar, mystic.  
*Meister Eckhart*, Trans. R. Blakney.

Let us settle ourselves, and work and wedge our feet downward through the mud and slush of opinion, and prejudice, and tradition, and delusion and appearance, that alluvion which covers the globe, through Paris and London, through New York and Boston and Concord, through church and state, through poetry and philosophy and religion till we come to a hard bottom and rocks in place, which we can call reality, and say, This is, and no mistake; and then begin, having a *point d'appui*, below freshet and frost and fire, a place where you might found a wall or a state, or set a lamppost safely, or perhaps a gauge, not a Nilometer, but a Realometer, that future ages might know how deep a freshet of shams and appearances had gathered from time to time.

Henry David Thoreau, 1817-1862. American philosopher.  
*Walden*.

## Devotion and the Role of Ideals

We must have some passionate devotion to give us the necessary drive of life. If that passionate devotion is given to established and

accepted ideals, we cannot seek and find the new possibilities that arise with changing conditions. Where, then, shall we find an object of passionate devotion? Such an object is that order of value which enters into our present state of existence, but which also includes the highest possibilities of value however unknown and undefined by us as yet. Without such a devotion, we maintain, maturity is not attained, the art of living is not mastered, and the way is blocked that leads to the good life in our present age of science, machinery, and industry when all things are changing so rapidly.

There are two ways in which we can deal with the socially accepted ideals, these achieved structures of value and known possibilities. We can live with them as though they were final, as though they were the supreme good, as though there were nothing on beyond them to seek and explore, or we can use them not as final goods, not as our home and resting place, but as merely torches and trails, leading on. In other words, there are two ways of life according to what we make supreme. We may give our highest allegiance to the socially accepted ideals, the known possibilities, the goods achieved, while the unknown possibilities are for us more nebosity and dreamland. Or, on the other hand, we may give our supreme loyalty to this realm of meanings yet to be achieved, these possible structures of value not yet defined and mastered, while the known possibilities and socially accepted ideals are for us mere tools and instruments to be used in this higher devotion. This is the contrast between religion forever on the defensive and in peril and religion invincible.\*

Henry Nelson Wieman.  
*Issues of Life.*

### The Invincibility of Devotion to the Good

Why does dedication to the supreme and unknown good engender a striving so invincible? For three reasons. First, because the object of devotion which then inspires the striving is invaluable, being the best there is in all reality actual and possible, and hence worth everything that may be endured or given. Second, because it is not irrevocably identified with any known object of undertaking,

these all being more or less tentative and exploratory; hence failure or disaster to any of these does not blot out from life the star of value which leads on. Third, under the dominance of such a devotion all experience becomes a seeking of this highest value, an adoration of it and a reaching after it. Hence all experience becomes a way of experiencing the best there is in all reality. Even failure of any specific enterprise, even pain and all evil, since these along with pleasure and successful fulfillments make up the medium of experience in which we seek for and reach after the supreme good, are ways of experiencing this object of our supreme devotion.

Henry Nelson Wieman, 1884-. American philosopher, theologian, educator.  
*Issues of Life.*

Hold fast to God and he will add every good thing. Seek God and you shall find him and all good with him. To the man who cleaves to God, God cleaves and adds virtue. Thus, what you have sought before, now seeks you; what once you pursued, now pursues you; what once you fled, now flees you. Everything comes to him who truly comes to God, bringing all divinity with it, while all that is strange and alien flies away.

Johannes Eckhart, 1260-1327. German scholar, mystic.  
*Meister Eckhart*, Trans. R. Blakney.

We have to believe that in the final good designed by Him not a cell of Being will be found missing or unfulfilled. Nor is this a selfish view to take of the travail of the world in which we find ourselves as if we were to regard the whole purpose of it as converging on our own private and exclusive good. For my final good does not in any way obstruct or interfere with the good of any other individual; and my good is in the end no other than the good of God Himself. I am not lost in God in the sense that my individuality ceases to be my own. It is just that in its perfection my happiness is no other than the happiness of God, though all the more truly my own. I do not cease to be myself because I have surrendered myself wholly to him; there will be no surrender, no possession, no completion, if there be no I.

R. H. J. Stuart, S.J., 1874-. English priest.  
*The Inward Vision.*

Partial allegiance to a perfect god is almost the last thing in futility and dreariness. Nothing but thoroughness can save us here. Half carrying, half dragging the yoke of fellowship will chafe and gall. Casual, shallow, trivial, reserved obedience will not answer. You can go the whole length with him and live, live royally, live exultingly and victoriously, but if you only partially enthrone him, or if you crown him with mental reservations, you will not get far.

William Fraser McDowell, 1858-1937. American Methodist Bishop.  
*This Mind.*

### Doing the Will of God

"It is not everyone who says to me 'Lord! Lord!' who will get into the Kingdom of Heaven, but only those who do the will of my Father."

Jesus of Nazareth.  
*New Testament*, (Matt. 7), Trans. E. J. Goodspeed.

The whole gist of the matter lies in the will, and this is what our Dear Lord meant by saying, "The Kingdom of God is within you." It is not a question of how much we know, how clever we are, nor even how good; it all depends upon the heart's love. External actions are the results of love, the fruit it bears; but the source, the root, is in the deep of the heart.

François Fénelon, 1651-1715.

And he is truly very learned, that doeth the will of God, and forsaketh his own will.

Thomas a Kempis, 1380-1471. German mystic.  
*Imitation of Christ.*

Science seems to me to teach in the highest and strongest manner the great truth which is embodied in the Christian conception of entire surrender to the will of God. Sit down before fact as a little child, be prepared to give up every preconceived notion, follow humbly wherever and to whatever abysses nature leads, or you shall learn nothing. I have only begun to learn content and peace of mind since I have resolved at all risks to do this.

Thomas Huxley, 1825-1895. English biologist.  
*Life and Letters of Thomas Huxley.*

Look now forwards and let the backwards be. And see what thou lackest and not what thou hast; for that is the readiest getting and keeping of meekness. All thy life now must all ways stand in desire, if thou shalt advance in degree of perfection. This desire must all ways be wrought in thy will, by the hand of Almighty God and thy consent. But one thing I tell thee: he is a jealous lover and suffereth no fellowship, and he liketh not to work in thy will unless he be only with thee by himself. He asketh no help but only thyself. He wills thou do but look upon him and let him alone. And keep thou the windows and the door from flies and enemies assailing. And if thou be willing to do this, thou needest but meekly to set upon him with prayer, and soon will he help thee. Set on then: let me see how thou bearest thee. He is full ready, and doth but abide thee.

Unknown English mystic, fourteenth century.  
*The Cloud of Unknowing*, Edited by Dom Justin McCann.

You are not wrong in distinguishing between willingness and courage. Courage is a sort of strength and vigor of mind by which we overcome everything; but souls which God intends to keep lowly, and conscious of their own weakness, do all that is allotted to them without any sense of their own capability to do it. They feel as if everything were too much for them, yet they triumph over all difficulties by a *je ne sais quoi*, which springs up altogether independently of themselves when needed, and for which they never dream of taking credit to themselves. They do not lay themselves out to suffer well, but somehow we find that each cross as it comes has been bravely borne, because they have had no will save God's. There is nothing striking, nothing powerful, nothing very obvious even to others, still less to themselves. If you say to such a person that he has endured bravely, he will not understand you. He does not know how it has all been; he does not dissect his feelings. If he did there would be no more simplicity. This is what you mean by *Willingness*, which makes less show but is really much more solid than what is generally called courage.

Willingness has no colour of its own, only at every call, it is ready

to will what God wills. Happy they who have ever so small a seed of so great a blessing!

François Fénelon, 1651-1715. French Archbishop of Cambray.  
*Spiritual Letters of Archbishop Fénelon*, Trans. H. L. Lear.

A man who but rarely, and then only cursorily, concerns himself with his relationship to God, hardly thinks or dreams that he has so closely to do with God, or that God is so close to him, that there exists a reciprocal relationship between him and God: the stronger a man is, the weaker God is, the weaker a man is, the stronger God is in him. Every one who assumes that a God exists naturally thinks of Him as the strongest, as He eternally is, being the Almighty who creates out of nothing, and for whom all the creation is as nothing; but such a man hardly thinks of the possibility of a reciprocal relationship. But the loving God who in incomprehensible love made thee to be something for Him, lovingly requires something of thee.

Here we have the reciprocal relationship. If a man would selfishly keep for himself this something which love made him to be, and would selfishly be something, then, in a worldly sense, he is strong—but God is weak. And it is almost as if the poor loving God were duped: with incomprehensible love God has gone ahead and made man something—and thereupon man dupes Him and holds on to this as if it were his own. The worldly man confirms himself in the notion that he is strong, he is perhaps confirmed in it by other people's worldly judgment to the same effect, perhaps by his presumed might he transforms the face of the world—but God is weak. On the other hand, if man himself relinquishes this something, the independence, the freedom to act for himself, which love bestowed upon him; if this perfection of his which consists in existing for God he does not abuse by taking it in vain; if God perhaps helps him in this respect by bitter sufferings; he is weak—but God is strong. He, the weak man, has relinquished entirely this something which love made him to be, he has whole-heartedly consented to it that God took from him everything there was to be taken. God only waits for him to give lovingly and humbly his glad consent, and therewith to relinquish it completely, then he is entirely weak—and

then God is strongest. For God there is but one obstacle, man's selfishness, which steps in between God and man like the shadow of the earth when it produces the eclipse of the moon. If there is this selfishness, then man is strong, but his strength is God's weakness; if the selfishness is absent, then man is weak, and God strong; the weaker man becomes, the stronger God becomes.

However, if this is so, then in another sense, in the true sense, the relation is inverted; and with this we come to the joyfulness.

For he who is strong without God, precisely he it is who is weak. The strength by which a man stands alone may be strength in comparison with that of a child. But the strength by which a man stands alone without God is weakness. God is in such a degree the strong one that He is all strength, is strength itself. So to be without God is to be without strength. So to be strong without God is to be strong . . . without strength; it is like being loving without loving God, and so to be loving without love, for God is love.

But in him who became entirely weak God became strong. And the fact that God is stronger and stronger in him signifies that he is stronger and stronger.—If thou couldst become entirely weak in perfect obedience, so that loving God thou didst understand that thou art able to do nothing at all, then would all the mighty ones of the earth, if they were to unite against thee, be unable to hurt a hair of thy head—what prodigious strength! But in fact this is not true, and let us not say anything untrue. Indeed they certainly would be able to do this, they would be able even to put thee to death, and the great conjunction of all the mighty ones of the earth is by no means requisite to this end, a far, far inferior power can easily enough do it. But yet if thou wert entirely weak in perfect obedience, then all the mighty ones of the earth in conjunction are not able to hurt a hair of thy head otherwise than as God wills. And when it is hurt thus, when thou art reviled thus, when thou art put to death thus—if thou wert entirely weak in perfect obedience—thou wouldst lovingly understand that it does thee no harm, not the very least, that it is for thy true welfare—what prodigious strength! \*



## Loving God

Then an expert in the Law got up to test him and said,  
 "Master, what must I do to make sure of eternal life?"

Jesus said to him,

"What does the Law say? How does it read?"

He answered,

"'You must love the Lord your God with your whole heart, your whole soul, your whole strength, and your whole mind,' and 'your neighbor as you do yourself.'"

Jesus said to him,

"You are right. Do that, and you will live."

From the Gospel According to Luke, first century.  
*New Testament*, Trans. E. J. Goodspeed.

To love God with all our hearts and all our souls and all our minds means that every cleavage in human existence is overcome.

Reinhold Niebuhr, 1892-. American theologian, educator, author.  
*Interpretation of Christian Ethics*.

Some people want to see God with their eyes as they see a cow and to love him as they love their cow—they love their cow for the milk and cheese and profit it makes them. This is how it is with people who love God for the sake of outward wealth or inward comfort. They do not rightly love God when they love him for their own advantage. Indeed, I tell you the truth, any object you have on your mind, however good, will be a barrier between you and the inmost truth.

Meister Johannes Eckhart, 1260-1327. German scholar, mystic.  
*Meister Eckhart*, Trans. R. Blakney.

You will ask me questions how a man can give himself to that which he has no feeling of, especially when it relates to an Object which he does not see, nor never had acquaintance with? Sir, every day of your life you love things you do not see. Do you see for instance the wisdom of your friend? Do you see his sincerity, his disinterestedness, his virtue? You cannot see those objects with the eyes of the body, yet you prize and value them, and love them in that degree that you prefer them in your friend to riches, and

outward beauty, and to everything that strikes the eye. Love then the wisdom and supreme goodness of God, as you love the wisdom and imperfect goodness of your friend. And if you cannot presently have a sensible feeling of love, you at least may have a love of preference in your will and desire, which is the essential point.

But this very love is not in your power, it does not depend on you to give it. You must desire it, pray for it, wait for it, and labour to merit it; and feel the unhappiness of being deprived of it.

When you come to be sensibly touched, you will find an easy solution for every scruple. The scales will fall from your eyes; and by the penetrating eyes of love you will discern that which your other eyes will never see.

François Fénelon, 1651-1715. French Archbishop of Cambray.  
*Spiritual Letters of Archbishop Fénelon*, Trans. H. L. Lear.

Because we are born of the flesh, it must needs be that our desire, or love, begins from the flesh; and if it is directed by right order, advancing by its several degrees under guidance of grace, it will at last be consummated by spirit: for "that was not first which is spiritual, but that which is natural; afterwards that which is spiritual." And first we must bear "the image of the earthly," afterwards "the image of the heavenly."

First, then, man loves himself for his own sake; he is flesh, forsooth, and can have no taste for aught beyond himself. And when he sees that he cannot subsist of himself, he begins by faith to seek God as necessary to him, and to love him. Thus he loves God in the second degree, but for his own sake, not for Himself. But when by occasion of his own necessity, he has begun to worship and approach him, by meditation, reading, prayer, obedience; by a certain familiarity of this kind, little by little and gradually, God becomes known and consequently grows sweet; and thus, having tasted how sweet is the Lord, he passes on to the third degree, so that he loves God, not now for his own sake, but for Himself.

Assuredly the abiding is long in this degree; and I know not if the fourth is perfectly attained by any man in this life, so that, that is, a man love himself only for the sake of God. Let those, if any, who have experienced, tell us; to me, I confess it seems impossible.

But it will be beyond question when the good and faithful servant is brought into the joy of his Lord, and inebriated with the plenty of the house of God. For in a certain wondrous fashion oblivious of himself, and as it were utterly abandoning himself, he will wholly pass on into God; and henceforth, joined to the Lord, will be one in spirit with him.\*

Saint Bernard, 1091-1153. French Abbott of Clairvaux.  
*On the Love of God*, Trans. E. G. Gardner.

It is when a man begins to know the ambition of his life not simply as the choice of his own will but as the wise assignment of God's love; and to know his relations to his brethren not simply as the result of his own impulsive affections but as the seeking of his soul for these souls because they all belong to the great Father-soul; it is then that life for that man begins to lift itself all over and to grow towards completion upward through all its length and breadth.\*

Phillips Brooks, 1835-1893. American clergyman.  
*Sermons of Phillips Brooks*.

I have but one word to say to you concerning love for your neighbor, namely, that nothing save humility can mould you to it; nothing but the consciousness of your own weakness can make you indulgent and pitiful to that of others. You will answer, "I quite understand that humility should produce forbearance towards others, but how am I first to acquire humility?" Two things combined will bring that about; you must never separate them. The first is contemplation of the deep gulf whence God's All-powerful Hand has drawn you out, and over which He ever holds you, so to say, suspended. The second is the Presence of that All-penetrating God. It is only in beholding and loving God that we can learn forgetfulness of self, measure duly the nothingness of that which has dazzled us, and accustom ourselves thankfully to "decrease" beneath that Great Majesty Which absorbs all things. Love God, and you will be humble; love God, and you will throw off the love of self; love God, and you will love all that He gives you to love for love of Him.

François Fénelon, 1651-1715. French Archbishop of Cambray.  
*Spiritual Letters of Archbishop Fénelon*, Trans. H. L. Lear.

FOLLOWING THE INNER LIGHT

If one listens to the faintest but constant suggestions of his genius, which are certainly true, he sees not to what extremes, or even insanity, it may lead him; and yet that way, as he grows more resolute and faithful, his road lies. The faintest assured objection which one healthy man feels will at length prevail over the arguments and customs of mankind. No man ever followed his genius till it misled him. Though the result were bodily weakness, yet perhaps no one can say that the consequences were to be regretted, for these were a life in conformity to higher principles. If the day and the night are such that you greet them with joy, and life emits a fragrance like flowers and sweet-scented herbs, is more elastic, more starry, more immortal—that is your success. All nature is your congratulation, and you have cause momentarily to bless yourself. The greatest gains and values are farthest from being appreciated. We easily come to doubt if they exist. We soon forget them. They are the highest reality. Perhaps the facts most astounding and most real are never communicated by man to man. The true harvest of my daily life is somewhat as intangible and indescribable as the tints of morning or evening.

Henry David Thoreau, 1817–1862. American philosopher.  
*Walden.*

To that in everyone of your consciences do I appeal to the measure God hath given, the light; loving it and taking heed to it, and waiting in it for power from God, it will guide you to the Father of light in whom ye will have all unity.\*

George Fox, 1624–1691. English, founder of the Society of Friends (Quakers).  
*Letters.*

Question. What is it to believe in the light?

Answer. To receive its testimony either concerning good or evil, and so either to turn towards or from, in the will and power which the light begets in the heart.

Question. How will this save me?

Answer. By this means; that in thee which destroys thee, and separates thee from the living God, is daily wrought out, and the

heart daily changed into the image of him who is light, and brought into unity and fellowship with the light, possessing of it, and being possessed by it; and this is salvation.

It brings peace, joy, and glory. Faith in the light breaks down the wall of darkness, the wall of partition, that which separates from the peace, that which causeth the anguish and trouble upon the soul, and so brings into peace.

And man receives not these revelations by study, by reading, by willing, by running, but by being formed in the will of life, by being begotten of the will of the Father, and by coming forth in the will, and lying still in the will, and growing up in the will, here the child receives the wisdom which is from above, and daily learns that cross which crucifies the other wisdom, which joins with and pleases the other will, which loves to be feeding on the shadowy and husky part of knowledge, without life.

Know the light, the eternal light of life, the little glimmerings and shinnings of it in thy soul. This comes from the rock, to lead thee to the rock; and if thou wilt follow it, it will fix thee upon the rock where thou canst not be shaken.

Mind the reproofs of the light; for that will still be setting thee to rights. That will still be bringing down that which would get up above; and there lies the preservation. Oh the chastenings of the light, the sweet chastenings of the love by the light! These are healing stripes. This brings down the exalter, and that in thee which loves to be exalted, and to be seeking the honour of the spiritual riches, before the humility is perfected.\*

Isaac Pennington, 1616-1679. English Quaker.  
*Isaac Pennington's Works.*

Dwelling in the Light, there is no occasion at all for stumbling, for all things are discovered with the Light. Thou that lovest it here-with is Thy Teacher. When thou art walking abroad it is present with thee in thy bosom. Thou needest not to say, lo, here, or lo, there; and as thou liest in thy bed it is present to teach thee and judge thy wandering mind which wanders abroad and thy high thoughts and imaginations and makes them subject. For following thy thoughts

thou art quickly lost. By dwelling in this Light it will discover to thee the body of sin and thy corruptions and fallen estate where thou art. In that Light which shows thee all this, stand; neither to the right nor to the left.

George Fox, 1624-1691. English, founder of the Society of Friends (Quakers).

Your eye is the lamp of your body. When your eye is sound, your whole body is light, but when it is unsound, your body is dark. So take care! Your very light may be darkness! If, therefore, your whole body is light with no darkness in it at all, it will all be as light as a lamp makes things for you by its light.

Jesus of Nazareth.

*New Testament* (Luke 11), Trans. E. J. Goodspeed.

## THE WAY IMPLIES A REBIRTH

For thousands of years, rites of initiation have been teaching spiritual rebirth; yet, strangely enough, man forgets again and again the meaning of divine procreation. This is surely no evidence of a strong life of the spirit; and yet the penalty of misunderstanding is heavy, for it is nothing less than neurotic decay, embitterment, atrophy and sterility. It is easy enough to drive the spirit out of the door, but when we have done so the salt of life grows flat—it loses its savour. Fortunately, we have proof that the spirit always renews its strength in the fact that the central teaching of the ancient initiations is handed on from generation to generation. Ever and again human beings arise who understand what is meant by the fact that God is our Father. The equal balance of the flesh and the spirit is not lost to the world.

Carl G. Jung, M.D., 1875-. Swiss psychologist.

*Modern Man in Search of a Soul*, Trans. W. Dell & C. Baynes.

This dying to self by dying into life results, as Keats had discovered, in the birth of a new self. For the mind through which man acquires his sense of personal identity, is not luxuriously relaxed. The intensity of effort involved is vividly revealed in the lines

in which Keats described his agonized approach to the altar steps. But this effort implies something other than the negative concentration of self-restraint which Mr. Babbitt preaches. It is a positive crucifixion of self, whereby the mind ceases to be conscious of its own petty rights and scruples, and knows in itself the Mind of life labouring in the imperfect matter of humanity towards a perfect realization of being.

For every moment of pure consciousness is a kind of death. The self dies as a separate entity. It lives as a perfect unity. By giving itself to the death that is in life, it receives the life that is in death, and receives it, not with clouded faculties or in some swoon of sense, but with a heightened awareness of reality. The self is so disinterested that nothing is alien to it; it is so conscious of its own and so of life's creative purpose that nothing is meaningless to it.\*

Hugh I'Anson Fausset, 1895-. English critic, poet.  
*Proving of Psyche.*

Obviously it is always an unfortunate thing to express, in intellectual terms, subtle feelings which are none the less infinitely important for the life and well-being of the individual. In a certain sense, the thing we are trying to express is the feeling of having been "replaced," but without the connotation of having been "deposed." It is as if the leadership of the affairs of life had gone over to an invisible centre.

In this remarkable experience I see a phenomenon resulting from the detachment of consciousness, through which the subjective "I live," becomes the objective "It lives me." This condition is felt to be higher than the earlier one; it is really as if it were a sort of release from compulsion and impossible responsibility which are the inevitable results of participation mystique. This feeling of release filled Paul completely. It is the consciousness of being a child of God which then frees one from the spell of the blood. Also, it is a feeling of reconciliation with what is happening, and that is the reason that the glance of "one who has attained fulfillment," according to the Hui Ming Ching,<sup>9</sup> returns to the beauty of nature.

<sup>9</sup> *The Book of Changes*—Ancient Chinese Scripture.

In the Pauline Christ-symbol the deepest religious experience of the West and East meet. On the one hand, Christ the sorrow-laden hero; on the other, the Golden Flower that blooms in the purple hall of the city of jade—what a contrast, what an unfathomable difference, what an abyss of history! This is a problem fit to be the master-work of a future psychologist.\*\*

Carl G. Jung, M.D., 1875-. Swiss psychologist.  
*Secret of the Golden Flower*, Trans. C. F. Baynes.

Here it is necessary to distinguish two paths through the crisis to a new start. We call the first one the human or earthly path. It ends in a certain sense of fellowship in a We that consists of humans—an earthly or human We. The second one may be characterized as the religious path. Its outlet is—at least in our time—Christianity with its sense of the manifestation of God in the We.

In the first case, the person has renounced all the former aims and values of his Ego. In anticipation this process seemed to be death itself, yet now, having passed through it, he realizes that he is alive in spite of the terrible breakdown. Now he sees that the world is quite different from what he formerly believed it to be. He seems to look upon life with new eyes, seeing connections, facts, values, goals, ways, possibilities he never saw before. A serious offense, which yesterday seemed to be unbearable, is now a mere trifle. Like old clothes, worn out and worthless, his egocentric prejudices, notions, and ideas have been discarded for something better. Formerly it was supposed that without these egocentric values life would be empty, meaningless, nothing at all—that when these old egocentric ideas had been dropped nothing would be left, that the rest of life would be emptiness. But now the person discovers how mistaken he was. For a new world opens up before him with a whole new life, richer and more colorful and more differentiated than anything he knew before.

This appearance in his life of the new values, new feelings and new aims, which completes the new insight into the actual realities of life, is the very essence of the crisis, and perhaps the essence of human life itself. As has been said before, it is inexplicable, and we



must limit ourselves to describing it as carefully as possible. In the case of the human or earthly path through crisis, we come to feel that this "miracle of rebirth" seems to be a natural element in human life. In the case of the religious path, we feel behind the sunrise of the new life a higher Living Power who brings it about.

Fritz Kunkel, M.D., German psychotherapist, and Roy E. Dickerson, American author.  
*How Character Develops.*

Among the Pharisees there was a man named Nicodemus, a leader among the Jews. This man went to Jesus one night, and said to him,

"Master, we know that you are a teacher who has come from God, for no one can show the signs that you do, unless God is with him."

Jesus answered him,

"I tell you, no one can see the Kingdom of God unless he is born over again from above!"

Nicodemus said to him,

"How can a man be born when he is old? Can he enter his mother's womb over again and be born?"

Jesus answered,

"I tell you, if a man does not owe his birth to water and spirit, he cannot get into the Kingdom of God. Whatever owes its birth to the physical is physical, and whatever owes its birth to the Spirit is spiritual. Do not wonder at my telling you that you must be born over again from above. The wind blows wherever it chooses, and you hear the sound of it, but you do not know where it comes from or where it goes. That is the way with everyone who owes his birth to the Spirit."

From Gospel According to John, first century.  
*New Testament*, Trans. E. J. Goodspeed.

Nicodemus asked, expecting to end the discussion which had grown too transcendental. Can a man enter again his mother's womb and be reborn? That undoubtedly is the question with which civilization is faced today: Can there be rebirth, or must the attempt at metamorphosis always mean death?

It is on that peculiar and vital point that we have today through science a most significant addition to our knowledge. Today we know that this way of rebirth is the way whereby all great critical advances have been made by Life. All profoundly new development, all development after the stage of complete functional power has been attained, must be and can only be by a profound sloughing and, more, by a recasting of the elder form and a completely fresh growth build up from basic materials. This is the great principle called now in science Foetalization, since its supreme biological importance has been discovered, but known for long to the "artists of thought" as metamorphosis or rebirth.

Naturally, faced by this demand of Life, with this dilemma to take in more reality and to fulfill more courageously the psychological demands of his nature, man shrinks from the only way forward—to keep on opening his mind, his heart, and his apprehensions. He feels that he is being torn asunder and dissolved. Birth is as terrible an agony as death. That it shall be birth and not death depends on the creature's vitality. One thing is certain, that the old narrower life is over. For a short time we shall see the violences of this profound conflict, by those who suffer from them, thrown out into the outer world of action. We shall see the outer violences of class wars, experts' wars, nations' wars and age-group wars—all projections of inner conflict striving to avoid the crisis that must be fought out in itself. But in the end the force within us, which we are now attempting to get rid of by our violent actions in the world without, will turn in upon ourselves. For we are not answering its demand that we should change ourselves by these our violent efforts to upset the world. We cannot say whether we shall learn in time where lies the true centre of our distress and so realize how it may be cured, and cease before we have done fatal damage by striking blindly about us as lunatics strike with mad fury at the phantasms projected by their diseased minds. What our present knowledge does tell us is either we shall shortly emerge into a new world in which value and reality can be seen reconciled, or we shall die, leaving a lesson and an empty field for those next chosen by Life to attempt this crisis of creation. We can see the deep rend under us today so

clearly because today it is risen to the surface and is sweeping us to the brink.\*

Gerald Heard, 1889—English author, religious philosopher.  
*These Hurrying Years.*

I had learned, it seemed, that a spiritual progress was possible to man, by which out of the discordant elements of his being—the desire of the Heart and the knowledge of the Mind—a harmony was created. This harmony was a new kind of being, and it had been called by Jesus and Eckhart and Keats, the Soul. This Soul was at once a new condition of the total human being and a faculty of knowledge. It was aware of the universe as a harmony, and of itself as a part of that harmony; and this awareness was a joyful awareness. This was the ground of the mystical faith that the Soul was consubstantial with God. God, in this mystical sense, was the inseparable counterpart of the Soul; and the Soul, in the process and very moment of becoming aware of its own self-existence, became also aware of the existence of an omnipresent God of which itself was, as it were, a focus of self-knowledge.

This strange and simple process was the “rebirth” which Jesus had taught, and which was the central mystery of all high religion. It could occur in complete independence of any particular religion; it was the outcome of an internecine conflict between the desire of the Heart and the knowledge of the Mind.

This conflict between Heart and Mind, between feeling and knowledge, was obviously independent of religion, in any ordinary sense of the word. It was simply incidental to humanity. Man, being man, was bound to endure this conflict. If he did not endure it, he was less than man, in the sense that he was turning away from something which it was his duty as a man to look upon.

Some drugged themselves with a religion which assured them that the desires of the Heart would be realized, and that death was only the doorway to life; some sought forgetfulness in busy plans for the amelioration of human circumstance; some sought to live in the moment. But there were always a few on whom these opiates failed to work. By some queer destiny the conflict was forced upon

them. Heart and Mind in them insisted each upon its rights, and the claims could not be reconciled. There was a deadlock in the centre of their being, and they passed steadily into a condition of isolation, inanition, abandonment and despair. Their inward division was complete.

Then came, out of that extreme and absolute division, a sudden unity. A new kind of consciousness was created in them. Mind and Heart, which had been irreconcilable enemies, became united in the Soul, which loved what it knew. The inward division, which had divided the human being also from the universe of his knowledge, was healed; in a single happening, man became one in himself and one with all that was without him. He knew that he was called upon to play his part in the harmony revealed to him.

This was the great secret of religion; but only because it was the great secret of life. Men who learned and obeyed it, became different. They were a new kind of men.\*

John Middleton Murry, 1889-. English author, critic.  
*God.*



## CHAPTER THREE

### *Progression on the Way*

The sower went forth to sow; and as he sowed, some seeds fell by the wayside, and the birds came and devoured them: and others fell upon the rocky places, and straightway they sprang up: and when the sun was risen, they were scorched; and because they had no root, they withered away.

And others fell upon the thorns; and the thorns grew up, and choked them: and others fell upon the good ground, and yielded fruit, some a hundredfold, some sixty, some thirty.

He that hath ears, let him hear.\*

JESUS OF NAZARETH

People who are far from God think they are very near to him, when they begin to take a few steps to approach him. The most polite and most enlightened people have the same stupidity about this as a peasant who thinks he is really at court, because he has seen the king.

FRANCOIS FÉNELON

There are too many who are content to learn words by heart, and to put words in the place of experience. No one can really understand these things unless he has experienced them himself.\*

CARL G. JUNG

## CHAPTER THREE

### *Progression on the Way*

"O Lord, this is not the work of one day, nor children's sport; nay, in this short work<sup>1</sup> is included all the perfection of religious persons." In this statement Thomas à Kempis voices an appropriate warning to all who enter upon the religious Way, for it is not a short, nor an easy undertaking. The rebirth that occurs is a continuous process. It challenges to a persistent and concentrated effort, such as is required in learning to apprehend and enter into the nature of reality in any new area. In the religious realm the demands are greater than in all others, for the goal is the apprehension of the nature of the real self ("Within, yet beyond the person") and the organization of the personality around that Central Reality.

The warning of this fifteenth century Religious refers to a grave misunderstanding regarding the Way, one that has led to countless discouragements and failures, *i.e.*, the commonly held belief that the change of conscious attitude which the Way involves will bring an immediate and lasting transformation of personality. For many there may be a tremendously clarifying initial experience, but for relatively few of whom there is record, is there the cataclysmic conversion of a Paul or an Augustine. For most people the transformation is a long and slow process because of those obstacles of personality and social structure which so effectively block the needed reorientation.

So much emphasis has been placed on *beginning* the religious Way, and so little emphasis has been put on *following* it, that a startling ignorance concerning the very fact of progression prevails. Doubtless some of the disrepute into which religion falls can be traced to this unrealism. Its effect is two-fold.

First it leads to the disillusionment of many aspirants, who, following the first enthusiastic flush of devotion, gradually find themselves faced

<sup>1</sup> "Let go all, and thou shalt find all."

with the same conflicts, tensions, and fears as before. What seems disturbing to them is that these appear in intensified form. The aspirants conclude, therefore, that they are growing worse instead of better and so frequently fall by the wayside. They are the ones who may be heard to exclaim, "I have tried religion, and it doesn't work." Thus do many lose faith and discontinue their efforts, at least until their inner longing leads them to a different approach to the Way, whereupon they are benefited by another clarifying experience. This stop-and-go method is wasteful and largely unnecessary, for we learn from the first rank religious as well as psychotherapeutic helpers, that progress in self-knowledge leads inevitably to the uncovering of heretofore hidden egocentric motives—to a greater awareness of a faulty condition that has existed for a long time. This is a sign of progress, and not of failure.

The other situation stemming from this unrealism is even more disturbing, because in it the victims are seldom aware of their plight. They are those who start out with good promise, but not realizing the range of progress which may be a possibility for them, nor the training that will facilitate progress toward the further goals, gradually settle down into a mediocrity that is complacent, and sterile. They may be, indeed, many of them are, loyal church members. They believe themselves to be leading the "good life" whereas they have barely stepped over the threshold, for they have not yet come to grips with their deepest inner nature. They have made little progress in eradicating the "false" elements within the self and therefore the "real" elements remain still to be discovered. Thus they continue to project upon society their unknown and unresolved conflicts, and fail to project what could emerge through them—some measure of the creative, loving power of God.

When mediocrity of achievement thus becomes the rule, it comes also to be accepted as the only possible, practical goal. It is easy to see how the religious Way, viewed with such distortion, ceases to hold out the answer to man's longing for fulfillment, and falls into disrepute.

We may wonder why advice concerning progression has not been made more available. The reasons are too involved to discuss here. However, there is no present excuse for lack of information in this area, for in addition to the remarkably enlightened instruction of early religious directors which has long been available, and too frequently neglected, there is a comparatively new body of information provided by psychology which throws light on the unconscious factors involved in any change of



character. Also there has come an increased influx of translations made from the wealth of ancient Hindu and Buddhist sources concerning the means whereby man can learn to apprehend Reality. The Westerner can profit from some of the methods which these religions have developed, even though many of them are not suitable to the Western temperament.

The information and advices which follow have been garnered from these three areas of insight, as well as from contemporary religious teachers.

Limitation of space prevents a thorough consideration of all the known factors in progression on the Way. The reader will profit by further study concerning them. (See Bibliography.) It should be said that the factors governing the rate and range are complex and individually determined. Biological equipment, mental and emotional endowment, temperament, as well as environmental factors enter in. Recent studies in both physical and temperamental types seem to indicate forward steps in insight, and may be especially helpful in future instruction concerning techniques for spiritual training.<sup>2</sup>

Since progression to the higher stages, which Poulain and others would designate as the mystical stages, is characterized among other things by an intense concentration, such as is found to characterize the genius in all fields, it may be that a prerequisite endowment is necessary for the degree of achievement which marks a Saint Francis or a Saint John of the Cross or a Gandhi. However, because of the early conditioning experiences which build up a "seeming-self" in all of us, it is difficult, if not impossible, to determine the native endowment for any person. It is of little use, therefore, to predict a particular range of spiritual maturity for anyone. This, added to the all-important factor that every step along the Way brings immeasurable benefits, impels one to use every means for accelerating his progress on the Way. The final range of achievement depends not on one's own effort but on the Grace of God.

### STAGES OF PROGRESSION<sup>3</sup>

A tree that it takes both arms to encircle grew from a tiny rootlet. A many storied pagoda is built by placing one brick upon

<sup>2</sup> "Psychological Types" by Carl G. Jung, and "Varieties of Temperament" by William H. Sheldon.

<sup>3</sup> See Chapter IV "Kinds and Degrees of Prayer."

another brick. A journey of three thousand miles is begun by a single step.

Laotzu, sixth century B.C. Chinese philosopher.  
*Laotzu's Tao and Wu-Wei*, Trans. Bhikshu Wai-Tao and D. Goddard.

Our safety does not lie in the present perfection of our knowledge of the will of God, but in our sincerity in obeying the light we have, and in seeking for more.

Edward Worsdell, 1853-1908. English teacher.  
*The Gospel of Divine Help*.

In the great mystics we see the highest and widest development of that consciousness to which the human race has yet attained. We see its growth exhibited to us on a grand scale, perceptible of all men. . . . The germ of that same transcendent life, the spring of the amazing energy which enables the great mystic to rise to freedom and dominate his world, is latent in all of us; an integral part of our humanity. Where the mystic has a genius for the Absolute, we have each a little buried talent, some greater, some less; and the growth of this talent, this spark of the soul, once we permit its emergence, will conform in little, and according to its measure, to those laws of organic growth, those inexorable conditions of transcendence which we found to govern the Mystic Way.

Every person, then, who awakens to consciousness of a Reality which transcends the normal world of sense is put upon a road which follows at low levels the path which the mystic treads at high levels. . . .

I do not care whether the consciousness be that of artist or musician, striving to catch and fix some aspect of the heavenly light or music, and denying all other aspects of the world in order to devote themselves to this: or of the humble servant of Science, purging his intellect that he may look upon her secrets with innocence of eye: whether the higher reality be perceived in the terms of religion, beauty, suffering; of human love, of goodness, or of truth. However widely these forms of transcendence may seem to differ, the mystic experience is the key to them all. . . . Each brings the self who receives its revelation in good faith, does not check it by self-

regarding limitations, to a humble acceptance of the universal law of knowledge: the law that "we behold that which we are," and hence that "only the Real can know Reality." Awakening, Discipline, Enlightenment, Self-surrender, and Union, are the essential phases of life's response to this fundamental fact: the conditions of our attainment of Being. . . \*

Evelyn Underhill, 1875-1944. English writer and mystic.  
*Mysticism.*

No one can be enlightened unless he be first cleansed or purified and stripped. So also, no one can be united with God unless he be first enlightened. Thus there are three stages: first, the purification (or purgation); secondly, the enlightening; thirdly, the union.

Written anonymously by one of the "Friends of God," in fourteenth century.  
*Theologica Germanica*, Trans. Winkworth.

Several mystic authors, according to the several notions that they had both of the end of a spiritual life and means conducing thereto, have by several terms made the division of its degrees. The most ancient division is into three states: 1. of beginners; 2. of proficients; 3. of such as are perfect. Yet withal they do not signify by what distinctive marks each of these states is separated from the others; but generally, in latter times, the whole course of a spiritual life is divided: 1. into the Purgative way, in which all sinful defects are purged out of the soul; 2. the Illuminative way, by which divine virtues and graces are introduced; 3. the Unitive way, by which a soul attains unto the end of all other exercises, to wit, an union with God in spirit by perfect charity.

Augustin Baker, 1575-1641. English Benedictine Father.  
*Holy Wisdom.*

We must start without delay on the painful, steep, humiliating path of undoing our busy, deliberately deluded selves. So only will the Kingdom come, where it must come fully and where we alone can decide whether it shall come—in ourselves. "The Kingdom of God is within you," yes, but only if we are prepared to let that powerful germ of eternal life grow, until it splits away and consumes this husk, our ego. Unless we, this person with his tightly

bound triple self-love—love of his physical appetites and comforts, of his possession, of his place, rank, and recognition—unless that hard and hardening nut is buried and rots and is eaten away by the new life's germ, there is no hope. Indeed we may say that the whole secret of the spiritual life is just this painful struggle to come awake; to become really conscious. And, conversely, the whole process and technique of evil is to do just the reverse to us: to lull us to sleep, to distract us from what is creeping up within us; to tell us that we are busy workers for the Kingdom when we are absent-mindedly (while we daydream of our importance) spreading death, not life; to persuade us that we are wise, practical, creative, when we are sinking daily into a blinder and more fatal automatism.

That, then, is the first step, known by the grim technical term, *purgation*. I must start with myself, and stay with myself until some intention appears in my actions, some consistency between what I say and do. I must not escape into denunciation, coercion, or even superior concern for anyone else. I shall do so if I can; that is the invariable trick of the ego, trying to escape and save itself from its necessary death. "When God turns on man, man turns on his neighbor," said old Jeremy Taylor some three centuries ago. Then, after that complete abandonment of serving two masters—my view of myself as a master-builder gaining recognition by my active goodness, and of God—then comes the next step, *illumination*. I am still far below being capable of a creative act. That is God's prerogative, and He gives it only to those who have given themselves away that He may occupy the space they once filled. But I am permitted at last to see things as they are. Fear and hurry and anxiety leave me. Why? Because, though still extremely ignorant, I know one thing at last. I know that God exists. There is utter Reality, complete creative power holding the entire creation in its grasp. The whole of time and space is no more than an incident, a minute episode in the immeasurable order, power, and glory of complete Being. Once I have seen, really seen, that, once I am illuminated, then I have fully attained one step in approaching God's Kingdom and in letting it approach; I no longer am standing in the way. I cease to bar the Light. I cease to be a reason for people not believing in God. The

Light shines through those who have so opened themselves, or rather let themselves be opened. Thank God we have all of us known one or two of them. And there may be more of them than we notice, for they are the reverse of showy. They may be very active, but when we think of them it is not of their activity, physical or mental, of which we think. It is of some still, firm quality, some essence deeper than deeds, that we see in them. They see Reality, are always looking at it, and, through that seeing, there is in them a quality of entire Being.

Is there anything beyond that stage? That is indeed much . . . The first stage is that of servanthship, when we learn not to disobey. The second stage is one of friendship, when we learn why we have had to obey, and to abstain from much that seemed harmless and even, in its way, right. Then comes the third stage, that of creative action, the station and work of sons. They are not merely privileged on-lookers, they are co-workers. This is the well-known (but seldom climbed) ladder of the mystics. But let us look at it again, not dismissing it as a rare path reserved for ecstasies. Is it not also, here in front of us today, unmistakably, an evolutionary path? Is not this the way to the Kingdom and is not the attainment of that final station itself the Kingdom? To some people this may seem something of an anticlimax. Is the dream of the Kingdom to end simply with the ivory-tower ideal of a large crop of saints? If we think that goal anything less than the highest, that can be because we have never met any of that highest third rank—as well may be. They are themselves rare and, moreover, like all supreme masterpieces, those who would understand them must in themselves have already something of the nature they would appreciate. If we are quite blind, however intense the sun, we shall still see only darkness. The sons of God differ from us not only in character but in capacity. They are not merely good and wise but theirs is of the essential nature of their Father, a quality, an intensity of Being, which is, unless they screen it from us, disquieting, uncanny. Real creativeness is far more terrible than what we call destruction.

Can we ourselves hope to climb this tremendous way to the Kingdom? Certainly: there will be no Kingdom unless and until

we do so climb to that station. For only those who have attained may safely be given the powers, the spiritual powers whereby, and only whereby, God's Kingdom may come on earth. How can we learn to climb to such immense heights? We have seen the first steps. The very first is to know that I as I am, am an obstacle to the Kingdom. I must start, before anything else, by clearing myself out of the way. I must learn, right down to my reflexes, to say and mean and know, "Let my name perish, so Thy Kingdom come." \*

Gerald Heard, 1889-. English author, religious philosopher.  
*The Creed of Christ.*

#### STAGES FROM THE VIEWPOINT OF DEPTH-PSYCHOLOGY

The more we can observe the details of the process the more we discover the well-known features of the "Great Turn," or the "Great Way," as it has been described by spiritual leaders all through the history of religion. Seen from the viewpoint of depth-psychology the essential stages of the journey are three.

The first stage is regression and reintegration. It corresponds to the "purgation" of medieval mysticism. The Ego or the idol, the rigid structure of the former life, collapses, together with all its valuations, prejudices, resentments, desires and fears. The "censorship," the screen between consciousness and the unconscious, breaks down. Old images, forgotten emotions, repressed functions, come to life again; primitive obsessions and projections, visions and nightmares endanger the equilibrium of the good citizen. Without adequate inner or outer help, religious and psychological, he will be in an evil predicament.

This is the situation which the psalmists have described with amazing exactitude: "The sorrows of death compassed me, and the floods of ungodly men made me afraid. The sorrows of hell compassed me about: the snares of death prevented me" (Psalm 18:4, 5). And again: "Many bulls have compassed me; strong bulls of Bashan have beset me round" (Psalm 22:12). The outer and the inner evil fuse; death or insanity seems to be certain; all the negativity of the universe seems to be arrayed against us. There is only one way out:

the religious way: "Yea, though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil: for thou art with me" (Psalm 23:4).

The power of the images,<sup>4</sup> terrifying as it may be, is borrowed power. It appears to be genuine and invincible only as long as we do not know the real center. The appeal to the center,<sup>5</sup> therefore, is the only thing left for the person who is "beset by the bulls" of the collective unconscious.<sup>6</sup> Even the atheist, if anything disagreeable takes him by surprise, reacts with a superficial turn to the center. He says "O God!" or "For goodness sake!" If the believer can do the same thing in a more serious way, even though in the moment of fear or pain his concept of God may be vague or childish, it will help him more than anything else.

The turning towards the center is the second stage of the journey. But the center itself, the aspect of God which can be experienced in such a situation, is quite different from what most people expect it to be. Either we project some learned or emotional ideas into the universe; or, knowing we must have no image of God, we use an empty frame, three feet square, and according to our creed we think God will fit the frame. Yet he does not. His appearance, if he appears at all, crushes our beautiful frame. We are frightened and offended and decree that the power which destroyed our convictions must be the devil.

The nearer we come to the center, the more we leave the images behind, the more are our fears turned into anxiety. And anxiety, if we face it, is turned into awe. What seemed to be the power of darkness now manifests itself as the power of light. After the great and strong wind comes the earthquake, then the fire, and then the still small voice (I Kings 19:11-13).

The terrible and destructive aspect of the godhead—the "tremendum" in theological language—originates as a subjective human experience, though an unavoidable one if our religious convictions and our rigid theology are smashed by the Grace of God. We live in

<sup>4</sup> Symbols in dreams and fantasy.

<sup>5</sup> The "Real Self"—"God within."

<sup>6</sup> That deep, inborn layer of the unconscious which is not individual but universal in content. (Editors).

a jail which we call our castle; a foreign soldier breaks through the doors, come to free us by blasting the walls of our castle—and we fight him with the last might of our broken Ego, calling him scoundrel, knave and devil, until we are exhausted, overwhelmed and disarmed. Then looking at the victor with disinterested objectivity we recognize him: St. Michael smilingly sheathes his sword.

The power which brought about the fight was grace. The “evil” which caused our anxiety was, in the last analysis, grace. And even the real scoundrels, our competitors in egocentricity who betrayed us and wounded us so unjustly, even they, as we discover now, were already working unknowingly and unwillingly in the service of the super-human strategy of grace. This fact is no excuse for their evil-doing; but it shows the transcendent power and wisdom of the coming Kingdom of Heaven. And above all it shows that the Kingdom is there already and is working in spite of and even through the errors and felonies of its prospective citizens.

Here begins the third stage of the journey, identical with the “illumination” of the old mystics. It is not only an intellectual insight but is at the same time an emotional experience of utmost reality and a volitional change which overthrows the whole system of our values, goals and means. It gives us a new viewpoint, or rather a double viewpoint, which enables us to see people at the same time as rascals and as children of God. Evil reveals its creative implications, and what we deemed to be good now shows its fiendish danger as the devil’s bait. Deeper insight, more power, increasing responsibility, and above all a higher kind of love, more detached and more comprehensive—these are the characteristics of the new life, as far as we are able to describe them in a language of our empirical, and that means humanly limited, psychology.

The “unconscious of the past,” we may say, was conditioned by our images and their historical forms. The “unconscious of the future” is conditioned by the center itself. It is creative power, using the images, now cleansed and timeless, according to its creative plans, which are our own unconscious goals. The crisis then is the transition from an eccentric, less conscious and less powerful life—pivoting around the Ego-image or an idolized image—to a well-centered,



more conscious and more powerful life—pivoting around the real Self. This Self proves to be the center both of the individual and of the group, and therefore transforms the individual into a servant of the group—that is love; and proves to be also our relation to God, and therefore transforms individuals and groups into servants of God—that is faith. The crisis, if it is complete, means conversion.<sup>7</sup> \*—\*\*

Fritz Kunkel, M.D., 1889—. German psychotherapist.  
*In Search of Maturity.*

The first stage (in the process of “individuation”<sup>8</sup>) leads to the experience of the *shadow*, which symbolizes our “other aspect,” our “dark brother,” who belongs inseparably to our totality. The meeting with the shadow often coincides with the making conscious of the functional type to which one belongs.<sup>9</sup> The shadow is an archetypal figure that often appears even today personified in many forms in the conceptions of primitives. It forms a part of the individual, a kind of split-off part of his being which is nevertheless joined with him just “like a shadow.” Confronting one’s shadow means becoming unsparingly critically conscious of one’s own nature. The shadow stands, so to speak, on the threshold of the way to the unconscious. Only when we have learned to distinguish ourselves from it, having accepted its reality as a part of our being and remaining always aware of this fact, can the encounter with the other psychic pairs of opposites succeed. Then, and then only, commences that objective attitude towards one’s own personality without which there is no progress along the way to totality.

The second stage of the individuation process is characterized by the meeting with the figure of the “soul-image,” named by Jung the *anima* in the man, the *animus* in the woman.

The soul-image is a more or less firmly constituted functional complex, and the inability to distinguish one’s self from it leads to such phenomena as those of the moody man, dominated by feminine drives, ruled by his emotions, or of the rationalizing, animus-obsessed woman who always knows better and reacts in a masculine way, not

<sup>7</sup> What the mystics called “union” is a later event.

<sup>8</sup> See pages 32–35 for Jung’s description of this process.

<sup>9</sup> The four functions are: feeling, sensation, thinking, intuition.

instinctively. One has then the impression that another, a strange person has "taken possession" of the individual.

The variety of forms in which the soul-image can appear is nearly inexhaustible. It is seldom unambiguous, almost always a complexly opalescent phenomenon, equipped with all properties of the most contradictory nature in so far as these are typically feminine or masculine respectively.

"The first bearer of the soul-image is probably always the mother; later it is those women who excite the man's fancy, whether in a positive or negative sense." The release from the mother is one of the most important and most delicate problems in the realization of personality. The primitives possess for this purpose a whole series of ceremonies, initiations to manhood, rites of rebirth, *etc.*, in which the initiant receives such instructions as shall enable him to dispense with the guardianship of the mother. The European, however, must gain "acquaintanceship" with his feminine or masculine psychological component through the process of making conscious this component in his own psyche. That the figure of the soul-image, the contrasexual in one's own psyche, especially with the Occidental is so deeply repressed in the unconscious and accordingly plays a decisive and often troublesome role is in great part the fault of our patriarchally oriented culture. The repression of feminine traits in a man and inclinations leads naturally to an accumulation of these needs in the unconscious. Thus it can often be his own worst weakness that the man marries, which explains many a "queer marriage," and it happens no differently to the woman.

The animus is mostly represented by a multiplicity of figures, by "something like an assemblage of fathers and other authorities who pronounce *ex cathedra* incontestable, 'sensible' judgments." Often these are, in the first place, uncritically accepted opinions, prejudices, principles, which mislead the woman to wrangling and argumentation. But just as the anima is not merely symbol of the dangers of the drives waiting their chance for seduction in the dark of the unconscious, but at the same time signifies man's light and inspiring guide, leading him onwards, not downwards, so is the animus not only the "devil of opinions," the renegade from all logic, but "also a

productive, creative being, albeit not in the form of masculine productiveness but as fructifying word, as "*logos spermatikos*." As the man gives birth to his work out of his inner "femininity," as a rounded whole, and the anima thereby becomes his inspiring muse, so the inner "masculine" of the woman often brings forth creative germs able to fertilize the feminine in the man. Thus the two sexes complement each other here as well in a fortunate interplay, not only on the physical level but also in that mysterious stream pregnant with images that flows through and unites the depths of their souls.

We generally choose our partners so that they stand for the unknown, unconscious part of our psyche. When this part has been made conscious, one no longer shoves off his own faults onto the feminine or masculine partner, *i.e.*, the projection is resolved. Thus a quantity of psychic energy, which up to then lay bound in the projection, is taken back and can be placed at the disposal of one's own ego. In this way too one comes "to one's self"—not in the way of self-complacency indeed, as in narcissism, but in the way of self-recognition. If one has seen through and made conscious the contrasexual in his own psyche, then one has himself and his emotions and affects in hand. That means above all real independence, although at the same time—isolation, that isolation of the "inwardly free" whom no love relation or partnership can hold in chains, for whom the other sex has lost its mystery because they have learned to know its fundamental traits in the depths of their own psyche. Such a man, too, will scarcely be able to "fall in love" any more, for he can no more lose himself in another; but he will be capable of so much the deeper "love" in the sense of consciously giving himself to the other. For his isolation does not estrange him from the world; it only gives him a proper distance from it. It makes possible to him a devotion to fellow-men still more unrestricted because no longer dangerous to his individuality. True, it requires in most cases half a lifetime until this step is reached. Probably no one attains it without a struggle. A full measure of experience—indeed of disappointment—likewise belongs thereto. The encounter with the soul-image is therefore not a task of youth but of maturity. Probably on this account it becomes only in the course of later life a necessity to dispose of this problem.

As the making conscious of the shadow makes possible the knowledge of our other, dark aspect, so does the making conscious of the soul-image enable us to gain knowledge of the contrasexual in our own psyche. When this image is recognized and revealed, then it ceases to work from out of the unconscious and allows us finally to differentiate this contrasexual component and to incorporate it into our conscious orientation, through which an extraordinary enrichment of the contents belonging to our consciousness and therewith a broadening of our personality is attained.

A further portion of the way is now made free. When all the difficulties of the confrontation with the soul-image are overcome, then new archetypes arise that compel the individual to a new reckoning and a new definition of his position. The whole process is, as far as we can see, directed towards a goal.

The personification of the spiritual principle, can be distinguished as the next milestone of inner development. Its counterpart in the individuation process of the woman is the *Magna Mater*, the great earth-mother, which represents the cold and objective truth of nature. The moment has arrived for analysing and exploring no longer the contrasexual part of the psyche, as in the case of the anima and the animus, but that part of it which constitutes, so to speak, our very essence—for going back to the primordial image after which it has been formed. It is necessary to make conscious the whole range of possibilities one carries within one's self, from the crudest "primordial being" up to the highest, most differentiated and most nearly perfect symbol. To this end both figures, the "Old Wise Man" as well as the "Magna Mater," may appear in an infinite variety of shapes. Jung calls these archetypal figures of the unconscious "Mana personalities." To possess mana means to have effective power over others, but also to run the danger of becoming presumptuous and vainglorious thereby. The making conscious of those contents which constitute the archetype of the mana personality signifies therefore "for the man the second and true liberation from the father, for the woman that from the mother, and therewith the first perception of their own unique individuality." Only when the individual has come thus far can he, may he in the true sense of the

word "become united with God in a spiritual childhood." The basically double nature of the psyche is recognized. Yet the forces activated in the individual by these insights only stand really at his disposal when he has learned to distinguish himself from them in humility.

Now we are no longer far from the goal. The archetypal image that leads out of this polarity to the union of both partial systems—consciousness and the unconscious—through a common mid-point is named: the *self*. It marks the last station on the way of individuation, which Jung calls self-realization. Only when this mid-point is found and integrated can one speak of a "whole" man. Only then, namely, has he solved the problem of his relation to the two realities to which we are subject, the inner and the outer, which constitutes an extraordinarily difficult, both ethical and epistemological task.

The birth of the Self signifies for the conscious personality not only a displacement of the previous psychological centre, but also as consequence thereof a completely altered view of and attitude towards life, a "transformation" in the fullest sense of the word.\*-\*\*\*

Jolan Jacobi, contemporary German psychologist.  
*The Psychology of Jung*, Trans. K. W. Bash.

### Progression Presented Allegorically

"Picture men in an underground cave-dwelling, with a long entrance reaching up towards the light along the whole width of the cave; in this they lie from their childhood, their legs and necks in chains, so that they stay where they are and look only in front of them, as the chain prevents them turning their heads round. Some way off, and higher up, a fire is burning behind them, and between the fire and the prisoners is a road on higher ground. Imagine a wall built along this road, like the screens which showmen have in front of the audience, over which they show the puppets."

"I have it," he said.

"Then picture also men carrying along this wall all kinds of articles which overtop it, statues of men and other creatures in stone and wood and other materials; naturally some of the carriers are speaking, others are silent."

"A strange image and strange prisoners," he said.

"They are like ourselves," I answered. "For in the first place, do you think that such men would have seen anything of themselves or of each other except the shadows thrown by the fire on the wall of the cave opposite to them?"

"How could they," he said, "if all their life they had been forced to keep their heads motionless?"

"What would they have seen of the things carried along the wall? Would it not be the same?"

"Surely."

"Then if they were able to talk with one another, do you not think that they would suppose what they saw to be the real things?"

"Necessarily."

"Let us suppose one of them was released, and forced suddenly to stand up and turn his head, and walk and look towards the light. What do you think he would say if he were told by some one that before he had been seeing mere foolish phantoms. And, further, if each of the several figures passing by were pointed out to him, and he were asked to say what each was, do you not think that he would be perplexed, and would imagine that the things he had seen before were truer than those now pointed out to him?"

"Yes, much truer," he said.

"Then if he were forced to look at the light itself, would not his eyes ache, and would he not try to escape and turn back to things which he could look at, and think that they were really more distinct than the things shown him?"

"Yes," he said.

"But," I said, "if some one were to drag him out up the steep and rugged ascent, and did not let go till he had been dragged up to the light of the sun, would not his forced journey be one of pain and annoyance; and when he came to the light would not his eyes be so full of the glare that he would not be able to see a single one of the objects we now call true?"

"Certainly, not all at once," he said.

"Yes, I fancy that he would need time before he could see things in the world above. At first he would most easily see shadows, then the reflections in water of men and everything else, and, finally, the

things themselves. Last of all, I fancy he would be able to look at the sun and observe its nature, not its appearances in water or on alien material, but the very sun itself in its own place?"

"Inevitably," he said.

"And that done, he would then come to infer concerning it that it is the sun which produces the seasons and years, and controls everything in the sphere of the visible, and is in a manner the author of all those things which he and his fellow-prisoners used to see?"

"It is clear that this will be his next conclusion," he said.

"Well, then, if he is reminded of his original abode and its wisdom, and those who were then his fellow-prisoners, do you not think that he will pity them and count himself happy in the change?"

"Certainly."

"Would he not rather suffer anything rather than be so the victim of seeming and live in their way?"

"Yes," he said, "I certainly think that he would endure anything rather than that."

"Then consider this point," I said. "If this man were to descend again and take his seat in his old place, would not his eyes be full of darkness because he had just come out of the sunlight?"

"Most certainly," he said.

"And suppose that he had again to take part with the prisoners there in the old contest of distinguishing between the shadows, while his sight was confused and before his eyes had got steady (and it might take them quite a considerable time to get used to the darkness), would not men laugh at him, and say that having gone up above he had come back with his sight ruined, so that it was not worth while even to try to go up? And do you not think that they would kill him who tried to release them and bear them up, if they could lay hands on him, and slay him?"

"Certainly," he said.

"Now this simile, my dear Gloucon, must be applied in all its parts to what we said before. In the world of knowledge the Form of the good is perceived last and with difficulty, but when it is seen it must be inferred that it is the cause of all that is right and beautiful in all things, producing in the visible world light and the lord of

light, and being itself lord in the intelligible world and the giver of trust and reason and this Form of the good must be seen by whosoever would act wisely in public or in private."

"I agree with you," he said, "so far as I am capable."

"A sensible man would remember that the eyes may be confused in two ways, and for two reasons—by a change from light to darkness, or from darkness to light. He will consider that the same may happen with the soul, and when he sees a soul in trouble and unable to perceive, he will not laugh without thinking; rather he will examine whether it has come from a brighter light and is dim because it is not accustomed to the darkness, or whether it is on its way from ignorance to greater brightness and is dazzled with the greater brilliance; and so he will count the first happy in its condition and its life, but the second he will pity."

"Then," I said, "if these things be true, education is not what certain of its professors declare it to be. They say, if you remember, that they put knowledge in the soul where no knowledge has been, as men putting sight into blind eyes."

"Yes, they do," he said.

"But our present argument," I said, "shows that there resides in each man's soul this faculty and the instrument wherewith he learns, and that it is just as if the eye could not turn from darkness to light unless the whole body turned with it; so this faculty and instrument must be wheeled round together with the whole soul away from that which is becoming, until it is able to look upon and to endure being and the brightest blaze of being; and that we declare to be the good. Do we not?"

"Yes."

"Education then," I said, "will be an art of doing this, an art of conversion, and will consider in what manner the soul will be turned round most easily and effectively. Its aim will not be to implant vision in the instrument of sight. It will regard it as already possessing that, but as being turned in a wrong direction, and not looking where it ought, and it will try to set this right." \*



OBSTACLES TO PROGRESSION<sup>10</sup>

Something hath puddled his clear spirit. . . . And in such cases, men's natures wrangle with inferior things, though great ones are their object.\*

William Shakespeare, 1564-1616. English poet, dramatist.  
*Othello.*

## Contradictions within Modern Culture

Making use of anthropological findings we must recognize that some of our conceptions about human nature are rather naïve, for example, the idea that competitiveness, sibling rivalry, kinship between affection and sexuality are trends inherent in human nature. Our conception of normality is arrived at by the approval of certain standards of behavior and feeling within a certain group which imposes these standards upon its members. But the standards vary with culture, period, class and sex.

Modern culture is economically based on the principle of individual competition. The isolated individual has to fight with other individuals of the same group, has to surpass them and, frequently, thrust them aside. The advantage of the one is frequently the disadvantage of the other. The psychic result of this situation is a diffuse hostile tension between individuals. Everyone is the real or potential competitor of everyone else. This situation is clearly apparent among members of the same occupational group, regardless of strivings to be fair or of attempts to camouflage by polite consideration. It must be emphasized, however, that competitiveness, and the potential hostility that accompanies it, pervades all human relationships. It pervades the relationships between men and men, between women and women, and whether the point of competition be popularity, competence, attractiveness or any social value it greatly impairs the possibilities of reliable friendship. It also, as already indicated, disturbs the relations between men and women, not only in the choice of the partner but in the entire struggle with him for

<sup>10</sup> Also see Chapter II (Self-Knowledge) and Chapter VI (Psychotherapy).

superiority. It pervades school life. And perhaps most important of all, it pervades the family situation, so that as a rule the child is inoculated with this germ from the very beginning. The rivalry between father and son, mother and daughter, one child and another, is not a general human phenomenon but is the response to culturally conditioned stimuli.

The potential hostile tension between individuals results in a constant generation of fear—fear of the potential hostility of others, reinforced by a fear of retaliation for hostilities of one's own. Another important source of fear in the normal individual is the prospect of failure. The fear of failure is a realistic one because, in general, the chances of failing are much greater than those of succeeding, and because failures in a competitive society entail a realistic frustration of needs. They mean not only economic insecurity but also loss of prestige and all kinds of emotional frustrations.

All these factors together result psychologically in the individual feeling that he is isolated. Even when he has many contacts with others, even when he is happily married, he is emotionally isolated. Emotional isolation is hard for anyone to endure; it becomes a calamity, however, if it coincides with apprehensions and uncertainties about one's self.

It is this situation which provokes, in the normal individual of our time, an intensified need for affection as a remedy. Obtaining affection makes him feel less isolated, less threatened by hostility and less uncertain of himself. Because it corresponds to a vital need, love is overvalued in our culture. It becomes a phantom—like success—carrying with it the illusion—although in our culture it is most often a screen for satisfying wishes that have nothing to do with it—but it is made an illusion by our expecting much more of it than it can possibly fulfill. And the ideological emphasis that we place on love serves to cover up the factors which create our exaggerated need for it. Hence the individual—and I still mean the normal individual—is in the dilemma of needing a great deal of affection but finding difficulty in obtaining it.

The situation thus far represents a fertile ground for the develop-

ment of neuroses. The same cultural factors that affect the normal person . . . affect the neurotic to a higher degree and in him the same results are merely intensified.

When we remember that in every neurosis there are contradictory tendencies which the neurotic is unable to reconcile, the question arises as to whether there are not likewise certain definite contradictions in our culture, which underlie the typical neurotic conflicts. It would be the task of the sociologist to study and describe these cultural contradictions. It must suffice for me to indicate briefly and schematically some of the main contradictory tendencies.

The first contradiction<sup>11</sup> to be mentioned is that between competition and success on the one hand, and brotherly love and humility on the other.

The second contradiction is that between the stimulation of our needs and our factual frustrations in satisfying them. The psychic consequence for the individual is a constant discrepancy between his desires and their fulfillment.

Another contradiction exists between the alleged freedom of the individual and all his factual limitations. The individual is told by society that he is free, independent, can decide his life according to his own free will. In actual fact, for the majority of people all these possibilities are limited. The result for the individual is a wavering between a feeling of boundless power in determining his own fate and a feeling of entire helplessness. While the normal person is able to cope with the difficulties—in the neurotic all the conflicts are intensified to a degree that makes a satisfactory solution impossible.

It seems that the person who is likely to become neurotic is one who has experienced the culturally determined difficulties in an accentuated form, mostly through the medium of childhood experiences, and who has consequently been unable to solve them, or has solved them only at great cost to his personality. We might call him a stepchild of our culture.\*

Karen Horney, M.D., 1885—. American psychoanalyst.  
*The Neurotic Personality of Our Time.*

<sup>11</sup> See the author's text for a fuller discussion of these contradictions, pages 281-290.  
Published by W. W. Norton & Company, Inc.

### Society Based on Organized Lovelessness

Our present economic, social and international arrangements are based, in large measure, upon organized lovelessness. We begin by lacking charity towards Nature, so that instead of trying to cooperate with Tao or the Logos on the inanimate and subhuman levels, we try to dominate and exploit, we waste the earth's mineral resources, ruin its soil, ravage its forests, pour filth into its rivers and poisonous fumes into its air. From lovelessness in relation to Nature we advance to lovelessness in relation to art—a lovelessness so extreme that we have effectively killed all the fundamental or useful arts and set up various kinds of mass production by machines in their place. And of course this lovelessness in regard to art is at the same time a lovelessness in regard to the human beings who have to perform the fool-proof and grace-proof tasks imposed by our mechanical art-surrogates and by the interminable paper work connected with mass production and mass distribution. With mass-production and mass-distribution go mass-financing, and the three have conspired to expropriate ever-increasing numbers of small owners of land and productive equipment, thus reducing the sum of freedom among the majority and increasing the power of a minority to exercise a coercive control over the lives of their fellows. This coercively controlling minority is composed of private capitalists or governmental bureaucrats or of both classes of bosses acting in collaboration—and, of course, the coercive and therefore essentially loveless nature of the control remains the same, whether the bosses call themselves “company directors” or “civil servants.” The only difference between these two kinds of oligarchical rulers is that the first derive more of their power from wealth than from position within a conventionally respected hierarchy, while the second derive more power from position than from wealth. Upon this fairly uniform groundwork of loveless relationships are imposed others which vary widely from one society to another, according to local conditions and local habits of thought and feeling. Here are a few examples: contempt and exploitation of coloured minorities living among white majorities, or of coloured majorities governed by minorities of white imperialists; hatred of Jews, Catholics, Free Masons, or of any other minority whose

language, habits, appearance or religion happens to differ from those of the local majority. And the crowning superstructure of uncharity is the organized lovelessness of the relations between state and sovereign state—a lovelessness that expresses itself in the axiomatic assumption that it is right and natural for national organizations to behave like thieves and murderers, armed to the teeth and ready, at the first favourable opportunity, to steal and kill.

So long as the organized lovelessness of war and preparation for war remains, there can be no mitigation, on any large, nation-wide or world-wide scale, of the organized lovelessness of our economic and political relationships. War and preparation for war are standing temptations to make the present bad, God-eclipsing arrangements of society progressively worse as technology becomes progressively more efficient.\*

Aldous Huxley, 1894-. English author.  
*The Perennial Philosophy.*

### The Habitual Cast of Thought

Novices in the spiritual life know of sin only as a positive violation of God's Law, and are unaware that there is an habitual cast of thought that is more dangerous than an actual evil act. They come imbued with the spirit of the world and fashioned to the habits, formed by the years of living according to that spirit. Life has been for them a tissue of those ideas, judgments, sentiments, principles, hopes, fears, desires, regrets and dreams which envelop the souls of men, corrupt their vision and little by little hide from them heaven and the eternity for which they are destined. To those entering on the spiritual life, things spiritual have appealed but vaguely, whilst all that can be seen, weighed, touched and handled, alone have had value in their eyes. . . . The beginning of the interior life is therefore much occupied with intellectual activity. It is devoted to the consideration of what we are, of what God is.\*

Edward Leen, 1885-. Irish Catholic cleric, educator.  
*Progress Through Mental Prayer.*

How many people swell with pride and vanity, for such things as they would not know how to value at all, but that they are

admired in the world? Would a man take ten years more drudgery in business to add two horses more to his coach, but that he knows, that the world most of all admires a coach and six? How fearful are many people of having their houses poorly furnished, or themselves meanly clothed, for this only reason, lest the world should make no account of them, and place them amongst low and mean people?

How often would a man have yielded to the haughtiness and ill-nature of others, and shewn a submissive temper, but that he dares not pass for such a poor-spirited man in the opinion of the world? Many a man would often drop a resentment, and forgive an affront, but that he is afraid if he should, the world would not forgive him.

How many would practice Christian temperance and sobriety in its utmost perfection, were it not for the censure which the world passes upon such a life? Thus do the impressions which we have received from living in the world, enslave our minds, that we dare not attempt to be eminent in the fight of God, for fear of being little in the eyes of the world. But as great as the power of the world is, it is all built upon a blind obedience, and we need only open our eyes, to get quit of its power.

And therefore, I hope, you will not think it a hard saying, that in order to be humble, you must withdraw your obedience from that vulgar spirit, which gives law to Fops and Coquets, and form your judgments according to the wisdom of Philosophy, and the piety of Religion. Who would be afraid of making such a change as this?

William Law, 1686-1761. English clergyman and mystic.  
*Serious Call to a Devout and Holy Life.*

### The Lack of Psychical Culture

A Christian may believe in all the sacred figures and yet remain undeveloped and unchanged in his innermost soul, for he sees the "whole God outside" and does not experience him in his own soul. His decisive motives, interests and impulses do not come from the sphere of Christianity, but from the unconscious and undeveloped soul, which is just as pagan and archaic as ever. The truth of this statement is not only evident in the life of the individual but also in the sum total of individual lives, the people. The great events of

our world, which are planned and carried out by man, do not breathe the spirit of Christianity but of unadorned paganism. These things originate in a psychical condition that has remained archaic and that has not been in the least affected by Christianity . . . Christian culture has turned out to be hollow in a terrifying degree. The condition of the soul does not correspond with the outward creed; in his soul, the Christian has not kept step with the outward development. Everything is to be found outside, in image and word, in Church and Bible. But it is not inside. In other words, through the lack of psychical culture the inner factor, which corresponds to the outer image of God, has remained undeveloped and has therefore stuck fast in paganism. Christian education has indeed done everything which was humanly possible, but it was not sufficient. Too few people have experienced the Divine Figure as the innermost possession of their own soul. They have only met a Christ outwardly, but he has never approached them from their own soul; so dark paganism is still reigning there, and is flooding the so-called Christian cultural world, partly in a blatant form which can no longer be denied and partly in all too threadbare disguise.

It is yet to be understood that the *mysterium magnum* does not only exist in itself, but that it is established above all in the human soul.\*

Carl G. Jung, M.D., 1875-. Swiss psychotherapist, founder of system of Analytical Psychology.  
*Psychology and Alchemy*, Trans. Barbara Hannah.

### Confusion Concerning Self Regard

It is one of the great discoveries of modern psychology that our attitudes toward ourselves are just as complicated as our attitudes toward others—sometimes more so. The great commandment of religion, "Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself," might now be better interpreted to mean, "Thou shalt love thyself properly, and then thou wilt love thy neighbor". . . .

This condemnation of selfishness and exaltation of altruism is the traditional attitude of religion. It holds up a worthy goal to be sure, but there are many errors in its estimate of human nature. Is

it true that we are spontaneously good to ourselves? The evidence points in quite the opposite direction. Men may wish to be good to themselves, but how misguided and unwise they are in their attempts to reach that goal! The fact is that we often treat ourselves more rigidly, more fanatically, more vengefully, than we do others. Suicide, self-mutilation, and more subtle forms of self-degradation such as alcoholism, drug addiction, and promiscuity are pitiful proofs of this. Such self-hate is not restricted to the weak and the insane. Violent forms of aggression against the self occur daily and less dramatically in the lives of ordinary men and women.

He who hates himself, who does not have proper regard for his own capacities, powers, compassions, actually can have no respect for others. Deep within himself he will hate his brothers when he sees in them his own marred image. Love for oneself is the foundation of a brotherly society and personal peace of mind. By loving oneself I do not mean coddling oneself, indulging in vanity, conceit, self-glorification. I do, however, insist on the necessity of a proper self-regard as a prerequisite of the good and the moral life.

Psychology reveals the underlying causes of false self-love and destructive self-hatred. Religion, allied with psychology, can demonstrate just what true self-regard means.

Theoretically, religion has always been concerned with the achievement of true self-love. It eternally proclaims the value of every human personality, the sanctity of every man. But it has been strangely impotent to implement that sanctity. All the streets of the world are teeming with men and women who mutilate themselves spiritually and mentally in the invisible ways of self-criticism and self-degradation. . . .

It is important that all of us become wise enough to recognize where we go astray in our attitudes toward ourselves and how we become enslaved to false notions of what we are and what we ought to be. Some of us think we are loving ourselves when we are really strangling or suffocating ourselves with morbid self-concern. We maintain a cruel contempt for our own capabilities and virtues or become unconscious victims of a paralyzing egocentricity. When we



free ourselves from that false self-love which is narcissism, that destructive self-hatred which is masochism, we become for the first time integrated enough to become friendly with ourselves and with others. We are on the road to proper self-love. Such self-love implies many things, but above everything else it is rooted in self-respect. And no man or woman can have self-respect unless he has learned the art of renunciation and the equally vital art of self-acceptance.\*

Joshua Loth Liebman, 1907-. Jewish Rabbi, educator.  
*Peace of Mind.*

### The Obstacles in the Personal Unconscious

The true self-sacrifice is the one that sacrifices the hidden thing in the self which would work harm to ourselves and to others. It is an effort to become more and more conscious of all the forces in the unconscious, of the unworthy personal motives that work underground, as well as the inherited forces, so that our lives shall become more and more full of understanding and of really conscious choice. In this way we do "descend into hell," the depth of the unconscious where lie all those things that would destroy our conscious attitude and which we most fear to face and acknowledge. From such a descent can come a new life if the new understanding is accepted by the individual.

This new life carries on the vital thing which has been born from the old. It often appears in dreams as a child, thus adopting the symbol of the religious concept and giving it form in the rebirth of the individual. Jung, in his dream analysis, calls this the "*puer aeternus*," the ever-living child. In dreams this child often takes on characteristics which symbolize the special need of the individual, and which give a clue to the new adaptation needed in order to further his integration.

Our greatest task is to have the courage to face the thing that rises in us, whether it take the form of doubt which must be thought out, or the knowledge of the unacceptable thing in ourselves with which we must reckon. In this way only can be found the acceptance of greater consciousness.\*

Frances G. Wickes, 1882-. American psychotherapist.  
*The Inner World of Childhood.*

## Reservations

If you really look into the state of things between God and your soul, you will find that there are certain limits beyond which you refuse to go in offering yourself to Him. People often hover around such reservations, making believe not to see them, for fear of self-reproach, guarding them as the apple of the eye. If you were to break down one of these reservations, you would be touched to the quick and inexhaustible in your reasons for self-justification, a very sure proof of the life of evil. The more you shrink from giving up any such reserved point, the more certain it is that it needs to be given up. If you were not fast bound by it, you would not make so many efforts to convince yourself that you are free.

It is but too true that these and the like frailties hinder God's work in us. We move continually in a vicious circle round self, only thinking of God in connection with ourselves, and making no progress in self-renunciation, lowering of pride or attaining simplicity. Why is it that the vessel does not make way? Is the wind wanting? Nowise; The Spirit of Grace breathes on it, but the vessel is bound by invisible anchors in the depths of the sea. The fault is not God's; it is wholly ours. If we will search thoroughly, we shall soon see the hidden bonds which detain us. That point in which we least mistrust ourselves is precisely that which needs most distrust.

François Fénelon, 1651-1715. French Archbishop of Cambray.  
*Spiritual Letters of Archbishop Fénelon*, Trans. H. L. Lear.

## The Unconscious "Guiding Image" as a Major Obstacle

The purpose of every objective function is service to the world. The purpose of every egocentric function is service to the ego. That is why the egocentric, whether he knows it or not, always acts according to self-evaluation. He has an ego-ideal which he strives to attain, a guiding image by which he measures his worth or worthlessness. He judges everything that happens on the basis of whether it brings him nearer this guiding image or not. The nearer he fancies himself, the happier he is; his unhappiness grows with increase in distance.

This guiding image can be variously formed. It may be, "I want to be as rich as Rothschild," or "as famous as Goethe," or "as poor as Francis," or "suffer as much as Christ on the Cross." The ego-ideal is always distinguished by the fact that its possessor tries to make the material world serve him, while the objective human being places himself (*i.e.*, his ego) at the service of the world.

The number of forms in which egocentricity may appear is infinite. A good portion of an understanding of human nature is necessary to ferret it out of all its disguises and hiding places. It is generally easier to discover egocentricity in others than in ourself, for its discovery in others raises our own ego. Everything is easy for us which serves to elevate our secret picture of ourself.

The more egocentric we are, the more distinctly effective in us are the two extreme levels of the ladder of self-evaluation. The wretcheder we feel, the higher lies the level of happiness to which we make claim. The less money we have, the greater the sum which we dream we shall inherit or win in a lottery. The nearer we feel to our ideal, the deeper the level of which we are afraid. The more important a man believes himself, the more irritated he is when he does not receive the customary greeting from a mere mortal.

Characteristic of egocentricity is always the inexorableness of its demands. The ego acts like a monarch who tolerates no contradiction.

Egocentricity without self-deception is not possible. Even he who says, like Richard III, "I am determined to prove a villain," fools not only the world by hiding his weakness in violence; he fools also himself. He conceals from himself the fact that he hates only because he has not the courage to love, and that he says no to the joys of the word because he does not want to say yes to his own suffering. Every egocentric human being deceives himself. Complete insight and egocentricity cannot exist side by side, which is why insight is lessened by egocentricity. It is also why it is possible to discover a little self-deceit in everyone (for everyone is a little egocentric). The more egocentric a person is, however, the more cunningly does he arrange his self-deceit, and the slyer the subterfuges he uses to protect himself

against an unmasking. He feels, without admitting it, that his egocentricity would go to pieces in the face of the truth.\*

Fritz Kunkel, M.D., 1889-. German psychotherapist.  
*Let's Be Normal.*

### Obstacles of "The More Spiritual Self"

There are two shapes assumed by self, the one is gross and material, the self of worldly men, who are forever in pursuit of earthly gain, and of those who, misled by a delusive intellectual pride, affect to be superior to common prejudices, and make a law of their own reason. Nearly all the vices which degrade mankind and afflict the world are the offspring of this grosser self.

But there is another more spiritual self which is peculiar to religious people, the evil of which it would not be easy to describe; how it blights and withers devotion, warping and misdirecting it, and bringing holiness into contempt and ill-repute. Who can tell all the meanness, the weakness, the falls to which it leads; how it fills pious people with fretting scruples, and makes them restless, uneasy, fanciful, capricious, absurd, jealous, censorious, ill-tempered, often intolerable to themselves and others! Who can say how it hinders and thwarts the work of grace. How many noble aims it turns aside, how many good works it poisons, how many faults it disguises till we mistake them for virtues.

The spirit of self, whether it takes a material or a moral shape, has ever the same result, that of utterly blinding us. We fancy that we see and know ourselves truly, but nothing can be a greater delusion; we will not let our eyes be opened, and are vexed with those who attempt the task. All suggestions and remonstrances are attributed either to unkindness or error; however justly fault is found, wounded self-love is irritable and intolerant of the slightest touch. On the same principle we feel perfectly competent to decide everything for ourselves, and even those whose office it is to advise us. Self-love thinks no guide wise who will not soothe and flatter it; and he who asks of us the submission of our own opinion and will stand a chance of being forsaken as depriving the conscience of liberty. Tell us, when under the influence of this dangerous enemy self, that

we must resist it, and conquer our dislikes, try to open our eyes to our pet faults, point out the hollowness of our motives, ask any sacrifice of us, and we start away at once from the intolerable yoke. Excuses without end are at hand; we are misunderstood, it is all exaggeration or mistake, in short everybody is wrong save ourselves. But all the time there can be no real holiness without the destruction of this odious self.\*

Jean Nicholas Grou, 1731-1803. French Catholic priest.  
*The Hidden Life*

### Self-Conceit

You have spent all your life in the belief that you are wholly devoted to others, and never self-seeking. Nothing so feeds self-conceit as this sort of internal testimony that one is quite free from self-love, and always generously devoted to one's neighbors. But all this devotion which seems to be for others is really to yourself. Your self-love reaches the point of perpetual self-congratulation that you are free from it; all your sensitiveness is lest you might not be fully satisfied with self; this is at the root of all your scruples. You may prove it by your indifference to the faults of others: if you thought of nothing save God and His Glory, you would be as keen and sensitive to others' losses as to your own. But it is the "I" which makes you so keen and sensitive. You want God as well as man to be always satisfied with you, and you want to be satisfied with yourself in all your dealings with God.

It is mere self-love to be inconsolable at seeing one's own imperfections; but to stand face to face with them, neither flattering nor tolerating them—this is to desire what is good for its own sake, and for God's, rather than merely treating it as a self-satisfying decoration.\*

François Fénelon, 1651-1715. French Archbishop of Cambray.

### Want of Consecration

Anything cherished in the heart which is contrary to the will of God, let it seem ever so insignificant, or be ever so deeply hidden, will cause us to fall before our enemies. Any conscious root of bitterness cherished toward another, any self-seeking, any harsh judg-

ments, any slackness in obeying the voice of the Lord, any doubtful habits or surrounding—these things or any one of them, consciously indulged, will effectually cripple and paralyze our spiritual life. We may have hidden the evil in the most remote corner of our hearts, and may have covered it over from our sight, refusing even to recognize its existence, although we cannot help being all the time secretly aware that it is there. We may steadily ignore it, and persist in declarations of consecration and full trust; we may be more earnest than ever in our religious duties, and have the eyes of our understanding opened more and more to the truth and the beauty of life and walk of faith. We may seem to ourselves and to others to have reached an almost impregnable position of victory, and yet we may find ourselves suffering bitter defeats. We may wonder, and question, and despair, and pray. Nothing will do any good until the wrong thing is dug up from its hiding-place, brought out to the light, and laid before God.

The moment, therefore, that a believer who is walking in this interior life meets with a defeat, he must at once seek for the cause, not in the strength of that particular enemy, but in something behind—some hidden want of consecration lying at the very centre of his being.\*

Hannah Whitehall Smith, 1832-1911. American Quaker.  
*The Christian's Secret of a Happy Life.*

### Hiding from Truth

This is the happy life which all desire, to joy in the truth all men desire. Why then joy they not in it? Why are they not happy? Because they are more strongly taken up with other things which have more power to make them miserable, than that which they so faintly remember to make them happy. For there is yet a little light in men; let them walk, let them walk, that the darkness overtake them not.

But why doth "truth generate hatred," and the man of thine, preaching the truth, become an enemy to them? whereas a happy life is loved, which is nothing else but joying in the truth. They love truth when she enlightens, they hate her when she reproves. For since they would not be deceived, and would deceive, they love

her, when she discovers herself unto them, and hate her, when she discovers them. Whence she shall so repay them, that they who would not be made manifest by her, she both against their will makes manifest, and her self becometh not manifest unto them. Thus, thus, yea thus doth the mind of man, thus blind and sick, foul and ill-favoured, wish to be hidden, but that aught should be hidden from it, it wills not. But the contrary is requited it, that itself should not be hidden from the Truth; but the Truth is hid from it. Yet even thus miserable, it has rather joy in truths than in falsehoods. Happy then will man be, when, no distraction interposing, he shall joy in that only Truth, by Whom all things are true.

All consult Thee on what they will, though they hear not always what they will. He is Thy best servant, who looks not so much to hear that from Thee, which himself willeth; as rather to will that, which from Thee he heareth.\*-\*\*\*

Saint Augustine, 354-430. Latin church Father, early mystic.  
*Confessions*, Trans. E. B. Pusey.

Most of our conflicts and difficulties come from trying to deal with the spiritual and practical aspects of our life separately instead of realising them as parts of one whole. If our practical life is centered on our own interests, cluttered up by possessions, distracted by ambitions, passions, wants and worries, beset by a sense of our own rights and importance, or anxieties for our own future, or longings for our own success, we need not expect that our spiritual life will be a contrast to all this. The soul's house is not built on such a convenient plan: there are few sound-proof partitions in it. Only when the conviction—not merely the idea—that the demand of the Spirit, however inconvenient, comes first and *is* first, rules the whole of it, will those objectionable noises die down which have a way of penetrating into the nicely furnished little oratory, and drowning all the quieter voices by their din.

For a spiritual life is simply a life in which all that we do comes from the centre, where we are anchored in God: a life self-given to the great movement of His will.\*

Evelyn Underhill, 1875-1944. English writer, mystic.  
*The Spiritual Life*.

### Impatience and the Lack of Humility

Why should we be in such desperate haste to succeed, and in such desperate enterprises? If a man does not keep pace with his companions, perhaps it is because he hears a different drummer. Let him step to the music which he hears, however measured or far away. It is not important that he should mature as soon as an apple tree or an oak. Shall he turn his spring into summer? If the condition of things which we were made for is not yet, what were any reality which we can substitute? We will not be shipwrecked on a vain reality. Shall we with pains erect a heaven of blue glass over ourselves, though when it is done we shall be sure to gaze still at the true ethereal heaven far above, as if the former were not?

Do not seek so anxiously to be developed, to subject yourself to many influences to be played on; it is all dissipation. Humility like darkness reveals the heavenly lights. The shadows of poverty and meanness gather around us, "and lo! creation widens to our view." You are then confined to the most significant and vital experiences; you are compelled to deal with the material which yields the most sugar and the most starch. It is life near the bone where it is sweetest.

We are acquainted with a mere pellicle of the globe on which we live. Most have not delved six feet beneath the surface, nor leaped as many above it. We know not where we are. Besides, we are sound asleep nearly half our time. Yet we esteem ourselves wise, and have an established order on the surface. Truly, we are deep thinkers, we are ambitious spirits! As I stand over the insect crawling amid the pine needles on the forest floor, and endeavoring to conceal itself from my sight, and ask myself why it will cherish those humble thoughts and hide its head from me who might, perhaps, be its benefactor, I am reminded of the greater Benefactor and Intelligence that stands over me, the human insect.\*-\*\*

Henry David Thoreau, 1817-1862. American philosopher.  
*Walden.*

With the double-minded one, it is thus clear that time and eternity cannot rule in the same man. He can, but he will not, understand the Good's slowness; that out of mercy, the Good is slow; that out of love for free persons, it will not use force; that in



its wisdom toward the frail ones, it shrinks from any deception. He can, but he will not, humbly understand that the Good can get on without him. He is double-minded, he that with his enthusiasm could apparently become an apostle, but can quite as readily become a Judas, who teacherously wishes to hasten the victory of the Good. He is scandalized, he that by his enthusiasm seems to love the Good so highly. He is scandalized by its poverty, when it is clothed in the slowness of time. He is not devoted to the Good in service that may profit nothing. He only effervesces, and he that effervesces loves the moment. And he that loves the moment fears time, he fears that the course of time will reveal his double-mindedness, and he falsifies eternity; for otherwise eternity might still more effectively reveal his double-mindedness. He is a falsifier. For him eternity is the deceptive sensory illusion of the horizon; for him eternity is the bluish haze that limits time; for him eternity is the dazzling sleight-of-hand trick executed by the moment.

Such a double-minded person is perhaps hardly recognizable in this world, because his double-mindedness is not evident inside the world. The world's reward and punishment do not serve as informers against him; for he has overcome the world, even if by a higher deception. Hence his double-mindedness is first recognizable at the boundary where time and eternity touch upon each other. There it is clear and is always recognized by the all-knowing One. He will not be content with the blessed assurance which comforts beyond all measure: that eternally the Good has always been victorious; the blessed assurance which is a security that passeth all understanding; the blessed assurance that the unprofitable servant may have within himself at each moment, even when the time is the longest and he seems to have accomplished least of all, the blessed assurance which allows the unprofitable servant if he loses honor to speak more proudly than that royal word: All is lost save honor. And when even honor is lost to say: Nothing is lost, but all is gained.

But this double-minded person is not so easily recognizable on earth. He does not will the Good for the sake of reward, for then he would have become obvious in his aspiration or in his despair. He does not will the Good out of fear of punishment, for then he would

have become obvious in his cowardice, in his shunning of punishment, or in his despair, when he was not able to avoid it. No, he wishes to sacrifice himself in daily self-forgetfulness. This he fears to do.\*

Soren Kierkegaard, 1813-1855. Danish philosopher.  
*Purity of Heart*, Trans. Douglas Steere.

O! wait to be taught and enabled by God to fetch right steps in thy travels. The Lord show thee the snares and dangers to which thou art liable, and lead thee out of them; that whatever hindereth may be discovered to thee, and thy mind singly joined to that which discovereth, that so it may be removed out of the way; and all crooked things be made straight in thee, and the rough plain, and the high low, and the low high, and the weak and foolish strong and wise, and the wise and strong weak and foolish.

Thou must be very low, weak, and foolish, that the seed may arise in thee to exalt thee, and become thy strength and wisdom; and thou must die exceedingly, again and again, more and more, inwardly and deeply! that thy life may spring up from the holy root and stock; and thou mayest be more and more gathered into it, spring up into it, and live alone in the life, virtue, and power thereof. The travel is long, the exercises many, the snares, temptations, and dangers many; and yet the mercy, relief, and help, is great also.

O! that thou mayest feel thy calling and election, thy sinking down, springing up, and establishment, in the pure seed, in the light and righteousness thereof over all; that thou mayest sing songs of degrees to the Redeemer of Israel, and mayest daily more and more partake of and rejoice in him, who is our joy, and the crown thereof.

Isaac Pennington, 1616-1679. English Quaker.  
*Letters of Isaac Pennington*.

## ROLE OF SUFFERING AND CRISIS <sup>12</sup>

We suffer, yet do not allow the mission of suffering to be accomplished in us. I pray the Lord that we may none of us fall into that torpid state in which our crosses do us no good.

François Fénelon, 1651-1715. French Archbishop of Cambray.  
*Spiritual Letters of Archbishop Fénelon*, Trans. H. L. Lear.

<sup>12</sup> See Role of Pressure under Self-Knowledge, Chapter II.

He who dreams must be awakened, and the deeper the man is who slumbers, or the deeper he slumbers, the more important it is that he be awakened, and the more powerfully must he be awakened. In case there is nothing that awakens the youth, this dream-life is continued in manhood. The man doubtless thinks that he is dreaming no more, and in a sense he is not; perhaps he scorns and despises the dreams of youth, but precisely this shows that his life is a failure. In a sense he is awake, yet he is not in an eternal sense and in the deepest sense awake. And so his life is something far less significant than that of the youth, and it is his life rather which deserves to be despised; for he has become an unfruitful tree, or like a tree which has died, whereas the life of youth verily is not to be despised. The dream-life of childhood and youth is the time of blossoming. But in the case of a tree which is to bear fruit, the time of blossoming is a time of immaturity. It may indeed seem like retrogression when the tree which once stood naked and then burst into bloom, now casts off its blossoms; but it also may be progress. Fair is the time of blossoms, and fair is the blossoming hope in the child and in the youth; and yet it is immaturity.

Then comes affliction to awaken the dreamer, affliction which like a storm tears off the blossoms, affliction which nevertheless does not bereave of hope, but recruits hope.

Affliction is able to drown out every earthly voice, that is precisely what it has to do, but the voice of eternity within a man it cannot drown. Or conversely: it is the voice of eternity within which demands to be heard, and to make a hearing for itself it makes use of the loud voice of affliction. Then when by the aid of affliction all irrelevant voices are brought to silence, it can be heard, this voice within.

O thou sufferer, whosoever thou art, if only thou wilt listen! People generally think that it is the world, the environment, external relationships, which stand in one's way, in the way of one's good fortune and peace and joy. And at bottom it is always man himself that stands in his own way, man himself, who is too closely attached to the world, to the environment, to circumstances, to external relationships, so that he is not able to come to himself, come to rest,

to have hope, he is constantly too much turned outward, instead of being turned inward, hence everything he says is true only as an illusion of the senses.

*For Affliction Recruits Hope.* It does not bestow hope, but it recruits it. It is man himself who acquires it, this hope of eternity which is deposited in him, hidden in his inner man; but affliction recruits it. For affliction prevents him mercilessly from obtaining any other help or relief whatsoever; affliction compels him mercilessly to let go of everything else; affliction schools him mercilessly, schools him thoroughly, that he may learn to grasp the eternal and to hold on to the eternal. Affliction does not help directly, it is not affliction that acquires or purchases hope and makes a present of it to a man; it helps repellently, and can do no otherwise, because hope is in man himself. Affliction preaches awakening. Affliction is no congratulatory caller who comes bearing hope in his hand as a present. Affliction is the villain who cruelly says to the sufferer, "I shall recruit hope for thee all right." But as it always is in life, that he who has to play the villain is never appreciated, that nobody takes the time to put himself in the villain's place and to recognize how admirably he plays his part and conforms to his role, how admirably, without letting himself be moved by any sighs or tears or ingratiating prayers—so it is also with affliction, it always has to hear itself spoken ill of. But just as little as it troubles the physician that the sick man in his pain scolds and clamours, or even kicks at him, just so little is affliction put out at this; God be praised, it is not put out—it recruits hope. Just as Christianity, precisely by all that unappreciation and persecution and injustice which the truth must suffer, proves that righteousness must exist (oh, marvellous inference!), so there is in the extremity of affliction, when it presses hardest, this inference, this ergo: Ergo there is an eternity to set one's hope upon.

Imagine hidden in a simpler exterior a secret receptacle wherein the most precious treasure is deposited—there is a spring which has to be pressed, but the spring is hidden, and the pressure must have a certain strength, so that an accidental pressure would not be sufficient—so likewise is the hope of eternity hidden in man's in-

most parts, and affliction is the pressure. When it presses the hidden spring, and strongly enough, then the contents appear in all their glory.

Soren Kierkegaard, 1813-1855. Danish philosopher.  
*Christian Discourses*. Trans. Walter Lowrie.

It must be remembered that even though the Ego is the individual's inaccurate conception of himself, it seems to him to be what he is.

It follows that all the thinking and striving of the egocentric person is basically concerned with avoiding all damage to his cherished Ego—his Seeming-self. He constantly fights against the breakdown of his Ego because its collapse seems to him to mean the destruction of his very Self, but even by these defensive efforts he inevitably brings about that breakdown which he dreads most. This is the result of the so-called vicious circle.

In his consciousness the egocentric person may feel that he is rather secure and successful, but unconsciously he feels that some critical moment for his Ego is close at hand. Being increasingly cut off by his egocentricity from the We—the source of real life—he suffers from a lack of inner psychic vitality and becomes less and less creative. This makes him insecure and anxious first in his unconscious and then more and more in his conscious mind.

Seemingly inexplicable inferiority feelings, irritability, sensitiveness and other signs of increasing "nervousness" always stand out more distinctly. The more the individual comes to feel that egocentric goals probably will not be attained, the more he seems to attach value to them, and now he strives for them more than ever. The unconscious anxiety whispers to him more distinctly in the form of bad dreams, melancholic or troubled moods or even as physical disturbances. At last they speak out loud, and mercilessly say that, in spite of all endeavour and apparent success, he has really failed. Life is passing. Perhaps much has already gone, but he has not yet really lived.

But now these symptoms which seemed to be bad and inimical, namely, this anxiety or guilt, prove themselves to be helpful and

friendly, for they intrude themselves in order to bring healing by awakening this living yet unalive person. They are the voice of this life which is not lived, and their force is the power of life itself. They are the messengers of the We which represents this power of life, even within the egocentric mind.

Fritz Kunkel, M.D., German psychotherapist, and Roy E. Dickerson, American author.  
*How Character Develops.*

Affliction is a treasure, and scarce any man hath enough of it. No man hath affliction enough that is not matured, and ripened by it, and made fit for God by that affliction. If a man carry treasure in bullion, or in a wedge of gold, and have none coined into currant Monies, his treasure will not defray him as he travells. Tribulation is Treasure in the nature of it, but it is not currant money in the use of it, except wee get nearer and nearer our home, Heaven, by it. Another man may be sicke too, and sick to death, and this affliction may lie in his bowels, as gold in a Mine, and be of no use to him; but this bell, that tells me of his affliction, digs out, and applies that gold to mee: if by this consideration of another's danger, I take mine owne into contemplation, and so secure my selfe by making my recourse to my God, who is our onely securitie.

John Donne, 1573-1631. English poet, divine.  
*Devotions upon Emergent Occasions.*

At first one passes some time in suffering from things which seem to come from other persons, or from circumstances outside oneself. Gradually one finds a great part (or all) one's troubles are in oneself!

When we come to know that our whole environment and everything that happens is God's hand upon us, and that we are in touch with Him at every moment, because every detail of life is a means arranged by Him to lead us to Himself; then we find that our great trouble is self. Only the very top, or very centre, or very ground (as you please—these are metaphors), of our soul is quite united to God; and all the rest is horribly unquiet, and makes us miserable. This is an unavoidable process of "purification," or Purgatory!

We used to think we were good—now we know we are not.

We suffer from this, and, as we realise our imperfections more and more, we seem to be going backwards. Only we have got to be resigned to seeing these imperfections. We must not make light of them, in the sense of not hating them; but it is quite good to laugh at them. The more we ridicule ourselves the better, as we see our constant failures.

It is not possible to make sensible "acts of contrition" for sins and imperfections which are not voluntary, or only partly voluntary. If we try, we only feel dry, and that we can't. So it is better to make "acts of humility": (1) either laughing at ourselves, for our failures, carelessness, want of love and so forth; or (2) say, "You see, O Lord, how silly I am—this is all you can expect!"; or (3) "I am delighted to see how imperfect I am—reveal more to me of my wretchedness."

We say of course: "You see what I am, without Your grace." Only don't think God is not giving you a great deal of grace. It is an enormous grace to be left to be conscious of our own want of recollection and want of energy.

Hence this second state consists in a continual perception that we are wanting; that we are careless, half-hearted, *etc.*

Consequently the earlier stage was much more comfortable; but, on looking back, we see it was a half-truth, or a tenth-truth!

The first stage: "I feel I habitually am doing and suffering God's Will in everything."

The second stage: "But I see this is only half-hearted and not thorough."

The third stage: "Habitually I perceive that I am never really doing and suffering God's Will, except most miserably and imperfectly; and I am, therefore, habitually miserable about it."

Consequently we begin to realise that we can only get union with God by very unpleasant suffering, and not by very enjoyable feelings! I gather from your letter that you are making real progress. All progress in virtue is progress in humility—knowledge of our own wretchedness.

Only try to enjoy knowing it! Thank God for showing it to you, and long to see it more and more.

(Only of *course* don't dwell upon it. All this introspection is unavoidable, but the shorter it is, the better.)

Fervour consists in dissatisfaction with ourselves—provided we also have confidence in God. He never takes us by the way we should expect. So do not worry, but accept all your imperfections—when past or present—as inevitable, and use them as steps up. But future ones are neither to be wished for, nor to be worried about.

Dom John Chapman, O.S.B., 1865–1933. English, Biblical and Patristic Scholar.  
*Spiritual Letters of Dom John Chapman.*

Our greatest hope is in this, that suffering is there. It is the language of imperfection. Its very utterance carries in it the trust in the perfect, like the baby's cry which would be dumb if it had no faith in the mother. This suffering has driven man with his prayer knocking at the gate of the infinite in him, the divine, thus revealing his deepest instinct, his unreasoning faith in the reality of the ideal—the faith shown in the readiness for death, in the renunciation of all that belongs to the self. God's life is also abroad in his career of freedom. When the discord rings out, man cries—“*asato ma sad gamaya.*” Help me to pass through the unreal to the real. It is the surrender of his self to be tuned for the music of the soul. This surrender is waited for, because the spiritual harmony cannot be effected except through freedom. Therefore man's willing surrender to the infinite is the commencement of the union. Only then can God's love fully act upon man's soul through the medium of freedom. This surrender is our soul's free choice of its life of cooperation with God—cooperation in the work of the perfect moulding of the world of law into the world of love.

Rabindranath Tagore, 1861–1941. Indian poet, dramatist, novelist.  
*Personality.*

Even if we have to face the utmost negative possibility, death, or what may be really worse than death, chronic sickness, imprisonment, accidental injuries, we must understand that life includes these possibilities and that an apparently harmless decision may bring about such a terrible thing. Should we shun, therefore, every



decision? Would it be better to close our eyes to all the perils of life and to enjoy the present moment as long as it is possible?

The too superficial person, as well as the too scrupulous one, is not able to face real life. All escape from crisis leads into more serious crises, and the only way out is to learn how to endure life as it is, including all its terrible dangers as well as its wonderful gifts. . . .

It is human to go through negative experiences, disappointments and frustrations. It is one of the ways leading us to maturity. Indeed, it is the opportunity to become *We-feeling*, objective, creative. . . .

We should find in our own past one or two small experiences which give us the assurance, at least in subsequent analysis, that the abyss, the dark situation which we fear more than death, can be faced daringly and confidently—and that it proves then to be the door leading us to objectivity and creativeness. Fear of failure, frustration, defeat and at last even fear of death has to be faced, explored, lived through, in vivid imagination. Gradually all the “perils of the soul,” all catastrophies of life, lose their terrifying aspects, though certain very serious results from them may still remain. They become parts of human life, and we learn to think of them without anxiety. Fear of death disappears and religious confidence develops the more, the more we discover the deepest values of life, understanding that human life tends to lead us into maturity of character, *We-feeling* units of individuals and the creative development of personality.

The more we realize that this is true, the less we are afraid of making mistakes and the more we are able to make creative decisions. Then our courage and confidence increase through favourable experiences. Our readiness to take risk and responsibility grows. Life becomes fuller, richer, more successful and our confidence increases. The deeper meaning of human life, the meta-physical goals of history and culture become almost perceptible, though it may not be possible to formulate any statement about them. A new kind of security and confidence is felt—a confidence that does not need guarantees, that is based simply on our growing inner experience. This is in accordance with the experience of many religious per-

sonalities. Out of this experience may one day arise the highest value of our life—real, living, efficient faith.\*

Fritz Kunkel, M.D., German psychotherapist, and Roy E. Dickerson, American author.  
*How Character Develops.*

I should like this to be accepted as my confession. There is no limit to human suffering. When one thinks: "Now I have touched the bottom of the sea—now I can go no deeper," one goes deeper. And so it is for ever. I thought last year in Italy, any shadow more would be death. But this year has been so much more terrible that I think with affection of the Casetta! Suffering is boundless, it is eternity. One pang is eternal torment. Physical suffering is—child's play. To have one's breast crushed by a great stone—one could laugh!

I do not want to die without leaving a record of my belief that suffering can be overcome. For I do believe it. What must one do? There is no question of what is called "passing beyond it." This is false.

One must submit. Do not resist. Take it. Be overwhelmed. Accept it fully. Make it part of life.

Everything in life that we really accept undergoes a change. So suffering must become Love. This is the mystery. This is what I must do. I must pass from personal love to greater love. I must give to the whole of life what I gave to one. The present agony will pass—if it doesn't kill. It won't last. Now I am like a man who has had his heart torn out—but—bear it—bear it! As in the physical world, so in the spiritual world, pain does not last forever. It is only so terribly acute now. It is as though a ghastly accident had happened. If I can cease reliving all the shock and horror of it, cease going over it, I will get stronger.

Here, for a strange reason, rises the figure of Doctor Sorapure. He was a good man. He helped me not only to bear pain, but he suggested that perhaps bodily ill-health is necessary, is a repairing process, and he was always telling me to consider how man plays but a part in the history of the world. My simple kindly doctor was pure of heart as Tchekov was pure of heart. But for these ills one is

one's own doctor. If "suffering" is not a repairing process, I will make it so. I will learn the lesson it teaches. These are not idle words. These are not the consolations of the sick.

Life is a mystery. The fearful pain will fade. I must turn to work. I must put my agony into something, change it. "Sorrow shall be changed into joy."

It is to lose oneself more utterly, to love more deeply, to feel one-self part of life—not separate.

Oh Life! accept me—make me worthy—teach me.\*

Katherine Mansfield, 1890-1923. English writer, critic.  
*Journal of Katherine Mansfield.*

### God's Crosses Safer Than Self-Chosen Crosses

The crosses which we make for ourselves by over-anxiety as to the future are not Heaven-sent crosses. We tempt God by our false wisdom, seeking to forestall His arrangements, and struggling to supplement His Providence by our own provisions. The fruit of our wisdom is always bitter. God suffers it to be so that we may be discomfited when we forsake His Fatherly guidance. The future is not ours: we may never have a future; or, if it comes, it may be wholly different to all we foresaw. Let us shut our eyes to that which God hides from us in the hidden depths of His Wisdom. Let us worship without seeing; let us be silent and lie still.

The crosses actually laid upon us always bring their own special grace and consequent comfort with them; we see the Hand of God when It is laid upon us. But the crosses wrought by anxious foreboding are altogether beyond God's dispensations; we meet them without the special grace adapted to the need—nay, rather in a faithless spirit, which precludes grace. And so everything seems hard and unendurable; all seems dark, helpless, and the soul which indulged in inquisitively tasting forbidden fruit finds nought save hopeless rebellion and death within. All this comes of not trusting to God, and prying into His hidden ways. "Sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof," our Lord has said, and the evil of each day becomes good if we leave it to God. Let us throw self aside, and then God's

Will, unfolding hour by hour, will content us as to all He does in or around us. The contradictions of men, their inconstancy, their very injustice, will be seen to be the results of God's Wisdom, Justice, and unfailing Goodness; we shall see nought save that Infinitely Good God hidden behind the weakness of blind, sinful men. Let us be glad when our Heavenly Father tries us with sundry inward or outward temptations; when He surrounds us with external contrarieties and internal sorrow, let us rejoice, for thus our faith is tried as gold in the fire. What! shall we be disheartened while God's Hand is hastening His work? We are perpetually calling on Him to do it, and so soon as He begins we are troubled, our cowardice and impatience hinder Him. I said that in the trials of life we learn the hollowness and falseness of all that is not God—hollowness, because there is nothing real where the One Sole Good is not; and falseness, because the world promises, kindles hopes, but gives nought save vanity and sorrow of heart—above all, in high places. Unreality must be unreal everywhere, but in high places it is all the worse because it is more decorated; it excites desire, kindles hope, and can never fill the heart. That which is itself empty cannot fill another. All that is not God will be found to be vanity and falsehood, and consequently we find them in ourselves. What is so vain as our own heart? With what delusions do we not deceive ourselves? Happy he who is thoroughly undeceived, but our heart is as vain and false as the outer world; we must not despise that without despising ourselves. We are even worse than the world, because we have received greater things from God.\*

François Fénelon, 1651-1715. French Archbishop of Cambray.  
*Spiritual Letters of Archbishop Fénelon*, Trans. H. L. Lear.

### The Everlasting No—to the Everlasting Yea

I seemed to have nothing given me but eyes, whereby to discern my own wretchedness. . . . To me the Universe was all void of Life, of Purpose, of Volition, even of Hostility: it was one huge, dead, immeasurable Steam-engine, rolling on, in its dead indifference, to grind me limb from limb. So had it lasted, as in bitter protracted Death-agony, through long years. Having no hope, neither had I

any definite fear, were it of Man or of Devil: and yet, strangely enough, I lived in a continual, indefinite, pining fear: apprehensive of I know not what.

Full of such humor, and perhaps the miserablest man in the whole French capitol or suburbs, was I, one sultry Dogday, toiling along the dirty little *Rue Saint-Thomas de l'Enfer*, when, all at once, there rose a Thought in me, and I asked myself: "What *art* thou afraid of? Despicable biped! what is the sum-total of the worst that lies before thee? Death? Well, Death; and say the pangs of Tophet, too, and all that the Devil and Man may, will, or can do against thee! Hast thou not a heart; canst thou not suffer whatsoever it be; and, as a Child of Freedom, though outcast, trample Tophet itself under thy feet, while it consumes thee? Let it come, then; I will meet it and defy it!" Then was it that my whole *me* stood up, in native God-created majesty, and with emphasis recorded its Protest. The Everlasting No had said: "Behold, thou art fatherless, outcast, and the Universe is mine (the Devil's)"; to which my whole *me* now made answer: "I am not thine, but Free, and forever hate thee!"

It is from this hour that I incline to date my Spiritual New-birth; perhaps I directly thereupon began to be a Man. . . .

The hot Harmattan wind had raged itself out; its howl went silent within me; and the long-deafened soul could now hear. I paused in my wild wanderings; and set me down to wait, and consider; for it was as if the hour of change drew nigh. I seemed to surrender, to renounce utterly, and say: "Fly, then, false shadows of Hope; I will chase you no more, I will believe you no more. And ye too, haggard spectres of Fear, I care not for you; ye too are all shadows and a lie. Let me rest here: for I am way-weary and life-weary; I will rest here, were it but to die; to die or to live is alike insignificant." Here, then, as I lay in that *centre of indifference*, cast, doubtless, by benignant upper Influence, in a healing sleep, the heavy dreams rolled gradually away, and I woke to a new Heaven and a new Earth. The first preliminary moral Act, Annihilation of Self (*Selbst-todtung*), had been happily accomplished; and my mind's eyes were now unsealed, and its hands ungyved.

*The Everlasting Yea*

Beautiful it was to sit there, as in my skyey Tent, musing and meditating; on the high table-land, in front of the Mountains; over me, as a roof, the azure Dome, and around me, four walls, four azure-flowing curtains, namely, of the Four azure Winds . . . O, Nature! Art not thou the "Living Garment of God"? O, Heavens, is it, in very deed, *He*, then, that ever speaks through thee; that lives and loves in me?

Fore-shadows, call them rather fore-splendors, of that Truth, and Beginning of Truths, fell mysteriously over my soul. With other eyes, too, could I now look upon my fellow-men: with an infinite love, and infinite Pity—Poor, wandering, wayward man! Art thou not tried, and beaten with stripes, even as I am? . . . The poor Earth, with her poor joys, was now my needy Mother, not my cruel Stepdame; Man, with his so mad Wants and so mean Endeavors, had become the dearer to me; and even for his sufferings and his sins, I now first named him Brother. Thus was I standing in the porch of that "*Sanctuary of Sorrow*"; by strange, steep ways had I too been guided thither; and ere long its sacred gates would open, and the "*Divine Depth of Sorrow*" lie disclosed to me.

A vain, interminable controversy touching what is at present called Origin of Evil, or some such thing, arises in every soul, that would pass from idle Suffering into actual Endeavoring, must first be put an end to . . . In each era such Solution comes out in different terms; and ever the solution of the last era has become obsolete, and is found unserviceable. For it is man's nature to change his Dialect from century to century; he cannot help it though he would . . . for my own private behoof, I attempt to elucidate the matter so. Man's Unhappiness, as I construe, comes of his Greatness; it is because there is an Infinite in him, which with all his cunning he cannot quite bury under the Finite. Will the whole Finance Ministers and Upholsterers and Confectioners of modern Europe undertake, in joint stock company, to make one Shoebblack *happy*? They cannot accomplish it, above an hour or two. . . . Always there is a black spot in our sunshine: it is even, as I said, the *Shadow of Ourselves*.

So true is it, what I then said, that *the Fraction of Life can be in-*

*creased in value not so much by increasing your Numerator as by lessening your Denominator.* Nay, unless my Algebra deceive me, *Unity* itself divided by *Zero* will give *Infinity*. Make thy claim of wages a zero, then; thou hast the world under thy feet. Well did the Wisest of our time write: "It is only with Renunciation (*Entsagen*) that Life, properly speaking, can be said to begin."

I asked myself: "What is this that, ever since earliest years, thou hast been fretting and fuming, and lamenting and self-tormenting on account of? Say it in a word: is it not because thou art not *happy*? Because the *thou* (sweet gentleman) is not sufficiently honored, nourished, soft-bedded and lovingly cared for? Foolish soul!" . . .

*Es leuchtet mir ein*, I see a glimpse of it! There is in man a *higher* than Love of Happiness: he can do without Happiness, and instead thereof find Blessedness! Was it not to preach forth this same *higher* that sages and martyrs, the Poet and the Priest, in all times, have spoken and suffered; bearing testimony, through life and through death, of the Godlike that is in Man, and how in the Godlike only has he Strength and Freedom? Which God-inspired Doctrine art thou also honored to be taught; O Heavens! and broken with manifold merciful Afflictions, even till thou become contrite and learn it! O, thank thy Destiny for these, thankfully bear what yet remain: thou hadst need of them; the Self in thee needed to be annihilated. By benignant fever-paroxysms is Life rooting out the deep-seated chronic Disease, and triumphs over Death. On the roaring billows of Time, thou art not engulfed, but borne aloft into the azure of Eternity. Love not Pleasure; love God. This is the *Everlasting Yea*, wherein all contradiction is solved: wherein who so walks and works, it is well with him.\*-\*\*

Thomas Carlyle, 1795-1881. Scottish essayist, historian, philosopher.  
*Sartor Resartus.*

## MEETING OF TEMPTATION AND FAILURE

Defeat must necessarily split attention and create unhappiness, unless in some way it is possible, in the pursuit of definite ends, to combine an unlimited attachment with an unlimited detachment.

William Ernest Hocking, 1873-. American philosopher.  
*The Meaning of God in Human Experience.*

Victorious living does not mean freedom from temptation. Nor does it mean freedom from mistakes. We are personalities in the making, limited and grappling with things too high for us. Obviously, we, at very best, will make many mistakes. But these mistakes need not be sins. Our actions are the result of our intentions and our intelligence. Our intentions may be very good, but because the intelligence is limited the action may turn out to be a mistake—a mistake, but not necessarily a sin. For sin comes out of a wrong intention. Therefore the action carries a sense of incompleteness and frustration, but not of guilt. Victorious living does not mean perfect living in the sense of living without flaw, but it does mean adequate living, and that can be consistent with many mistakes.

Nor does it mean maturity. It does mean a cleansing away of things that keep from growth, but it is not full growth. In addition to many mistakes in our lives, there will be many immaturities. Purity is not maturity. This gospel of ours is called the Way. Our feet are on that Way, but only on that Way; we have not arrived at the goal.

Nor does it mean that we may not occasionally lapse into a wrong act, which may be called a sin. At that point we may have lost a skirmish, but it doesn't mean we may not still win the battle. We may even lose a battle and still win the war. One of the differences between a sheep and a swine is that when a sheep falls into a mud-hole it bleats to get out, while the swine loves it and wallows in it. In saying that an occasional lapse is consistent with victorious living I am possibly opening the door to provide for such lapses. This is dangerous and weakening. There must be no such provision in the mind. There must be an absoluteness about the whole thing. But nevertheless victorious living can be consistent with occasional failure.

E. Stanley Jones, 1884—. American, Christian missionary to India, author.  
*Victorious Living.*

My son, if thou come to serve the Lord,  
Prepare thy soul for temptation.  
Set thy heart aright, and constantly endure,  
And make not haste in time of trouble.



Cleave unto him, and depart not away,  
That thou mayest be increased at thy last end.  
Whatsoever is brought upon thee take cheerfully,  
And be patient when thou art changed to a low estate.  
For gold is tried in the fire,  
And acceptable men in the furnace of adversity.  
Believe in him, and he will help thee;  
Order thy way aright, and trust in him.

Ecclesiasticus. About the second century B.C.  
From the *Apocrypha*.

Most men have a dual interpretation of themselves—two pictures of their two selves in separate rooms. In one room are hung all of the portraits of their virtues, done in bright, splashing, glorious colors, but with no shadows and no balance. In the other room hangs the canvas of self-condemnation.

Instead of keeping these two pictures isolated from one another, we must look at them together and gradually blend them into one. In our exalted moods we are afraid to admit guilt, hatred, and shame as elements of our personality; and in our depressed moods we are afraid to credit ourselves with the goodness and the achievement which really are ours.

We must begin now to draw a new portrait and accept and know ourselves for what we are. We are relative, and not absolute, creatures; everything we do is tinged with imperfection. So often people foolishly try to become rivals of God and make demands of themselves which only God could make of Himself—rigid demands of absolute perfection. . . .

A splendid freedom awaits us when we realize that we need not feel like moral lepers or emotional pariahs because we have some aggressive, hostile thoughts and feelings toward ourselves and others. When we acknowledge these feelings we no longer have to pretend to be that which we are not. We discover that rigid pride is actually the supreme foe of inner victory, while flexible humility, the kind of humility that appears when we do not demand the impossible or the angelic of ourselves, is the great ally of psychic peace.

We should learn to rejoice in the truth that we human beings consist of a variety of moods, impulses, traits, and emotions. . . .

If we become pluralistic in thinking about ourselves, we shall learn to take the depressed mood or the cruel mood or the unco-operative mood for what it is, one of many, fleeting, not permanent. As pluralists we take ourselves for worse as well as for better, cease demanding a brittle perfection which can lead only to inner despair. There are facets of failure in every person's make-up and there are elements of success. Both must be accepted while we try to emphasize the latter through self-knowledge.\*

Joshua Loth Liebman, 1907-. Jewish Rabbi, educator.  
*Peace of Mind.*

March 21, 1690.

As light increases, we see ourselves to be worse than we thought. We are amazed at our former blindness as we see issuing forth from the depths of our heart a whole swarm of shameful feelings, like filthy reptiles crawling from a hidden cave. We never could have believed that we had harboured such things, and we stand aghast as we watch them gradually appear. But we must neither be amazed nor disheartened. We are not worse than we were; on the contrary, we are better. But while our faults diminish, the light by which we see them waxes brighter, and we are filled with horror. Bear in mind, for your comfort, that we only perceive our malady when the cure begins. So long as there is no sign of cure, we are unconscious of the depth of our disease; we are in a state of blind presumption and hardness; the prey of self-delusion. While we go with the stream, we are unconscious of its rapid course; but when we begin to stem it ever so little, it makes itself felt.

François Fénelon, 1651-1715. French Archbishop of Cambray.  
*Spiritual Letters of Archbishop Fénelon*, Trans. H. L. Lear.

God intends even our faults to set forward the sanctification of our souls, and it rests with ourselves whether they do so or not. Not infrequently we suffer less real injury from a fault itself, than from the way in which we deal with it. I am not now speaking of people who give themselves grudgingly to God, and so commit numberless

deliberate faults, which can in no way be turned to good account. The souls to which I refer are those who, in spite of all their resolutions against sin, are continually committing faults through impetuosity, weakness, or inadvertence. Such people are wont to be greatly surprised and troubled at their faults; they give way to false shame, and become fretful and disheartened. But these are so many signs of self-love, more hurtful to the soul than the original fault. You are surprised at your imperfections—why? I should infer from that, that your self-knowledge is small. Surely you might rather be astonished that you do not fall into more frequent and more grievous faults, and thank God for His upholding Grace. You are worried when you detect a fault, you lose your inward peace, and your disturbance lasts hours or days, as the case may be. This is not right. You should never allow yourself to be disturbed, but when fallen you should rise up quietly, turn with a loving heart to God for forgiveness, and put away the thought of your fault until the proper time comes for self-accusation, then own to it frankly and fully, and do not afterwards be disturbed.

False shame is another besetting evil; perhaps you are afraid fully to own all your faults to another. You are forever saying to yourself, "What will he think of me, after all my promises and resolutions?" But if you own to everything, simply and humbly, you will not lose in the estimation of a true servant of Christ; if he sees that it costs you a severe struggle, he may not improbably attribute your reluctance to pride; and if he sees that you are not quite true in the matter, he will not have full confidence in you.

The worse evil, however, is when we grow vexed at our faults; as St. Francis de Sales says, "We are angry because we have been angry; impatient at having shown impatience." But this is sorry work, and if you will be honest with yourself, you will see that it is altogether pride; you are mortified to find yourself weaker, less holy than you fancied yourself to be; perhaps too your aim was self-satisfaction, you wanted to be able to congratulate yourself on having spent a day or a week free from faults. Then you grow discouraged, you relax your devotional exercises, and begin to look upon perfection as unattainable. "What is the use of such perpetual self-restraint

and watchfulness?" you ask; "What good does all my recollection and mortification do me, if none of my faults is corrected, and I grow no better?" This is neither more nor less than a snare of the devil, and if you would escape it, you must resolve not to be disheartened, but even if you were to fall a hundred times a day, determine to rise up each time, and go onwards. What will it matter though you have fallen by the way, if you reach your journey's end safely at last? God will forgive the falls: they often are caused by undue haste, which prevents us from taking fitting precautions, or with timid souls from a perpetual looking round for imaginary dangers which causes them to stumble. Perhaps the holiest men are not always those who commit the fewest faults, but those who have most courage, most love, and the most free spirit; those who make the heartiest efforts for conquering self and who are not afraid of a stumble, even of a fall, so long as their progress is certain.

Jean Nicholas Grou, 1731-1803. French Catholic priest.  
*The Hidden Life.*

That the greatest pains or pleasures of this world were not to be compared with what he had experienced of both kinds of a spiritual state: so that he was careful for nothing and feared nothing, desiring only one thing of God, viz., that he might not offend Him.

That when he had failed in his duty, he simply confessed his fault, saying to God, I shall never do otherwise, if Thou leavest me to myself; 'tis Thou must hinder my falling, and mend what is amiss. That after this, he gave himself no farther uneasiness about it.

That we ought to act with God in the greatest simplicity, speaking to Him frankly and plainly, and imploring His assistance in our affairs, just as they happen. That God never failed to grant it, as he had often experienced.

That we should not wonder if, in the beginning, we often failed in our endeavours; but that, at last, we should gain a habit, which would naturally produce its acts in us, without our care, and to our exceeding great delight.

That the whole substance of religion was faith, hope, and love; by the practice of which we became united to the will of God; that

all beside is indifferent, and to be used only as a means, that we may arrive at our end, and be swallowed up therein, by faith and love.

That all things are possible to him who believes, that they are less difficult to him who hopes, that they are easier to him who loves, and still more easy to him who preseveres in the practice of these three virtues.\*

Brother Lawrence (Nicholas Herman), 1611-1691. French Carmelite Friar.  
*The Practice of the Presence of God*, Translator unknown.

## PART TWO

# *The Techniques*

It is one thing from the woody top of a mountain to see the land of peace, and not to find the way thither; and another to keep on the way that leads thither.

ST. AUGUSTINE

If we are to have vision, we must learn to participate in the object of the vision. The apprenticeship is hard.

ANTOINE DE ST. EXUPÉRY

# *Contents*

## PART TWO

### *THE TECHNIQUES*

	PAGE
INTRODUCTION	167
CHAPTER	
IV. PRAYER AND MEDITATION	175
General Definitions	176
Value and Function	183
Kinds and Degrees	195
Role of the Spiritual Director	210
Important Aids to Prayer	218
V. PRAYER AND MEDITATION (Continued)	231
Procedures and Patterns	232
Instruction on Discursive Meditation	235
Suggested Patterns for Meditation	247
Brief Instruction for Affective Prayer	277
Difficulties of the Beginner	282
VI. PSYCHOTHERAPY	299
Relation of Psychotherapy and Religion	300
Role of Dream Analysis	309
Some Self-education Procedures	322
VII. FELLOWSHIP	335
VIII. ACTION	349

## PART TWO

### *The Techniques*

Part one enunciated the conditions of the Way trodden by men and women in all ages who have in varying degrees become free and creative in spirit. This Way was seen to demand a transformation of the conscious and unconscious purposes, to require the development of a new focus of attention—based on a redirected will—which would enable discrimination between what is variously designated as the Real and unreal, the permanently valuable and the transiently pleasureable, the meaningful and the trivial, the “things of God” and the “things of the world.” It was seen that such heightened awareness is, in most cases, achieved slowly, and that it generally seems to lead through several stages.

It is during the first stage that the aspirant finds himself in need of every available help. His rate of progress depends upon many factors, among them being the depth and kind of his original experience of commitment to Reality (devotion to the Good), the degree of the rigidity in his unconscious egocentric purposes, and the effectiveness of the techniques which he develops for the maintenance and growth of the new attitude of devotion. It is with this latter factor, the techniques, that this section is concerned.

The widespread unrealism which obscures the fact of progression in the inner life, affects in a major way the prevailing attitude toward techniques also. But if one will face the enormity of the modification of character which is envisioned, the extent of revision to which the Will, the Emotions, the Intellect, the Imagination—indeed all of the functions of the conscious and unconscious personality structure—are to be subjected, one will be impelled to seek the advice of persons of profound religious and psychological insight concerning the important “how” of this gigantic task.

These proficientes are found to agree that “training” is a necessity. They advise kinds of training that will provide reconditioning experiences



of sufficient vitality to offset the influence of society which, since "man's sin is stamped upon man's universe," is for the most part diametrically opposed to the new direction. They must be effective in transforming the egocentric set of man's own psyche which tends to choke out his new resolve—to develop the behavior patterns consistent with the new Direction. One becomes convinced that definite training is as necessary in this area as it is in any other kind of proficiency which one may desire to attain.

The chief method found to have been effective through the centuries is that form of inner activity known as prayer and meditation. These terms, as do the words "God" and "Religion," need to be freed from certain restricted and distorted meanings. Many people, otherwise interested in the religious Way, shy off from any mention of prayer because of two major confusions. One arises from the lack of information concerning the distinctions between what can be designated for the purposes of clarification, as low, medium and high prayer.<sup>1</sup> In low prayer there are two levels of petitionary prayer: (1) asking for material things for oneself, (2) asking for material things for another. Though these levels are rudimentary, they have significance since they recognize the fact of a higher Reality and manifest faith in it. But, for the kind of training being discussed here, they are likely to be limiting and blocking rather than releasing, for they set up "specific" desires as definitive of the Good, and thus obscure the Good.

Medium prayer is petition for particular virtues for oneself or another. It indicates high aspiration, but it may contribute to an inner rigidity—a tense striving toward goals which are beyond the beginner—and therefore it also may be detrimental to progress. We find that petitionary prayer in any form is really appropriate only for a person whose inner nature has been largely purged of greed and fear. He can ask because he is more illumined in the asking.

High prayer belongs in a different category. It is first of all a mental activity which makes use of that capacity for abstraction which differentiates mankind from all other creatures. This is the capacity by which he escapes being bound by mere stimulus-response reactions and concrete performances; the capacity by which he can choose essential and appropriate aspects, in respect to a whole situation, to which to respond. The discipline of mental prayer makes the highest possible use of this

<sup>1</sup> See *Preface to Prayer* by Gerald Heard, pages 24-51. We are indebted to Mr. Heard for this classification although it is developed differently herein.

abstract attitude, for in prayer one chooses to learn to apprehend and respond to those aspects of Reality which are infinite.

Several kinds and degrees of high prayer are described in Chapter Four of this section. They are said to correspond to the several stages of progression and represent one of the main techniques for actuation on the Way.

Even among those who understand the distinctions just made, there are many who still shy away from the practice of prayer because of the fear of being obliged to use prescribed subject matter, which to them may be meaningless. However, since in discursive meditation the understanding is directed to a consideration of subject matter for the purpose of convincing the self of the fact of ultimate Reality, and of recognizing the inner blocks to the perception of that Reality, the choice of subject matter should be determined by what is most real and meaningful to each individual.

We have seen that there are a number of approaches to the Way. There is, therefore, a variety of subject matter suitable for meditation. Whether one chooses to meditate on the life and teachings of Jesus, or other historical figures in whom God appears manifest to a high degree, or on certain stirring philosophical hypotheses, or the intimations of God received through nature, art, science or history; whether one meditates upon the concept of the Real Self (advanced by several psychotherapeutic systems as well as by early Hindu, Buddhist, and Christian mystics), or upon some other significant approach, one will be provided with enormously challenging subject matter. Happy is the man for whom all these approaches are meaningful!

(In Chapter Five the reader will find suggestions for the development of some of the different subjects into discursive meditative patterns. Also several suggested supplementary practices are described in Chapters Four and Six.)

The extended emphasis on the technique of Prayer as well as the inclusion of material on the role of the spiritual "Director" may appear strange to some readers. In respect to skilled guidance it may help to recall that one of the effects of the Reformation was to disregard the contribution of the religious director, as well as to neglect the findings of the great mystics concerning spiritual training as such. Individual desire coupled with Scripture reading, vocal prayer, and pulpit exhortation were too frequently considered sufficient practice to insure spiritual progress. They

superseded the Catholic over-emphasis on the authority of the church and the need for intermediaries, and were a reaction against the complicated and often extreme austerities practiced at the time. But the over-rationalization of Protestantism contributed to the development of that tragic unrealism, previously discussed, regarding the requirements for progression on the Way. "Training" consequently became neglected, and neglect has been so long the rule, that to many people it no longer appears an inadequacy.

It is hoped that the material assembled in this section will stimulate a re-evaluation of some of the neglected emphases and will inspire increased practice of individually-suited methods—such as can help in the development of that reconditioning, refocusing skill known as prayer.

The next technique discussed in this section is that fairly new "tool" of character modification known as psychotherapy. It is striking to note how many of the insights and practices of this developing science were known and used by the great religious teachers of the past. Interesting evidence of such fore-running knowledge is seen in ancient Buddhist, Hindu and early Christian training systems. For example, there is an ancient Buddhist meditative pattern known as Backward Meditation, which after long practice is said to open up the memory to all details of life experiences back to birth. One obvious but significant parallel to the catharsis emphasis of psychotherapy is also the Catholic Confessional. In the Patanjali Aphorisms 400 A.D. the importance of seeking insight through meditation on dreams is mentioned. In fact, Patanjali's system of Yoga rests on many of what we now term psychological laws.

The scientific classification of what was already known, and the extensive development of that knowledge through experimental processes presents us with a dependable body of psychological data regarding the structure and functioning of personality. This we have seen, contributes greatly to the process of clarification. It not only throws light on Self-knowledge (the seeming-self, and the Real-self) and therefore on those obstacles to growth which stem from the unconscious, but frequently is successful in probing to and effecting a removal of the roots of those obstacles.

On the same basis depth-psychology contributes to the effective practice of prayer through: (1) revealing some of the unconscious blocks to mental concentration, (2) lessening the danger of repression which inappropriate prayer techniques may invoke, (3) providing helpful "checks"

for judging the quality of inner impulses, whether they are of spiritual or egocentric origin, and thereby lessening the loose practice of interpreting quite-at-random impulses as Inner Guidance.

Psychotherapy has made us aware of rationalization and of those other tricks of the unconscious whereby the egocentric purposes gain control. This all contributes toward the decrease of that dangerous tendency of confusing the "unconscious" with God.

Besides the light which psychotherapy throws on the understanding of the process of progression, and besides the valuable suggestions for general Self-education which it has originated, it has developed its own particular technique by which it seeks in rather drastic fashion to break up the unconscious habit patterns through the aid of dream-analysis. This method is direct as contrasted to the indirect method of prayer. One of the dangers in the direct method is the tendency to become overly absorbed in the revelations of the unconscious obstacles, and thus to sidetrack the primary goal which is the release of the living reality which they obstruct. Another danger is that the egocentric demands frequently are only modified instead of being steadily reduced and eliminated. This is partly due to the partial view of man's world which is accepted by so many psychologists<sup>2</sup>—one in which the human mind and body, the human external and internal environments, are considered the whole of the real world. In prayer there is a wider point of reference. Both of these dangers, however, can be avoided through the wise choice of professional help. Fortunately there are therapists of profound insight who are qualified to assist one by this method.

The material included in Chapter Six on psychotherapy is necessarily inadequate. No trustworthy introduction to this important field can be gained without careful reading of at least one or two books on the subject. (See Bibliography.) It will be noted that of the material included some refers to the more general Self-education procedures and the rest to the highly specialized analytic procedure. The reader is urged to avail himself of the help which the Self-education procedures offer, and to take note of a new and arresting suggestion in this connection which attempts to synthesize the religious and psychological techniques to form a type of discursion known as Confessional Meditation. Other specialized procedures are also included in Chapter Six. One views the frontier findings

<sup>2</sup> The Analytical Psychology of Jung and the We-psychology of Kunkel are profoundly religious, in basic concepts and in implication.

of this fast-developing science of human behavior with high hope. The promise it holds for a better understanding of the whole Life-giving process is encouraging.

Concerning the third suggestion for furthering progression, there is little needed in introduction. It is obvious that for strength of purpose to carry on through the perplexities and discouragements met along the Way the value of intimate fellowship is immeasurable. Many small, seriously-intended groups can be discovered though it may require patience to seek them out. When such "cells" of real community develop within the life of the church, they contribute profoundly to its vitality. In religious fellowship, as in personal religious exercise, unobtrusiveness should be the rule as together the group, seeking to avoid pretention and false enthusiasm, moves quietly toward the mutual goal. Success in any venture of fellowship may be difficult, but in an intimate fellowship of this kind there are particular dangers which may arise from the tendency of the members to idealize one another, while at the same time disregarding those individual differences in temperament and experience which vary the rate of progress as well as determine the particular emphasis which the progress will take in each. These unrealistic expectations if not checked may lead to unnecessary disillusionment and false discouragement. In spite of the hazards, however, there are few experiences as rich as that of religious fellowship. The help of a wise religious advisor can be of value in this area also.

A prerequisite to any effective practice of techniques is that initial step in reorganizing one's life around the new center—the attempt to prune away whatever activities do not contribute to the new resolve. As with all beginning steps, this one is difficult; enough so, indeed, to prove the mettle of one's sincerity and to represent what we can call the technique of Action. This term is somewhat of a misnomer, but the tremendous importance of forming the habit of expressing in action the new insights received, and of valuing sufficiently the role of action in the liberating process, makes its use in this connection seem permissible. For unless there is action up to the height of insight, there can be no increase of insight. "Action," as used herein, therefore, refers to the habit of saying "Yes" to the Light. Its specific expression differs in each person depending on the progress he has achieved and the type of personality he represents.

Probably no other aspect of the Way has known greater controversy

than that which surrounds this one of action. In the study of both Western and Eastern advices concerning this point, there were found what can be considered not so much conflicting points of view, such as have been allowed to crystallize into the expression "social gospel" and "personal gospel," or into "entering into life" versus "retreating from life," but rather what we believe is a confusion regarding kinds of action. In this connection we again meet with the damaging unrealism which disregards the fact of progression, for what could be expected of and urged on a proficient in the way of action would be folly, and a waste of time and possibly worse in effect, if urged on a beginner. Likewise what one beginner should do may differ considerably from the wise activity prescribed for another beginner of different temperament. The material assembled in Chapter Eight presents different points of view, or what we may call different kinds or degrees of action.

In addition to availing himself of the four major techniques described herein, the aspirant will, of course, seek out whatever other opportunities will deepen his conviction and experience of Reality and encourage his perseverance in training. Special retreats, study of the lives and teachings of those in whom God seems most perfectly manifest, corporate worship of the type that holds special appeal to the individual, and similar corporate experiences are essential.<sup>3</sup>

In closing, some mention should be made of the many people who do not believe in any form of spiritual training. They believe that "life" is the greatest teacher and, therefore, depend on life's experiences to further their progress on the Way. This is an understandable attitude, for the circumstances of each life do offer the needed material for clarification; but how successfully in most of us does the loud clamor of egocentric interests prevent the hearing of what "life" is saying! It is to recover this hearing faculty that spiritual training is recommended. A contemporary religious<sup>4</sup> puts it something like this: The spiritual life resembles a fertile egg whose embryo is surrounded by the exact sustenance needed for its development. It grows by feeding on its environment, achieving the strength needed finally to peck through the shell. So, likewise, the spiritual germ—"the spark of the soul" within each human being—is surrounded by the exact food necessary for its development. This food

<sup>3</sup> See *Worship* by Evelyn Underhill.

<sup>4</sup> Howard Thurman, formerly Professor of Philosophy, Howard University. Now co-pastor of The Fellowship Church (inter-racial), San Francisco.

consists of the essence of all the circumstances, the difficulties, the opportunities, the relationships—personal and world—in which each person at every moment of time is environed. But man tends to resist, even to fight against this given sustenance. He fails to recognize it as the perfect nutriment for his spiritual development.

It is to awaken this recognition of what "life" is offering in the way of spiritual food that the techniques described herein are important. As Ramakrishna once said, "The breeze of Divine grace is blowing upon us all. But one needs to set the sail to feel this breeze of grace."

## CHAPTER FOUR

### *Prayer and Meditation*

Adherence to the status quo requires as a rule little reflection, while release from it to something better requires much.

GEORGE ALBERT COE

The practice of reflective meditation, which consists in holding certain ideas in the mind long enough to enable them to form emotional connections, tends to break up the crust of habit and to create a new will.\*

WALTER MARSHALL HORTON

Worship in all its degrees is an education in charity, a purgation of egoism.

EVELYN UNDERHILL

Prayer is the most perfect and most divine action that a rational soul is capable of. It is of all other actions and duties the most indispensably necessary.

AUGUSTIN BAKER



## CHAPTER FOUR

### *Prayer and Meditation*

#### GENERAL DEFINITIONS OF PRAYER <sup>1</sup>

Prayer is disciplined opening of the self to God. My social, verbal, officious, work-a-day self has something closed and set about it. It is a mass of predispositions, preconceptions, inhibitions, settled beliefs and expectations. There is a convenient fixity about it. It assures me of my identity, it provides me with the least laborious responses to the stresses of my environment, it gives me a stable base from and on which to grow. But that fixity must never be suffered to become final. This would be death. Prayer is the persistent effort to guard against that death—the effort toward effortlessness, receptivity. So long as the tenseness of the daily struggle remains, one battles the old problems with the old resources and the old insights. If one could only suspend that conscious fight, one might be able to meet the same reality that is to be subdued with a larger, more complete, more relaxed self: one might harness to the fight not only the thin upper surface of one's resolutions but a more massive undercurrent of habit and emotion. This is just what can be achieved by the difficult art of prayer, and its discipline of silence.

For there is strength in you greater than any strength of your own, the Will that stirs within you when your own will is at rest.\*

Gregory Vlastos, 1909—. Canadian, Professor of Philosophy.  
*The Religious Way*.

Prayer is that act by which the individual faces himself, relative to his fundamental attitude, and seeks to make sure that this basic

<sup>1</sup> These definitions do not particularize the different kinds of prayer. For that see—Kinds and Degrees of Prayer, pages 195–210.

attitude is one of complete commitment to the Good, and that there are no reservations.

It is a focusing of the personality, and an intensifying of awareness, by which the individual seeks to tear off the layers upon layers of unreality that are his heritage from the past. And to make his motive, and supreme ambition, and utmost effort, harmonious with and parallel with the Good.

Prayer is the juridic bar at which he can determine how much of sincerity and how much of destructive reservation there is in his intended dedication. He can there declare, if he so wills, his one and only allegiance.

It is an attitude of keen observation, in which one looks and judges: observation of the self that comes no other known way than through that distinctive discipline.

Prayer is the discipline through which one learns whether fundamental attitudes, when taken, have profound effects on personality. And if so, what those effects are essentially.

Prayer may purely assume a God, for experimental purposes, not affirming that it knows in advance anything about God, and only very little, in advance of experiment, about the universe or the possibilities and potentialities for personality resident in absolute abdication.

Anonymous.

By worship I mean a reflective activity of the "total mind" by means of which the Self relates itself to its Total Environment in so far, that is, as the Self can become aware of and responsive to its Total or Effective Environment. In my view it is true to say that we can worship Nature or Humanity or Art, or God. I believe that all of these are the same activity, but that they differ in quality. They differ in the sense that Whitehead means when he speaks of "high-grade" and "low-grade" experiences. The chief difference between these "grades" of worship can be measured by the differences in the objects of worship and in the effects produced by higher or lower-grade worship upon the organization of the personality of the worshipper and upon his experience. Worship requires, firstly, stillness

in the "ego"; secondly, openness to or awareness of the object of worship; and, thirdly, the establishment of mutual relations between the worshipper and the object of worship. In essence, worship is the whole process of valuation. In Christian worship, God in Christ is the Divine Object.

Howard E. Collier, M.D., contemporary English physician.  
*The Place of Worship in Modern Medicine.*

Moral and religious reality cannot be perceived without transformation of self, without submission of the individual to its exigencies. One condition has to be met; the decision must be taken in advance not only in words but in reality to say "yes" to the light. And this attitude is called prayer. In fact it is prayer even before we realize that we should call it so. One should therefore say that the only search for God is through prayer—but what prayer? Not the formulas of ritual, not the multiplication of words . . . "I am nothing; I know nothing, save the fact that I am here, full of need and misery, full of ignorance, doubt and fear. But, I am finding my direction; I turn inward toward an ideal of higher, purer spirituality; I will the good, even the good unknown to me; I aspire and trust; I crave; I open myself; I abandon myself to the God whose inspiration I feel at work in the depths of myself; I will the light; I call upon it; I am confident that it will answer me and I accept in advance everything that it will exact from me." Moreover this prayer must not only be dreamed about, it must be prayed in very fact, explicitly. It is not sufficient to approve of it as a theoretical principle, to admit its necessity in an abstract movement of pure mind; at one precise moment of time, withdrawing in one's self and seizing hold of that self to its uttermost depths, one must make it give birth to the act in its reality. Only with the fulfilment of this condition will one's search be fully sincere, and not a vain lie and a mere sham. If one felt I know not what obscure aversion for this act, that would be the best proof that the fact of experience does add something to simple reflection on it. And this aversion we would then have to conquer, for it would mark in us a secret refusal of the ethical demand.\*

Edouard LeRoy, 1870-. French philosopher.  
From *Le Problème de Dieu*, Trans. Dora Willson.

Mental prayer means the occupation of our faculties upon God, not in the way of thinking or speculating about Him, but stirring up the will to conform itself to Him and the affections to love Him.\*

Author unknown.

There is no fear of the charge of autosuggestion in prayer that so haunted the last generation. It is freely admitted from the outset that large elements of prayer are and should be of that character. All that is meant by this word "autosuggestion," or self-suggestion, is that the suggestion is selected and presented by the person to himself. We have come to recognize that all we know has been suggested to us either by our external or internal environment in the form of what is called heterosuggestion.

In entering prayer we have a perfect right to choose from this random mass of heterosuggestions some that we regard as more significant than others, and to dwell upon them. Autosuggestion is no more than this act of dwelling upon selected aspects of experience. By the mere act of dwelling upon them we do not necessarily prove them to be true. Nor did we intend to. That matter of truth is both a prior and a subsequent matter of tests and interpretations to which either auto- or heterosuggestions must be submitted. These selected aspects of experience with which we may enter prayer are, however, only a threshold of past experience that we cross in order to engage with what is there. And they are subject to revision and to addition as the prayer brings its bearer to new levels of insight.

Douglas Van Steere, 1901-. American Professor of Philosophy.  
*Prayer and Worship.*

Worship, or prayer, is the especial sphere of the will in religion. It is an act of approach to God; and while this act involves a lifting of thought to God, it is more than an act of thought—it intends to institute some communication or transaction with God wherein will answers will.

Within the motive of worship there is to be discerned, I believe, a weariness of the old, the habitual, the established—a hunger for what is radically new and untried. This is, in part, the significance

of that deliberate undoing of all bonds and attachments, all received knowledges and properties, which is part of the preparation for the mystical experience in all ages. If it were possible for the soul to become aware of all its attachments and habits, how could it be better disposed for originality? The scientific discipline of the mind is of the same effect in its own sphere; to disaffect oneself as far as may be of prepossessions; to recognize and allow for the biases of the person, the body, and the age. It is not improbable, then, that worship may include this value of preparing the soul for the reception of novelty with its primary value of uniting the worshipper with his God.

Worship is indeed a reasonable act, even when instinctive and momentary: it is informed of God; it uses and contains all available knowledge of the being whom it addresses. But in worship the universality of thought is overcome; and God is appropriated uniquely to the individual self. Worship brings the experience of God to pass in self-consciousness with a searching valency not obligatory upon the pure thinker: in some way it *enacts* the presence of God, sets God into the will to work there. In the nature of the case, the aspect of deity which reason discovers is an unconditional, inevitable, universal presence: from such a presence there can be no escape—and so no drawing near—save by the movements of deliberate attention. But the drawing-near of worship is more than a movement of attention.

Worship may be regarded as an attempt to detach oneself from everything else in uniting with God. It seeks God first as an object, that Other of all worldly objects; and it seeks to join itself to that absolute Other. The mystic proceeds by negation; this and that, he says, are not God; it is not these that I seek. The effort of worship measures the soul's power of detachment. And my power of detachment measures the whole of my freedom, the whole of my possibility of happiness, the whole of my possible originality, the whole depth and reach of my morality and of my human contribution!

What the mystic reaches is, in terms of his world-conceptions, a zero; not indeed the Whole of reality, but Substance, the heart of God. It is just such a zero as one encounters when he seeks his own

soul behind the shifting content of his experience, or when he seeks the soul of another, in distinction from that other's various external expressions. This zero is not a place to stay in; but it may be pre-eminently a place to return to, and *to depart from*. In worship one touches the bottom of that bottomless pit of Self and perceives at hand the real Origin of things; gaining not the whole of any knowledge, but the beginning and measure of all knowledge.

May not worship be described as the will to become, for a moment and within one's own measure, what existence is; or more simply, as the act of recalling oneself to *being*? It might be described as a spontaneous impulse for spiritual self-preservation; for self-placing, for the ultimate judgment of life, and for the perpetual renewal of the worth of life. And in thus returning to the sources of being we may still more dimly discern, it may be, a self-preservation of farther scope, such as immortality may hang on; a glint of ontological bearing of unlimited importance. . . .

The worth of God's presence to the genuine mystic is a sufficient and absolute good; and he often expresses himself as if the ecstasy of his moment were its own justification. But every immediate value must be sanctioned by its bearings in the system of all values, must have a meaning which can give account of itself in the form of knowledges such as we have suggested. Worship must not be an intoxication which alienates the soul from the duller interests of experience; and hence, as mysticism has learned its own meaning, it has realized that subjective delight recommends nothing, and that the supremacy of the moment of its experience must be judged by the staying powers of its insight.\*

William Ernest Hocking, 1873-. American philosopher.  
*The Meaning of God in Human Experience.*

By prayer, I do not understand petition or supplication, which, according to the doctrine of the schools, is exercised principally by the understanding, being a signification of what the person desires to receive from God. But prayer here especially meant is rather an offering and giving to God whatsoever He may justly require from us.

Now prayer, in this general notion, may be defined to be an elevation of the mind to God, or more largely and expressly thus: prayer is an affectuous actuation of an intellectual soul towards God, expressing, or at least implying, an entire dependence on Him as the Author and Fountain of all good, a will and readiness to give Him His due, which is no less than all love, obedience, adoration, glory, and worship, by humbling and annihilating of herself and all creatures in His presence; and lastly, a desire and intention to aspire to an union of spirit with Him.

Hence it appears that prayer is the most perfect and most divine action that a rational soul is capable of. It is of all other actions and duties the most indispensably necessary.\*

Augustin Baker, 1575-1641. English Benedictine Father.  
*Holy Wisdom.*

Prayer is not asking for things—not even for the best things; it is going where they are. The word, with its inevitable sense and stain of supplication, is therefore best abandoned. It is meditation and contemplation; it is opening another aperture of the mind, using another focus, that is the real recreative process.

Anonymous.

Prayer consists in renouncing all that is of this world, external, and evoking in oneself the divine part of one's soul by throwing oneself into it, entering by it communion with Him of whom It is a part; recognizing oneself as the slave of God; and testing oneself, one's actions, one's desires, according to the demands not of the external circumstances of the world but of this divine part of one's soul.

I regard it (prayer) as a necessary condition of spiritual (true) life.\*

Lyof N. Tolstoi, 1828-1910. Russian novelist, moral philosopher.  
*Complete Works*, Trans. Aline Delano.

Let any true man go into silence: strip himself of all pretense, and selfishness, and sensuality, and sluggishness of soul; lift off thought after thought, passion after passion, till he reaches the in-

most depth of all; remember how short a time and he was not at all; how short a time again, and he will not be here; open his window and look upon the night, how still its breath, how solemn its march, how deep its perspective, how ancient its forms of light; and think how little he knows except the perpetuity of God, and the mysteriousness of life:—and it will be strange if he does not feel the Eternal Presence as close upon his soul as the breeze upon his brow; if he does not say, “O Lord, art thou ever near as this, and have I not known thee?”—if the true proportions and the genuine spirit of life do not open on his heart with infinite clearness and show him the littleness of his temptations and the grandeur of his trust. He is ashamed to have found weariness in toil so light, and tears where there was no trial to the brave. He discovers with astonishment how small the dust that has blinded him, and from the height of a quiet and holy love looks down with incredulous sorrow on the jealousies and fears and irritations that have vexed his life. A mighty wind of resolution sets in strong upon him and freshens the whole atmosphere of his soul, sweeping down before it the light flakes of difficulty, till they vanish like snow upon the sea. He is imprisoned no more in a small compartment of time, but belongs to an eternity which is now and here. The isolation of his separate spirit passes away; and with the countless multitude of souls akin to God, he is but as a wave of his unbounded deep. He is at one with Heaven, and hath found the secret place of the Almighty.

James Martineau, 1805–1900. English religious director.  
*Endeavors After the Christian Life.*

## VALUE AND FUNCTION OF PRAYER <sup>2</sup>

### For World Salvation

The world can be saved—by one thing only and that is worship. For to worship is to quicken the conscience by the holiness of God, to feed the mind with the truth of God, to purge the imagination

<sup>2</sup> Also see Confessional Meditation, page 327.



by the beauty of God, to open the heart to the love of God, to devote the will to the purpose of God.

William Temple, 1881-1944. English, Archbishop of Canterbury  
*The Hope of a New World.*

### For Unity

"People cannot be loyal to what they have not experienced." If so, meditation would seem to be almost necessary to most religious people who wish to remain sincere and consistent. Meditation gives opportunity to ponder over the subtler realities which are not easily or hastily perceived but which are nevertheless constantly operative and controlling life. Meditation provides opportunity for weighing values. In so far as will is choice or perceiving a pattern, it is aided by meditation. Meditation also provides opportunity for us to examine our assumptions about human nature, about the spirit, about our relations to one another and to God. Often these assumptions lie at the base of our choice and our action. Meditation is of special value for those who desire peace, helping to create an inner harmony and unity. Until we attain these we cannot reach harmony or unity with other people. Modern psychiatry shows that clearly, and since conflict and disunity are two of the greatest evils of our time, meditation as a corrective of this condition is highly important. I am not advocating it as a method of escape or retreat, but as a means of making us more efficient in the world.

During the greater part of man's history, fight or flight were his only two ways of getting physical security. Owing to the great increase of integration and awareness and sensitiveness of modern society as a result of modern transport and communications, our physical security now depends much more on intangible relationships, on trust, on moral and psychological imponderables than it used to. The psychological equivalent of physical security is inner unity, the integration of spiritual and moral unity between men. Men's chief insecurity now is caused by separateness or divisiveness. Therefore unity means security. The search for inner unity is thus the psychological equivalent of physical fight or flight. When once attained, that inner unity must of course be translated into corresponding consistent action. The search for spiritual unity is one

important means of attaining spiritual, moral, psychological, and even physical security. Hence the importance of meditation.\*

Richard Gregg, 1882-. American author, Professor of Philosophy.  
*Inward Light.*

### Revelation of Self-Love

Prayer, if properly carried out, will have as its effect the gradual revelation to the soul of the disease of self-love which so intimately penetrates the very fibres of its being as to pass unobserved by the person that does not lead an interior life. In prayer the soul gradually draws into the radiant purity and truth of the soul of Jesus. It becomes bathed through and through with that radiance; and in this splendour all in it that is of self and not of God stands clearly revealed to that soul's gaze.

Prayer reveals the presence of this self-love and secures the aid of God in its extermination.\*

Edward Leen, 1885-. Irish Catholic cleric, educator.  
*Progress Through Mental Prayer.*

### To Combine Thought and Devotion

Of all things that militate against the spiritual life, none is more disastrous and far-reaching in its effect than the divorce of thought from devotion. The divine precept which bids us love God with all our mind seems to many to have but little connection with thought.

Where the understanding is exercised upon the things of God, there the will begins to energise towards the Divine and love bursts into flame. Meditation begets a deep yearning; apprehension and adhesion march together. We understand with the heart; we love with the mind.

Emily Herman, 1876-1923. English writer.  
*The Touch of God.*

### Making Faith Real

If our Faith is to be made vivid, it must be by meditation. We are told that "Faith cometh by hearing." But we have to do more than hear it, merely. Meditation is meant to make our Faith real to us, so that we shall realise in our lives what we know and believe.

Dom John Chapman, O.S.B., 1865-1933. English, Biblical and Patristic scholar.  
*Spiritual Letters of Dom John Chapman.*

### Adjustment to Cosmic Reality

This solitary response to reality is the deepest religious experience one can have. It is turning from the periphery of life to the core of existence. In this solitary moment it is as if one entered into the scheme of things. He penetrates the outer glare and comes into a sombre retreat where perspective is steady and clear. But the solitary view does more than intensify the subjective focus; it illumines the objective reference. It deafens one's ears to folk noises and fills them with the sound of vastness. It stirs one from the mood of living to a sense of life in its immensities. Solitariness makes one world-conscious. And in becoming world-conscious he becomes God-conscious.

I have known solitary moments such as these to bring me a peculiarly intimate understanding of the movement of life. It was as if I were momentarily lifted from the scene of details to a lone plateau where a broader vista was possible. The universe as an entity seemed to be moving through space-time, an earnest, living organism of huge dimensions, pulsating with innumerable life-activities, yet, like a massive liner at sea, plowing its own course through waves of time, whither, there was no knowing. There is a feeling of eternity or timelessness that comes over one in such a glimpse of the total course of things that seems to give dignity and worth to the temporal passage of events.

Contemplating this vast, on-going process of life in this intimate way makes one vividly aware of the great community of cosmic activities which sustain and promote life. The cosmos becomes a community, near and neighborly. It is, indeed, a vivid awareness of God.

In this solitary hour, the worshiper, looking beyond himself, is moved to prayer. The awareness of reality quickens him. He feels the surge drawing him, the creature, toward the source of being. Prayer of this sort is not just meditation; it is tropism of a human sort. It is a profound organic movement that impels man to reach toward reality and to lay hold of the "gift of life" that issues from that profound reciprocity.

A clear awareness of self in relation to reality silhouettes the

worshiper against the cosmic background. Thus solitariness confronts him with what he is. It strips him of his social shroud and reveals him in creature form. It gives voice to his silenced thoughts and un.masks his impurities that threatened his health of soul. This religious solitude may also inspire the worshiper with what he might be. It may arouse in him the feel of his authentic self.

In this solitary hour of awareness, the religious man's response is not always an easy adjustment. Exposure before reality carries no guarantee of blessing. He may find "God the enemy." And the revealment may leave him tentatively damned. Faced with "what is permanent in the nature of things," many men and women *are* wretched creatures, sorely out of adjustment with what fulfills life. If there is no original sin in the sense of a predestined bent toward maladjustment, there certainly is a vicious inclination away from the better self, easily acquired and difficult to overcome.

The prayer of penitence is an essential step in the process of adjustment, for it brings the wrong-doer boldly, however humbly, into the presence of the reality he has shunned. Wrong-doing persists as long as the offender continues to shun reality.

Like men of all ages, modern man is threatened with dissolution or with failure to fulfill his life-process. The religious man, aware of this possible death or defeat of spirit, reaches out continually toward goals that inspire and toward realities that sustain and fulfill. His prayer, then, is made redemptive through his adjustment to realities that may bear or break his being. He recovers himself and the course toward fulfillment through penitence, aspiration, and devotion.\*

Bernard Eugene Meland, 1899-. American philosopher and Professor of Religion.  
*Modern Man's Worship.*

### As Method for Achieving Integral Thought

Evolution did not cease with the evolution of man. On the contrary henceforward it became vastly accelerated. Instead of having to be carried on through change of physique it can now be advanced through change of tools, tools which are extensions of limbs created by an extension of consciousness, a more intense form of conscious-

ness than that which was formerly homogeneous with the physique. This, however, necessitates a separation in the individual consciousness, one level still running the body while a new range experiments with the external world. Henceforward therefore progress must be a balance and each aspect of consciousness—the inward- and the outward-looking—must keep pace in their advance and intensification of focus. Finally a direct consciousness emerges and man discards evolution through tools, as he, when he became man, disregarded the first aeonic evolution through the development of new bodily organs.

Man then is seen as a creature who is achieving pure consciousness and, in the end, achieving it as a purely voluntary act.

It is in this frame of reference that we can set and see the life of prayer, prayer as a pure act of the will, seeking an integral understanding of and union with the Whole, the One. We can see prayer as not only the continuation of evolution in consciousness by consciousness but the essential method whereby today man achieves integral thought when analytical thought is threatening to unbalance him. For analytical thought is the only thought which the ego-consciousness can command (though sometimes the higher, integral thought breaks up and through the threshold of the ego) and analytical thought is a form which can only give rise to means and powers. Integral thought which springs from the deep mind alone can give rise to meaning, value, sanctions and truly creative integration.

Gerald Heard, 1889-. English author, philosopher of history and anthropology.

*A Preface to Prayer.*

### Remaking of Personal and Social Life

Meditation is essential. Imports must balance exports. Everyone must first learn by himself what he would practise in public. Through insight acquired in solitude he must study to recognize the underlying pattern and coherencies so that when he comes out into the contemporary confusion he may still detect and discriminate the fundamental design and meaning, though it be blurred by the surface disturbances. Only those who have first taught themselves by listening to clear unambiguous enunciation to recognize a

language new to their ear, can hope to pick up from the clipped and elided vernacular the meaning of casual speech. To less practised ears it sounds no more than a confusion of indistinguishable noises incapable of any specific meaning. The individuals whom any other individual sees are not in themselves immediately appealing, still less inspiring. They seem pointless, futile, boring. They, as he, are engrossed in their own cares and careers. Even if he tries to treat them as creatures with immense capacities within them, he sees they are not that now. On the contrary, they are blind to what they might be, and unless he can take the initiative with a generous and assured conviction, which is positively creative, it is they who convince him of his individualism and separateness, not he who convinces them of their general eternal life and common union.

He cannot, then, begin by feeling a creative, non-personal generosity, which they deny and he rather desires than possesses. The first step, therefore, is practice—practice in throwing the mind open by meditation to its larger being, practice in throwing off the individuality where there is space—in the silence where the pressing claims and strident assertions of others' individualism are not challenging him and rousing his own reaction to protect himself against such incursions, encroachments, and collisions.

The slowness of self-change, against which so many rebel and because of which even greater numbers abandon this essential process, becomes more endurable when we realize two things. The first is that, considering the results to be produced, change, if it is to be effective, could not be faster. To change oneself—that seems a small preliminary thing. In fact it is nothing of the sort. It is the most radical of alterations. To change oneself is not merely to alter one's relations to all fellowmen, to alter the whole of self and social nexus. That is much. We are, even the most independent, unsuspectedly integrated with our society. We cannot move without affecting all those around us: they have made and make us largely what we are. Self-change must always be social change: that is why moral courage is rarer than physical courage; the determination to alter the social will needs more energy than the determination to sacrifice the self to that will.

To change oneself is to have to do that, but it is also to do far more. It is to alter one's outlook literally—to attend to what has been overlooked, to see through what has riveted attention. It is to see another world. Once that other world is seen, once the new faculty has grown, then a new way of action is natural and inevitable. Seeing, realization of the further range of reality, that is the step that really counts. The task is an immense one, for by remaking the self, we remake, and can only remake the world.\*

*Anonymous contemporary.*

### Method for Acquiring Knowledge

The function of meditation is to help a man to put forth a special quality of will. ("Meditation," says San Pedro de Alcantara, "is nothing but a discourse addressed by the intellect to the will.") This special quality of will, which is peculiar to man, must be regarded as a fact of observation and experience. How shall this fact be explained? The Christian, as Babbitt points out, explains it in terms of divine grace, as something imparted from some supernatural source existing outside the individual. The Buddhist affirms that "self is the lord of self" and sees the super-rational will as something latent in the individual psyche, a potentiality that any man, if he so desires and knows how, can actualize either in his present existence or (more probable, since the road to enlightenment is long and steep) in some future life. We see, then, that from a humanistic point of view, meditation is a particularly effective method of self-education.

But meditation is more than a method of self-education; it has also been used, in every part of the world and from the remotest periods, as a method for acquiring knowledge about the essential nature of things, a method for establishing communion between the soul and the integrating principle of the universe. Properly practised, with due preparation, physical, mental and moral, meditation may result in a state of what has been called "transcendental consciousness"—the direct intuition of, and union with, an ultimate spiritual reality that is perceived as simultaneously beyond the self and in some way within it. ("God in the depths of us," says Ruysbroeck,

"receives God who comes to us: it is God contemplating God.") Non-mystics have denied the validity of the mystical experience, describing it as merely subjective and illusory. But it should be remembered that, to those who have never actually had it, any direct intuition must seem subjective and illusory. It is impossible for the deaf to form any idea of the nature or significance of music. Nor is physical disability the only obstacle in the way of musical understanding. An Indian, for example, finds European orchestral music intolerably noisy, complicated, over-intellectual, inhuman. It seems incredible to him that anyone should be able to perceive beauty and meaning, to recognize an expression of the deepest and subtlest emotions, in this elaborate cacophony. And yet, if he has patience and listens to enough of it, he will come at last to realize, not only theoretically, but also by direct, immediate intuition, that this music possesses all the qualities which Europeans claim for it. Of the significant and pleasurable experiences of life only the simplest are open indiscriminately to all. The rest cannot be had except by those who have undergone a suitable training. First Shakespeare sonnets seem meaningless; first Bach fugues, a bore; first differential equations, sheer torture. But training changes the nature of our spiritual experiences. In due course, contact with an obscurely beautiful poem, an elaborate piece of counterpoint or of mathematical reasoning, causes us to feel direct intuitions of beauty and significance. It is the same in the moral world. A man who has trained himself in goodness comes to have certain direct intuitions about character, about the relations between human beings, about his own position in the world—intuitions that are quite different from the intuitions of the average sensual man. Knowledge is always a function of being. What we perceive and understand depends upon what we are; and what we are depends partly on circumstances, partly, and more profoundly, on the nature of the efforts we have made to realize our ideal and the nature of the ideal we have tried to realize. The fact that knowing depends upon being leads, of course, to an immense amount of misunderstanding. The meaning of words, for example, changes profoundly according to the character and experiences of the user. Thus, to the saint, words like "love," "charity," "compas-



sion" mean something quite different from what they mean to the ordinary man. Again, to the ordinary man, Spinoza's statement that "blessedness is not the reward of virtue, but is virtue itself" seems simply untrue. Being virtuous is, for him, a most tedious and distressing process. But it is clear that to some one who has trained himself in goodness, virtue really is blessedness, while the life of the ordinary man, with its petty vices and its long spells of animal thoughtlessness and insentience, seems a real torture. In view of the fact that knowing is conditioned by being and that being can be profoundly modified by training, we are justified in ignoring most of the arguments by which non-mystics have sought to discredit the experience of mystics. The being of a colour-blind man is such that he is not competent to pass judgment on a painting. The colour-blind man cannot be educated into seeing colours, and in this respect he is different from the Indian musician, who begins by finding European symphonies merely deafening and bewildering, but can be trained, if he so desires, to perceive the beauties of this kind of music. Similarly, the being of a non-mystical person is such that he cannot understand the nature of the mystic's intuitions. Like the Indian musician, however, he is at liberty, if he so chooses, to have some kind of direct experience of what at present he does not understand. This training is one which he will certainly find extremely tedious; for it involves, first, the leading of a life of constant awareness and unremitting moral effort, second, steady practice in the technique of meditation, which is probably about as difficult as the technique of violin-playing. But, however tedious, the training can be undertaken by anyone who wishes to do so. Those who have not undertaken the training can have no knowledge of the kind of experiences open to those who have undertaken it and are as little justified in denying the validity of those direct intuitions of an ultimate spiritual reality, at once transcendent and immanent, as were the Pisan professors who denied, on *a priori* grounds, the validity of Galileo's direct intuition (made possible by the telescope) of the fact that Jupiter has several moons.\*

### As An Aid to Clinical Hygiene

I affirm that worship is essential to clinical hygiene. I doubt that one single type or kind of worship is likely to be suitable for all ages, all conditions, and all races of mankind, but that is a problem for religion, not for medicine.

Worship does not guarantee freedom from disease; but this much at least it will accomplish: it will remove most of the intrinsic causes of mental strain and stress. Negatively, to escape from fear, dread, loneliness, anxiety and despair is surely good for health; positively, to experience faith, hope, fellowship, peace and to possess the mind in quietness is still more valuable. To "live in the light of His countenance" is, positively, to be healed by God.

Thousands of years ago the sick were treated in the Temple of Aesculapius. They were treated by drugs, diet, massage, warmth and exercise according to the physical science of that day. Their dreams were interpreted for them or, if they did not dream, means were used to make them dream, and suggestion and persuasion were also used according to the mental science of that day. Furthermore, they were treated in the Temple, within the Sacred Confines and in the presence of the God of Healing.

Perhaps the wheel of life has turned a full circle once again. Perhaps the time has come when religion and a living faith and worship can again be used to complete what modern Medical Science so often seems to leave unfinished.\*

Howard E. Collier, M.D., contemporary English physician.  
*The Place of Worship in Modern Medicine.*

### Anatomical and Functional Modifications

Certain spiritual activities may cause anatomical as well as functional modifications of the tissues and the organs. These organic phenomena are observed in various circumstances, among them being the state of prayer. Prayer should be understood, not as a mere mechanical recitation of formulas, but as a mystical elevation, an absorption of consciousness in the contemplation of a principle both permeating and transcending our world. Such a psychological state is not intellectual. It is incomprehensible to philosophers and

scientists, and inaccessible to them. But the simple seem to feel God as easily as the heat of the sun or the kindness of a friend. The prayer which is followed by organic effects is of a special nature. First, it is entirely disinterested. Man offers himself to God. He stands before Him like the canvas before the painter or the marble before the sculptor. At the same time, he asks for His grace, exposes his needs and those of his brothers in suffering. Generally, the patient who is cured is not praying for himself. But for another. Such a type of prayer demands complete renunciation—that is, a higher form of asceticism. The modest, the ignorant, and the poor are more capable of this self-denial than the rich and the intellectual. When it possesses such characteristics, prayer may set in motion a strange phenomenon, the miracle.

In all countries, at all times, people have believed in the existence of miracles, in the more or less rapid healing of the sick at places of pilgrimage, at certain sanctuaries. But after the great impetus of science during the nineteenth century, such belief completely disappeared. It was generally admitted not only that miracles did not exist, but that they could not exist. As the laws of thermodynamics make perpetual motion impossible, physiological laws oppose miracles. Such is still the attitude of most physiologists and physicians. However, in view of the facts observed during the last fifty years this attitude cannot be sustained. The most important cases of miraculous healing have been recorded by the Medical Bureau of Lourdes. Our present conception of the influence of prayer upon pathological lesions is based upon the observation of patients who have been cured almost instantaneously of various affections, such as peritoneal tuberculosis, cold abscesses, osteitis, suppurating wounds, lupus, cancer, etc. The process of healing changes little from one individual to another. Often, an acute pain. Then a sudden sensation of being cured. In a few seconds, a few minutes, at the most a few hours, wounds are cicatrized, pathological symptoms disappear, appetite returns. Sometimes functional disorders vanish before the anatomical lesions are repaired. The skeletal deformations of Pott's disease, the cancerous glands, may still persist two or three days after the healing of the main lesions. The miracle is chiefly

characterized by an extreme acceleration of the processes of organic repair. There is no doubt that the rate of cicatrization of the anatomical defects is much greater than the normal one. The only condition indispensable to the occurrence of the phenomenon is prayer. But there is no need for the patient himself to pray, or even to have any religious faith. It is sufficient that some one around him be in a state of prayer. Such facts are of profound significance. They show the reality of certain relations, of still unknown nature, between psychological and organic processes. They prove the objective importance of the spiritual activities, which hygienists, physicians, educators, and sociologists have almost always neglected to study. They open to man a new world.\*

Alexis Carrel, 1873-1944. French surgeon, biologist.  
*Man the Unknown.*

## KINDS AND DEGREES OF PRAYER

Although the material on kinds and degrees of prayer will be of special interest to the student of mysticism, it will also yield valuable insights to any one sincerely interested in spiritual progress.

As we have seen, the impotence of many religious people is partly due to the widespread ignorance concerning the range of progress, the unconscious factors involved therein, and the degrees of prayer through which those who achieve the higher ranges in freedom of the spirit seem to pass. Most of us are content with "a little wave of feeling" in our practice of prayer. We have failed to realize that the remoulding of the unconscious attitude requires persistence and time, that it bears little relation to desultory "feeling."

Brother Lawrence who underwent twelve years of training before he achieved an habitual sense of the presence of God, spoke eloquently of the blindness of mankind regarding the range of spiritual progress. From the book *The Practice of the Presence of God* we find concerning him:

"He (Brother Lawrence) complains much of our blindness and exclaims often that we are to be pitied, who content ourselves with so little. God's treasure, he says, is like an infinite ocean; yet a little wave of feeling, passing with the moment, contents us. Blind as we are, we hinder God, and stop the current of His graces. But when He finds a soul

permeated with a living faith, He pours into it His graces and His favours plenteously; into the soul they flow like a torrent, which, after being forcibly stopped against its ordinary course, when it has found a passage, spreads with impetuosity its pent-up flood.

"Yes, often we stop this torrent, by the little value we set upon it. But let us stop it no longer; let us enter into ourselves and break down the barrier which holds it back. Let us make the most of the day of grace, let us redeem the time that is lost."

Mystic terminology abounds in this material on degrees of prayer and may prove difficult and even disturbing for some readers. For whomever this is the case it is suggested that he read only as much as will give a general idea of the several degrees—that he pass over the detailed description of the higher degrees until some later time when his experience may make them more understandable.

It is hoped that the future will see a truly religious psychology which will have penetrated far enough into an understanding of the processes of prayer to have developed a terminology that will render its progress more understandable. Of course ideational knowledge in this area will of necessity always be limited since it extends beyond intellect to intuition, and since it is so much a matter of the "Grace of God." Even so, much remains to be done in clarification concerning those elements of the "individuation" process which can be classified and described. A start on such clarification has already been made by Carl G. Jung and, more recently, by Fritz Kunkel. Some important work on it is also being accomplished by such groups as The Guild of Pastoral Psychology in England. The catharsis emphasis of the self-education techniques suggested by psychotherapy may come to be a requisite supplement to the more positive practices of the usual discursive prayer procedure. All tested aids to inner catharsis whether of religious or psychotherapeutic origin are of tremendous importance to the beginner.

### DEGREES OF PRAYER

A careful study and analysis of the various states or degrees of prayer as given by spiritual writers enable us, avoiding subtle and, for practical purposes, unnecessary distinctions, to define three main steps by which the soul progresses toward a more perfect prayer.

1. Mental or Discursive Prayer.<sup>3</sup>
2. Affective Prayer, or the Prayer of Simplicity.
3. Active or Acquired Contemplation.

The essential note of progress in prayer is simplification. Beginning with mental prayer, in which there is a large use of the understanding, having as its end the motivating of the will, the soul, more or less unconsciously and by virtue of its fidelity, passes to a prayer in which the understanding moves the will much more rapidly—one thought, and that more and more single and simple, actuating to the acts of prayer. This, in turn, leads to a state in which recollection is almost constant, and the soul's prayer is but a more deliberate and direct centering of itself upon God at special times. Whereas, in mental prayer careful and deliberate attention had, as it were, to be forced upon Divine realities, and the will moved to act by definite and prolonged reasoning, in the prayer of simplicity, acts follow thought without any appreciable interval, until in acquired contemplation the multiplicity of acts give way to a single direction of the soul toward God in which acts of prayer, as hitherto practised, are merged in an intuitive sight in which the soul no longer meditates upon God, nor addresses Him in varied acts, but simply, adoringly, and lovingly contemplates Him as its Supreme Good.

Those who will apply themselves faithfully to the practice of the interior life, who set their prayer in its rightful place and are prudently zealous in the matter of mortification, especially of self-will, ought to arrive in a comparatively short time at affective prayer.

I have already emphasised the fact that all souls are called to perfection, and this implies a more or less steady progress in the life of prayer, which, without any forcing, tends to seek that acquired contemplation which is the highest state possible to the soul's efforts aided by Divine grace. "Contemplation," says St. Thomas, "is for man the end of human life."

"It is the very aim of the teaching of Fr. Baker and his school that extraordinary prayer, contemplation, should be an ordinary state for Christian souls," said Bishop Hedley; also the Abbot of

<sup>3</sup> See also Confessional Meditation.

Pershore, "In point of fact, some of the best mystics and contemplatives are to be found in the world."

That this truth is so little recognised is largely due not only to the prevailing ignorance about any prayer except vocal prayer, intercessions and the like, but also because any mention of the higher states usually connotes to the mind such extraordinary phenomena as visions, locutions, raptures, ecstasy, which are comparatively rare and are not to be sought for or expected by any soul.

Further, many are held back by the thought that any advance would be only a mark of presumption in one so imperfect and full of failure. They are obsessed by the common error which seeks a self-made goodness as a condition for receiving the gifts of God, and give all their attention to efforts of their own when they should be simply abandoning themselves to the guidance of the Holy Spirit.

Another difficulty often arising in the minds of those who find themselves giving much more time to affective acts of the will, to the reiteration of a few acts or even one act of adoration, etc., than to actual meditation, or who remain motionless before God contemplating the Divine Majesty and Beauty, is the fear that they are "doing nothing." There is, of course, a danger of the soul drifting into a mere dreamy reverie in which nothing is done, and this must be checked at once by a return to considerations, acts<sup>4</sup> or resolutions, but when the eye of faith is riveted on God, the memory, imagination and will possessed by and drawn to Him, there is nothing to fear, for this is a state of prayer commended by all the Saints.

Père Surin says that there are three signs by which we may know that this kind of prayer is good and should be adhered to. First, that during the prayer the soul is in peace without any sense of weariness or ennui; second, that it goes forth from prayer with a great resolution to persevere in good; third, that during the day it sees clearly how to conduct itself and has much strength in the practice of virtue.\*

Bede Frost, 1877-. English priest, Church of England.  
*The Art of Mental Prayer.*

\* "Acts" as used here and "Acts of the Will" as used frequently elsewhere, refer to the movement of the will toward God in adoration, humiliation, renunciation, contrition, commitment, etc. It is the use of the understanding in discursive prayer that stirs these acts of the will. (Editors)

In ordinary <sup>5</sup> prayer there are four degrees: 1, vocal prayer, which is a recitation; 2, meditation, also called methodical or discursive prayer. This last term indicates a chain of quite distinct reflections or arguments. We can include in this degree meditated readings and the slow recitation of a vocal prayer, accompanied by some reflections which help us to penetrate its meaning; 3, affective prayer; 4, the prayer of simple regard or of simplicity.

We call affective prayer that mental prayer in which the affections are numerous or occupy much more space than the considerations and the arguments. Not that the considerations are absent (we must necessarily go on thinking), but they are less varied, less prolonged. In this degree we generally find as a foundation some dominant idea which does not, however, exclude a host of other secondary and less perceptible ideas.

This degree differs from meditation, therefore, merely as from the greater to the less. It is a discourse, only less varied and less apparent and leaving more room for sentiments of love, praise, gratitude, respect, submission, contrition, *etc.*, and also for practical resolutions. The deduction of truths is partly replaced by intuition. From the intellectual point of view the soul becomes simplified.

But the simplification can be carried farther still, and may extend, in a certain measure, to the will, which then becomes satisfied with very little variety in the affections. There is nothing to prevent them from being very ardent at times, but they are usually produced without many words. This is what we call the prayer of simplicity or of simple regard.

It can be defined thus: a mental prayer where (1) intuition in a great measure replaces reasoning; (2) the affections and resolutions show little variety and are expressed in few words.

When this state has reached its full development, not only do certain acts, of which I have just spoken, become rare, but the attempt to produce them results in a feeling of impotence and distaste. And it is then the same also with those representations of the imagination which would aid other persons in their prayer.

<sup>5</sup> All exercises beyond the "prayer of simple regard" Poulain considers in a category of extraordinary or mystical prayer. The most of *The Graces of Interior Prayer* is concerned with the various forms of this latter higher type of spiritual exercise.



The preceding definition is primarily negative, because it consists in saying what it is that has in part disappeared: the discursive act and the variety of words. It will be well to complete it by describing its positive side thus: in the prayer of simplicity there is a thought or a sentiment that returns incessantly and easily (although with little or no development) amongst many other thoughts, whether useful or no.

This dominant thought does not go as far as to be continuous. It merely returns frequently and of its own accord. We may compare it to the strands which thread the pearls of a necklace, or the beads of a Rosary, and which are only visible here and there. Or, again, it is like the fragment of cork, that, carried away by the torrent, plunges ceaselessly, appears and disappears. The prayer of simple regard is really only a slow sequence of single glances cast upon one and the same object.

This degree only differs from the preceding degrees as the greater differs from the less. The persistence of one principal idea, however, and the vivid impression that it produces, point as a rule to an increased action on God's part.

Many writers include the prayer of simplicity in affective prayer, which they thus regard as exhibiting two degrees of elevation. And in this case, between them and us, it is a mere question of words.

Before these two states could really constitute separate degrees of prayer, they must be capable of being prolonged for more than a few minutes at a time; they should continue, for instance, for an hour or more. For a very brief space, nothing is easier than for the mind to formulate ardent affections or to operate in a simple manner. Everybody can do it.

It is on this account that these states, although requiring the cooperation of grace, are not called mystic.

Ordinary prayer cannot comprise any general degrees other than those enumerated. There are two cases only. Either we reason, and then it is meditation, or we do not reason, and then it is affective prayer or the prayer of simplicity. All must necessarily enter one or other of these categories.\*

A. Poulain, S.J., 1740-1801. French Jesuit Father.  
*The Graces of Interior Prayer*, Trans. L. Y. Smith.

The education of the self in the successive degrees of orison has been compared by St. Theresa, in a celebrated passage in her life, to four ways of watering the garden of the soul so that it may bring forth its flowers and fruits. The first and most primitive of these ways is meditation.<sup>6</sup> This, she says, is like drawing water by hand from a deep well: the slowest and most laborious of all means of irrigation. Next to this is the orison of quiet,<sup>7</sup> which is a little better and easier: for here soul seems to receive some help, *i.e.*, with the stilling of the senses the subliminal faculties are brought into play. The well has now been fitted with a windlass—that little Moorish water-wheel possessed by every Castilian farm. Hence we get more water for the energy we expend—more sense of reality in exchange for our abstraction from the unreal. Also “the water is higher, and accordingly the labour is much less than it was when the water had to be drawn out of the depths of the well. I mean that the water is nearer to it, for grace now reveals itself more distinctly to the soul.” In the third stage, or orison of union, we leave all voluntary activities of the mind—the gardener no longer depends on his own exertions, contact between subject and object is established, there is no more stress and strain. It is as if a little river now ran through our garden and watered it. We have but to direct the stream. In the fourth and highest stage, God Himself waters our garden with rain from heaven “drop by drop.” The attitude of the self is now that of perfect receptivity, “passive contemplation,” loving trust. Individual activity is sunk in the “great life of the All.”

Evelyn Underhill, 1875-1944. English writer, mystic.  
*Mysticism.*

#### DETAILED DESCRIPTION OF EACH STAGE

##### Recollection (“Discursive Prayer”)

All the scattered interests of the self have here to be collected; there must be a deliberate and unnatural act of attention, a deliberate expelling of all discordant images from the consciousness—a hard and ungrateful task.

<sup>6</sup> This first degree of Prayer is termed variously by different writers as Meditation, Recollection, Discursive Prayer, Mental Prayer, etc.

<sup>7</sup> Prayer of Simplicity.

The unfortunate word *Recollection*, which the hasty reader is apt to connect with remembrance, is the traditional term by which mystical writers define just such a voluntary concentration, such a gathering in of the attention of the self to its "most hidden cell." That self is as yet unacquainted with the strange plane of silence which so soon becomes familiar to those who attempt even the lowest activities of the contemplative life. It stands here between the two planes of its being; the Eye of Time is still awake. It knows that it wants to enter the inner world, but it must find some device to help it over the threshold—rather, in the language of psychology, to shift that threshold and permit its subliminal intuition of the Absolute to emerge.

This device is as a rule the practice of meditation, in which the state of Recollection usually begins: that is to say, the deliberate consideration of and dwelling upon some one aspect of Reality—an aspect most usually chosen from amongst the religious beliefs of the self. Thus Hindu mystics will brood upon a sacred word, whilst Christian contemplatives set before their minds one of the names or attributes of God, a fragment of Scripture, an incident of the life of Christ; and allow—indeed encourage—this consideration, and the ideas and feelings which flow from it, to occupy the whole mental field. This powerful suggestion, kept before the consciousness by an act of will, overpowers the stream of small suggestions which the outer world pours incessantly upon the mind. The self, concentrated upon this image or idea, dwelling on it more than thinking about it—as one may gaze upon a picture that one loves—sinks into itself, and becomes in the language of asceticism "recollected" or gathered together.

To one in whom this state is established, consciousness seems like a blank field, save for the "one point" in its centre, the subject of the meditation. Towards this focus the introversive self seems to press inwards from every side; still faintly conscious of the buzz of the external world outside its ramparts, but refusing to respond to its appeals. Presently the subject of meditation begins to take on a new significance; to glow with life and light. The contemplative suddenly

feels that he knows it. . . . More, through it, hints are coming to him of mightier, nameless things. . . .

In these meditative and recollective states, the self still feels very clearly the edge of its own personality; its separateness from the Somewhat Other, the divine reality set over against the soul. It is aware of that reality: the subject of its meditation becomes a symbol through which it receives a distinct message from the transcendental world. There is yet no conscious fusion with a greater Life; no resting in the divine atmosphere, as in the "Quiet"; no involuntary and ecstatic lifting up of the soul to direct apprehension of truth, as in contemplation. . . .

This description makes it clear that "recollection" is a form of spiritual gymnastics; less valuable for itself than for the training which it gives, the powers which it develops.\*

Evelyn Underhill, 1875-1944. English writer, mystic.  
*Mysticism.*

### Prayer of Quiet

More important is the next great stage of orison; that curious and extremely definite mental state which mystics call the Prayer of Quiet or Simplicity, or sometimes the Interior Silence. This represents the result for consciousness of a further degree of that inward retreat which Recollection began.

Out of the deep, slow brooding and pondering on some mystery, some incomprehensible link between himself and the Real, or the deliberate practice of loving attention to God, the contemplative—perhaps by way of a series of moods and acts which his analytic powers may cause him "nicely to distinguish"—glides, almost insensibly, on to a plane of perception for which human speech has few equivalents. . . . Here the self passes beyond the stage at which its perceptions are capable of being dealt with by thought. It can no longer "take notes": can only surrender itself to the stream of an inflowing life, and to the direction of a larger will. Discursive thought would only interfere with this process; as it interferes with the vital processes of the body if it once gets them under its control.

With this surrender to something bigger, as with the surrender

of conversion, comes an immense relief of strain. The giving up of I-hood, the process of self-stripping, which we have seen to be the essence of the purification of the self, finds its parallel in this phase of the contemplative experience.

To one who is entering this state, so startling, very often, is the deprivation of all his accustomed mental furniture, that the negative aspect of his condition dominates consciousness; and he can but describe it as a nothingness, a pure passivity, an emptiness, a "naked" orison. He is conscious that all, even in this utter emptiness, is well. Presently, however, he becomes aware that *Something* fills this emptiness. Ceasing to attend to the messages from without, he begins to notice That which has always been within. His whole being is thrown open to its influence: it permeates his consciousness.

There are, then, two aspects of the Orison of Quiet: the aspect of deprivation, of emptiness which begins it, and the aspect of acquisition, of something found, in which it is complete. In its description, all mystics will be found to lean to one side or the other, to the affirmative or negative element which it contains. The austere mysticism of Eckhart and his followers, their temperamental sympathy with the Neoplatonic language of Dionysius the Areopagite, caused them to describe it—and also very often the higher state of contemplation to which it leads—as above all things an emptiness, a divine dark, an ecstatic deprivation. They will not profane its deep satisfactions by the inadequate terms proper to earthly peace and joy. To St. Theresa, and mystics of her type, on the other hand, even a little and inadequate image of its joy seems better than none. To them it is a sweet calm, a gentle silence, in which the lover apprehends the presence of the Beloved: a God-given state, over which the self has little control.

The emptying of the field of consciousness, its cleansing of all images—even of those symbols of Reality which are the objects of meditation—is the necessary condition under which alone this encounter can take place.

"Quiet" of all forms of mystical activity has been the most abused, the least understood. Its theory, seized upon, divorced from its context, and developed to excess, produced the foolish and dangerous

exaggerations of Quietism. The accusation of Quietism has been hurled at mystics whose only fault was a looseness of language which laid them open to misapprehension. Others, however, have certainly contrived, by a perversion and isolation of the teachings of great contemplatives on this point, to justify the deliberate production of a half-hypnotic state of passivity. With this meaningless state of "absorption in nothing at all" they were content; claiming that in it they were in touch with the divine life, and therefore exempt from the usual duties and limitations of human existence.

There can be no doubt that for selves of a certain psychical constitution, such a "false idleness" is only too easy of attainment. They can by wilful self-suggestion deliberately produce this emptiness . . . To do this from self-regarding motives, or to do it to excess . . . is a mystical vice. It leads to the absurdities of "holy indifference" and ends in the stultification of mental and moral life. The true mystic never tries deliberately to enter the orison of quiet. Where it exists in a healthy form, it appears spontaneously, as a phase in normal development; not as a self-induced condition, a psychic trick.<sup>8</sup>

The true condition of quiet, according to the great mystics, is at once active and passive . . . The departmental intellect is silenced, but the totality of character is flung open to the influence of the Real. Personality is not lost: only its hard edge is gone. A "rest most busy," says Hilton.

But though the psychological state which contemplatives call the prayer of quiet is a common condition of mystical attainment, it is not by itself mystical at all. It is a state of preparation: a way of opening the door. That which comes in when the door is opened will be that which we truly and passionately desire.\*-\*\*

Evelyn Underhill, 1875-1944. English writer, mystic.  
*Mysticism.*

## Contemplation

We must consider under the general name of contemplation those developed states of introversion in which the mystic attains

<sup>8</sup> "Much of the teaching of modern 'mystical' cults is thus crudely quietistic. It insists on the necessity of 'going into the silence,' and even, with a strange temerity, gives preparatory lessons in subconscious meditation: a proceeding which might well provoke the laughter of the saints."

somewhat: the results and rewards of the discipline of Recollection and Quiet. If this course of spiritual athletics has done its work, he has now brought to the surface, trained and made efficient for life, a form of consciousness—a medium of communication with reality—which remains undeveloped in ordinary men. In Contemplation, the self transcends alike the stages of symbol and of silence; and “energizes enthusiastically” on those high levels which are dark to the intellect but radiant to the heart. We must expect this contemplative activity to show itself in many different ways and take many different names, since its character will be largely governed by individual temperament. It appears under the forms which ascetic writers call “ordinary” and “extraordinary,” “infused” or “passive” Contemplation; and as that “orison of union” which we have already discussed.

First, then, as to Contemplation proper: what is it? It is supreme manifestation of that indivisible “power of knowing” which lies at the root of all our artistic and spiritual satisfaction. . . . It is an act, not of the Reason, but of the whole personality working under the stimulus of mystic love. Hence, its results feed every aspect of that personality: minister to its instinct for the Good, the Beautiful, and the True. Psychologically it is an induced state, in which the field of consciousness is greatly contracted: the whole of the self, its conative powers, being sharply focused, concentrated upon one thing. We pour ourselves out or, as it sometimes seems to us, *in* towards this overpowering interest: seem to ourselves to reach it and be merged with it. Whatever the thing may be, in this act it is given to us and we *know* it, as we cannot know it by the ordinary devices of thought.

The turning of our attention from that crisp and definite world of multiplicity, that cinematograph-show, with which intelligence is accustomed and able to deal, has loosed new powers of perception which we never knew that we possessed. Instead of sharply perceiving the fragment, we apprehend, yet how we know not, the solemn presence of the whole. Deeper levels of personality are opened up, and go gladly to the encounter of the universe. That universe, or some Reality hid between it and ourselves, responds to “the true lovely will of our heart.” Our ingoing concentration is balanced by a

great outgoing sense of expansion, of new worlds made ours, as we receive the inflow of its life. So complete is the self's absorption that it is for the time unconscious of any acts of mind or will; in technical language, its "faculties are suspended." This is the "ligature" frequently mentioned by teachers of contemplative prayer, and often regarded as an essential character of mystical states.

The object of the mystic's contemplation is always some aspect of the Infinite Life: of "God, the one Reality." Hence, that enhancement of vitality which artists or other unself-conscious observers may receive from their communion with scattered manifestations of Goodness, Truth, and Beauty, is in him infinitely increased . . . In the contemplative act, his whole personality, directed by love and will, transcends the sense-world, casts off its fetters, and rises to freedom . . . There it apprehends the supra-sensible by immediate contact, and knows itself to be in the presence of the "Supplier of true Life." Such Contemplation—such positive attainment of the Absolute—is the *whole act* of which the visions of poets, the intuition of philosophers, give us hints.

It is a brief act. The greatest of the contemplatives have been unable to sustain the brilliance of this awful vision for more than a little while . . . "My mind," says St. Augustine, in his account of his first purely contemplative glimpse of the One Reality . . . "with the flash of one hurried glance, attained to the vision of *That Which Is* . . . but I could not sustain my gaze: my weakness was dashed back, and I was relegated to my ordinary experience, bearing with me only a loving memory, and as it were the fragrance of those desirable meats on the which as yet I was not able to feed." This fragrance, as St. Augustine calls it, remains forever with those who have thus been initiated. They can never tell us in exact and human language *what* it was that they attained . . . though by their oblique utterances, they give us the assurance that the Object of their discovery is one with the object of our quest . . .

Contemplation is not, like meditation, one simple state, governed by one set of psychic conditions. It is a general name for a large group of states, partly governed—like all other forms of mystical activity—by the temperament of the subject, and accompanied by



feeling-states which vary from the extreme of quietude or "peace in life naughted" to the rapturous and active love in which "thought into song is turned." Some kinds of Contemplation are inextricably entwined with the phenomena of "intellectual vision" and "inward voices." In others we find what seems to be a development of the "Quiet": a state which the subject describes as a blank absorption, a darkness, or "contemplation in caligine." \*—\*\*

Evelyn Underhill, 1875–1944. English writer, mystic.  
*Mysticism.*<sup>9</sup>

### Indications of Progress

What are the normal signs which mark the transition from one stage to another? Actually, two movements have to be considered: first, the passage from the ordinary mental prayer of beginners to affective prayer, and second, that from affective prayer to ordinary, acquired contemplation. In the first case there is a gradual but increasing ability to pass more rapidly from considerations and the use of the imagination to acts of prayer. The soul finds in a single thought, or even in the act of placing herself in the presence of God, a desire and a facility to pour herself out in affective acts of prayer—catches fire, as it were, at once, without the labour of reflection hitherto necessary. It is not so much that meditation becomes more difficult as that it becomes less necessary. In this stage the acts of prayer may be spontaneous, or use may be made, especially where a certain aridity is experienced, of such acts and aspirations as those given by Father Baker at the end of his *Holy Wisdom*, or in Dom Rutherford's *Acts of Mental Prayer*. The test which determines the need and the time of making this advance in the prayer-life is the attraction the soul feels toward a more actual prayer, as contrasted with the exercise of the mind, *etc.*, which leads to prayer, and the fact that it moves the will to at least as great a desire and endeavour after the solid and common virtues as did the previous prayer. The latter may, and probably will, be slow in appearance; indeed, as all real progress in prayer must bring increased light and purity of heart, the soul will see its defects and imperfections more clearly, and may be tempted

<sup>9</sup> See *Mysticism* pages 298–379 for a full and illuminating description of the degrees of prayer. The selections included here necessarily present them in an abridged form.

to think that she is going back. It is the best of signs that the soul is walking in the path marked out by God for her, and that real, if little, seen progress is being made, if she goes out of prayer not only possessed with an interior peace in "the fine point of the soul," but also with a greater desire to exercise those virtues which concern her relation to others.

The signs which mark the transition between affective prayer and ordinary or acquired contemplation are three in number: (1) An inability to make reflections or to exercise the imagination upon Divine truths, coupled with an aridity resulting from the endeavour to make such acts wherein previously light and consolation were present. So long as meditation is fruitful, it should be persevered in; nor must it be supposed that the entry upon contemplation precludes any return to formal meditation, for, as the Saint says, until the new state has become habitual, "sometimes one, sometimes the other," occurs in this time of proficiency in such a way that very often the soul finds itself in this loving or peaceful attendance upon God, with all its faculties in repose, and very often also will find it necessary, for that end, to have recourse to meditation, calmly and with moderation. (2) Secondly, the will is more firmly rooted in God. It sees more clearly that thoughts about God and the means by which He is apprehended and approached are not God; that they are to be used, not rested in or enjoyed in themselves. (3) The third sign, "which is the most certain of the three," consists in the fact that the soul finds itself at peace in this prayer, delighting to be alone, occupied in a general knowledge and loving attention to God, undisturbed by any scruples that it is doing nothing, or that it is losing ground.

It is important to note that all three signs must be present before the soul may safely give up the practice of ordinary mental prayer. For the inability to meditate alone may be due to one's own fault, to lack of preparation, dryness or to conditions of physical health. Added to this inability there must be a positive lack of desire to occupy oneself with other things, and a more pronounced detachment from creatures. Yet even these two signs are insufficient in themselves, for both may be the effect of some morbid disinclination for things in general. But the third sign sets its seal upon the others, pro-

viding the soul with an assurance that, despite the subtlety and delicacy of this new state, it has begun to find the fruit sought in the labour of mental prayer.

This state of ordinary, acquired contemplation marks a real advance from the way of sense to the way of spirit, an intense deepening of the soul's union with God. It is the end—itself unending (for there can be no end in the sense of a full stop to the soul's growth in the loving knowledge of God)—of the journey of those whom God does not raise to the highest stages of the spiritual life.\*-\*\*

Bede Frost, 1877-. English priest, Church of England.  
*The Art of Mental Prayer.*

## ROLE OF THE SPIRITUAL DIRECTOR

A re-evaluation of the assistance that should be available to the sincere seeker especially in the beginning of the spiritual life is greatly needed. The combination of Protestant rationalism and individualism has made us think that each person could progress on the Way without help.

Modern psychology adds its testimony to the ancient wisdom that man is a poor judge of his own cause. A person can go far astray in self-analysis. He is usually a poor judge of his own spiritual state. It is encouraging to note that more persons are beginning to glimpse the enormity of the task of self-change, and to sense the need for spiritual and psychological help which the deep schism between conscious-intent and unconscious-motive factors makes necessary.

It is hoped and believed that as the demand for such guidance increases more persons qualified<sup>10</sup> to provide the necessary help will appear. Indeed Hindu scriptures point out that whenever a person arrives at the stage where he sincerely<sup>11</sup> seeks instruction a teacher will always be found to be available.

Fortunately there is little difficulty today, contrasted to even ten years ago, in recognizing the close relationship which exists between the functions of the psychotherapist and the religious director. It becomes more and more evident that they contribute to the actuation of the same process. In time these two functions may well be combined into a single office.

<sup>10</sup> These qualifications are rigorous inasmuch as they have first to do with the stage of inner spiritual development and then with certain knowledge and skill.

<sup>11</sup> That is, when he is actually prepared to take the necessary steps required by the Way.

One person who has mastered life is better than a thousand persons who have mastered only the contents of books, but no one can get anything out of life without God. If I were looking for a master of learning, I should go to Paris to the colleges where the higher studies are pursued, but if I wanted to know about the perfection of life, they could not tell me there.

Where, then, should I go? To (someone who has) a nature that is pure and free and nowhere else: there I should find the answer for which I so anxiously inquire.

Meister Johannes Eckhart, 1260-1327. German scholar, philosopher and mystic.

The young Tobias, when commanded to go to Rages, said: "I have no knowledge of the way." "Go then," replied his father, "and seek out some man to guide thee." "I say the same to you, my Philothea. Do you wish in good earnest to set out on the way to devotion? Seek out some good man to guide and conduct you; it is the admonition of admonitions." "Although you may search," says the devout Avila, "you will never find out the will of God so assuredly, as by the way of this humble obedience, so much recommended and practised by all the devout men of old."

St. Francis de Sales, 1567-1622. French Bishop of Geneva.  
*Introduction to the Devout Life*, Trans. Allan Ross.

A soul that comes out of the world to a religious contemplative life, or that living yet in the world is abstracted from the world and aspires to a state of perfection, at the first ordinarily will stand in need of an external instructor and guide for most matters that concern her in that way. The reason is because that such souls, although being supposed to be in the state of grace, have sufficient internal light to direct them in the ordinary duties of a Christian life, for the avoiding of sin and performing the necessary acts of virtues requisite; yet, as to the proper practices of internal ways, and to the ordering of common actions to the advancing of themselves towards contemplation, they are indeed *penitus animales*, governed by obscure light of natural reason, scarce knowing what an internal inspiration (with regard to such matters) is, and however very much

disabled are they to discern or correspond to such an inspiration. And for this reason their natural light and general knowledge that they have of their own insufficiency to be their own directors in a new unknown state, will tell them that they must have recourse to other guides skilled in those things of which themselves have no experience. Yet even this seeking and submitting themselves unto external directors is not to be esteemed merely an act of nature, or guided only by a natural light; but of such inspirations and supernatural light which attends the actions of all good Christians, by which they are taught and moved to distrust themselves, and not knowing as yet how to dispose themselves for the receiving supernatural lights from God (much less to merit them), grace directs them to use the mediation of others, and to hear and obey God, speaking and ordaining by them.\*

Augustin F. Baker, 1575-1641. English Benedictine Father.  
*Holy Wisdom.*

The real purpose of direction, he (Dom Chapman) insisted, was to keep the soul humble, and prevent it from trusting to its unaided judgment, or putting too much confidence in its own lights. He was fully alive to the dangers to which an imprudent Director could expose his penitents, realising how disastrous it was if—as sometimes happened—direction should degenerate into an orgy of self-analysis or over-introspection. A good Director, he held, must be a nurse, no more. He should confine himself to the task of teaching his penitent how to walk alone and unaided. That done, he should be ready to retire into the background; only emerging on rare occasions when unusual circumstances or some particular crisis called for his assistance. Directors of this kind would be no danger to simplicity or humility, while an over-dogmatic or too eager Director, giving unsuitable or unnecessary advice with relish and impressiveness, would harm both his penitent and himself.

The spiritual life is nourished—to speak of natural means only—chiefly by prayer and by reading. With regard to books, he insisted on two definite principles; first, that one should read only what

appealed to one, and secondly, that different books were necessary at different times in the soul's progress.

Dom John Chapman, O.S.B., 1865-1933. English, Biblical and Patristic scholar.  
*Spiritual Letters of Dom John Chapman.*

### Qualifications and Functions of the "Director"

The director of souls in the spiritual life must have a very clear, definite and convinced knowledge (1) of the scope and limitations of his office; (2) the end which is to be sought; (3) the means to be used; (4) the manner of applying those means to various classes of souls. (See author's text for long discussion of 4th point.)

(1) The office of a director is a subordinate, dependent one. His sole work is to wait upon God, to seek to discern the Divine will for each soul, to co-operate with the Divine leading by aiding the soul to see, understand and follow it. "It is necessary that the confessor should be an interior man, a man of prayer, a man well versed in spiritual things, as much by his own experience as by study and reading; that he should have no purely natural designs, either of vanity or self-interest, but that he should only consider the glory of God and the good of souls; that he should never act according to the leadings of his own spirit, but that he should judge of the things of God by the spirit of God" (Grou, *Manual for Interior Souls*, p. 128).

The director, then, must have a high regard and deep reverence for souls, and for the designs of God for each soul. "To direct a soul is to direct a world which has more secrets and diversities, more perfections and rarities than the material universe, and a more perfect relation to Him Who is both the Creator and the Idea of all that which exists outside the Divine Essence." Directors too often fall into the temptation of forcing souls according to their own predilections, of domineering and dictating, assuming a personal authority which is quite unjustifiable. "Their aim should be, then, not to guide souls by a way of their own suitable to themselves, but to ascertain, if they can, the way by which God Himself is guiding them. If they cannot ascertain it, let them leave these souls alone and not disquiet them" (*St. John of the Cross, The Living Flame, Stanza*

iii.). Mgr. Gay, whom Mgr. d'Hulst called "the master of spiritual direction in the nineteenth century," writes to a penitent who desired to follow his direction with the exact obedience of a servant to a master: "I shall not employ, at least habitually, in spite of your desire, the imperative formulas of which you speak. It seems to you that so you would find peace. Yes, but a natural peace which is not what I wish. Such commands would relieve you of the burdens of life, but it is good that you should feel the weight of them. I will be to you as the Cyrenian, nothing more. I would help you, not substitute myself for you. Strong natures have need of obedience; weak ones, such as yours, have a gentleness which inclines to idleness. It is necessary to give to each according to their needs. I do not want you to be a slave—the word is your own—a word excessive and reprehensible. I wish you to be a son, and a son reasonable, enlightened by the counsels of his father . . . but walking as a man, not as a child" (*Lettres*, iv. 10).

It necessarily follows that a soul cannot be directed until it is known, and that what is principally to be known is the particular will of God for it. "In the direction of a soul it is necessary to begin, and this is all-important, with an understanding of its interior state. If you know well the state of a soul, the operation of God and the action of grace within it, you have gained a very clear knowledge of the designs of God for it. But that is not all; the obstacles which grace finds there must also be seen, the action of the soul and its character, the vices and faults which exist. Further, to cause a soul to advance it must be brought back to the principle of sanctity within it, to Divine grace. I regard it as essential in direction that one shall allow grace to act with a great freedom, seek to distinguish false attraits from the true, and prevent souls from wandering from, or going beyond, the limits of such attraits."

(2) The end to be sought. This is nothing less than the end for which man was created, to seek, find, know, praise, reverence and serve God. The director's whole efforts are to be aimed at bringing souls to see this, at creating in them a desire for and an intention to seek this end, and of aiding them by all the means in their power.

Now this emphatically does not mean that we set before our eyes

a certain ideal of sanctity and endeavour to force all souls into the paths by which that ideal was attained, for, although the end is one, it has to be reached in the particular way desired by our Lord. The way of St. Augustine is not the way of St. Dominic; St. Teresa is very unlike St. Margaret Mary; St. Philip Neri treads another path from St. Paul of the Cross. The whole setting of a soul has to be considered, and what needs far more insistence upon than it commonly gets is the truth that the sanctification of a soul depends upon its fulfilling the duties of its state as perfectly as possible with the aid of grace.

(3) The means to be used. . . . Too much direction is moral rather than spiritual, more concerned with sin than with God, with self-examination and self-improvement rather than with the search for God. "It is a great grace from God to practise self-examination, but too much is as bad as too little, as they say, believe me, by God's help, we shall advance more by contemplating His divinity than by keeping our eyes fixed on ourselves" (St. Teresa, *Interior Castle*, M. I., chap. ii. 9).

A director should always adopt a certain attitude of reserve toward those whom he directs. Frequent intercourse is undesirable; long visits, conversations and profuse correspondence to be avoided; the relation between director and directed should always be *in Christo*.

Far from attaching souls to himself, the director must do all that lies in his power to enable them to walk in entire dependence upon the guidance and in the power of the Holy Spirit. People will ask, for instance, what particular mortification they should undertake, and it is often better to answer by pointing out that, the end of all mortification being the bringing of our will into union with the Divine Will, they can probably think of something which they have not yet done, and which they need to do, to effect this more completely. Such mortification will nearly always be allied to the subject of their particular examen. This throwing them back upon themselves, as it were, not only strengthens the will, but will often reveal to them the fact that, in asking advice, they were, in reality, endeavouring to evade what our Lord had already demanded of



them. Behind the question there lay, perhaps unconsciously, the hope that something more pleasing to self would be imposed. "It is necessary that the director should know the soul perfectly, and this once done, he ought to indicate the way to be followed and then leave her to the Holy Spirit." (Dom. R. Thibaut).

In order that a soul should not only begin well, but also advance in the way of perfection, there are certain essential points which directors should keep in mind. The first is the need of establishing the soul in a true peace. To this end not only is a general confession advisable, but also a full and frank account of one's life, circumstances, difficulties, graces received, etc. A soul cannot be directed, as I have said, unless it is known, and many go on making routine confessions for years without ever knowing themselves or making themselves known in such a way that any adequate direction can be given. There is always an unknown region in which, consciously or unconsciously, lie the roots of sins confessed again and again, and this suffices to prevent that peace without which no progress can be made.

Writes Père Ginhac to Mother Mary of St. Francis Borgia, "Peace is the possession of the soul which endeavours in all things to do the will of God, giving itself without reserve. . ." "It is no doubt necessary to do things as well as we can, but without torturing oneself or being in a perpetual *qui vive*; we must put away all vain fears as to our state, for these never come from God, but only from our imagination; God never troubles a soul which is sincere. He may reprove or warn it, and that severely, but all agitated or troubled thoughts come of the imagination or the Devil (cf. *Rules for the Discernment of Spirits*, Ignatian Exercises); that when troubled in mind we must never change our conduct."

Second, the director's work being to further the will of God in souls, he must make them see the personal nature of religion, personal love, devotion and service for God in Jesus Christ; not a mere tame acquiescence in a moral code, but a burning enthusiasm for a Master, a passion of the lover for the beloved. For—strange as it may sound the Christian religion is this, the joyous, heroic, magnificent thing the Saints have seen and lived; not the dull, cold, safe, respectable

and comfortable travesty to which the English eighteenth and nineteenth centuries reduced it.

The director should never tend to rigorism. The Saints, ever hard upon themselves, were ever tender towards others. St. Francis of Assisi, St. Dominic, St. Alphonsus, St. Paul of the Cross, noted for the severity of their austerities, had the greatest compassion for sinners, using all their efforts to comfort and encourage their penitents. "It is necessary to hearten and encourage souls and to make them walk with confidence in God; without this they will never advance in the way of perfection."

A later director, noted for his life of severe mortification and penance, Père Ginhac, S.J., says, "Severe directors teach virtue rather than perfection. To acquire virtue, fear is useful, but to progress toward perfection, love is necessary. Fear makes servants; love, the children of God" (Cagnac, *Lettres Spirituelles en France*, II, 262).

The common desire, too, to immerse themselves in active works should be closely watched, for their chief concern at first must be with their own souls, their most necessary practices, prayer and mortification. If some active work seems to be desirable, it should be of as hard and as hidden a nature as possible. There are already too many unspiritual amateurs doing "parochial work"; priests will be well advised to see that any work done for God and for souls can only be done by humble, obedient, loving, practising Christians, and to spend some of the time in producing such, being content to wait, seeing many things left undone, until he has trained souls who are in some degree capable of being the instruments of Divine grace. Third, to establish a true peace in souls and to nourish their good desires means that their prayer-life must be the director's first and continuous concern. Unless such are taught to pray, they are taught nothing. To inspire a soul with the true idea of prayer, to get it interested in its prayer, is the greatest thing we can do for it. The director, then, must inquire as to the knowledge of the end, value and practice of prayer possessed, the kind of prayer made, the particular difficulties encountered, the attraits and special devotions to which the soul is led, and, where necessary, he must choose for and direct the soul in such methods of prayer as seem most suitable.

Now nothing of this can be done unless the director is himself convinced of the necessity and value of prayer, and this will be in proportion to his own practice and experience of prayer. Study of the science of prayer is most necessary, as necessary as it is wanting, but no degree of study alone will give that sense of conviction which is needed in order to be convincing. "Without prayer, our work will be sterile, our words dry, our direction altogether unfruitful. . . . All the faults which arise in the direction of souls come from the fact that directors do not apply themselves to the holy exercise of prayer" (M. Olier, *op. cit.*, Art. i.).\*—\*\*

Bede Frost, 1877—. English priest, Church of England.  
*The Art of Mental Prayer.*

## IMPORTANT AIDS TO PRAYER

### The Practice of Mortification <sup>12</sup>

Mortification or deliberate dying to self is inculcated with an uncompromising firmness in the canonical writings of Christianity, Hinduism, Buddhism and most of the other major and minor religions of the world, and by every theocentric saint and spiritual reformer who has ever lived out and expounded the principles of the Perennial Philosophy. But this "self-naughting" is never (at least by anyone who knows what he is talking about) regarded as an end in itself. It possesses merely an instrumental value, as the indispensable means to something else.

That mortification is the best which results in the elimination of self-will, self-interest, self-centered thinking, wishing and imagining. Extreme physical austerities are not likely to achieve this kind of mortification. But the acceptance of what happens to us (apart, of course, from our own sins) in the course of daily living *is* likely to produce this result. If specific exercises in self-denial are undertaken, they should be inconspicuous, non-competitive and uninjurious to health. Thus, in the matter of diet, most people will find it sufficiently mortifying to refrain from eating all the things which

<sup>12</sup> The full discussion of mortification in chapter VI of *The Perennial Philosophy* will richly reward the careful reader.

the experts in nutrition condemn as unwholesome. And where social relations are concerned, self-denial should take the form, not of showy acts of would-be humility, but of control of the tongue and the moods—in refraining from saying anything uncharitable or merely frivolous (which means, in practice, refraining from about fifty per cent of ordinary conversation), and in behaving calmly and with quiet cheerfulness when external circumstances or the state of our bodies predisposes us to anxiety, gloom or an excessive elation.

Perhaps the most difficult of all mortifications is to achieve a “holy indifference” to the temporal success or failure of the cause to which one has devoted one’s best energies. If it triumphs, well and good; and if it meets defeat, that also is well and good, if only in ways that, to a limited and time-bound mind, are here and now entirely incomprehensible.

Sufficient not only unto the day, but also unto the place, is the evil thereof. Agitation over happenings which we are powerless to modify, either because they have not yet occurred, or else are occurring at an inaccessible distance from us, achieves nothing beyond the inoculation of here and now with the remote or anticipated evil that is the object of our distress. Listening four or five times a day to newscasters and commentators, reading the morning papers and all the weeklies and monthlies—nowadays, this is described as “taking an intelligent interest in politics.” St. John of the Cross would have called it indulgence in idle curiosity and the cultivation of disquietude for disquietude’s sake.

In the practice of mortification as in most other fields, advance is along a knife-edge. On one side lurks the Scylla of egocentric austerity, on the other the Charybdis of an uncaring quietism. The holy indifference inculcated by the exponents of the Perennial Philosophy is neither stoicism nor mere passivity. It is rather an active resignation. Self-will is renounced, not that they may be a total holiday from willing, but that the divine will may use the mortified mind and body as its instrument for good.\*-\*\*

Aldous Huxley, 1894-. English author, literary critic.  
*The Perennial Philosophy.*

### The Practice of Daily Reading

If we look into the daily regimen of the men and women who seem to us to be growing in the religious life, we shall seldom find them neglecting to read nor failing to acknowledge that what they have read has profoundly influenced what they have done.

Not all lawyers emulate Sir Thomas More. Yet I happen to know two of the ablest legal minds in Philadelphia who are the most eager readers of devotional works and who find this nurture an imperative in keeping inwardly fresh and sensitive. These men are hungry. They are conscious of need and they are not too proud to ask for help. Close friends of mine ask one another. "What do you feed on?" "Where are you finding light?" "Who has pointed you most directly to what is real?" They want bread, not a diet of *hors d'oeuvres*. They want to be directed, not diverted. They are becoming less interested in reading about religion and religious controversy than in reading works that have sprung out of the religious response to life and hence that minister to it in themselves. In short, they are in search of books that will strengthen, increase, and intensify devotion. And devotion, we recall, means the "promptitude, fervor, affection, and agility" in our response to the burning ray of love that attends us. Here there is a longing for voices that speak of discovery, of its way, and of its object.

People do not read this *sacred* literature today: they are too "emancipated." They will read Dostoevsky with avidity—chiefly because he lived a large part of his time in Hell, with the topography of which they are themselves perfectly familiar. But they forget that Dostoevsky himself was a passionate student of the New Testament. They are sensationalists; they want strong, rich meat, and find the dry bread of true spiritual teaching unassimilable. Yet I am bold to suggest that they will discover in the end that they cannot afford to dispense with it. . . . "It is not going too far to suggest that every individual who pursues his search for spiritual illumination with sufficient persistence finally finds himself obliged to leave secular literature behind him. He must sit at the feet of those who, even if they are less sympathetic figures, owe their authority to the fact

that they are standing on more elevated ground. He must study scripture."<sup>13</sup>

How many times one has laid the *Bible* aside in favor of what seemed more real and compelling or more attractive and readable witnesses to the religious life, only to be driven back to it again by the great hunger to let the measured dignity and beauty of its language stir in him an emotion like that which comes in listening to classical music or in seeing a finely proportioned building.

Revealing writing shares its treasures progressively and only at a price. It exacts a willingness on the reader's part to let go his tense, tightly-clenched efforts at inner security, and a willingness to let the angel freely trouble the waters of his life to his healing. But for one who is in growth, and is seeking to yield, the Bible becomes an indispensable companion because it does reveal the way and because it seems to point beyond to infinitely more of the same source of light which he has already experienced.

The cloud of witnesses and teachers, however, did not end at the close of the first century. And those who seek for nurture in the religious life are acutely conscious of the fact that revelation is continuous. It has never stopped. In the eighteen intervening centuries a whole row of rich classics has appeared. They will not all speak to the needs of each person who reads them. We often find real companions who are to be cultivated by long intimacy, only at the end of a considerable search, a search that we must make for ourselves.

Take the *Confessions of Augustine*. There are some who will never respond to the Augustinian type, but who seek a gentler guide whose twice-born character is not so sharply to the fore. Only the patient reader can follow the slow emancipation of this strong, proud, self-willed man from the slavery of an inner paralysis, induced by conflicting desires, to a freedom that he called the *libertas major*: where you love God with all your heart and soul and mind, and are free to *do* as you then please. Only such a reader will learn of the way in which one by one Augustine was stripped of the evasions by

<sup>13</sup> *Prospects of Humanism*, pp. 161-163 (Scribner).

which he illustrates his theme of the fugitive from God. However there are few readers for whom this specimen of the death struggle between the Christian "obsession" and the restless mind and spirit of decadent fourth-century Roman culture will not yield insights into the faithfulness of the divine companion, the responsibilities and privileges of parenthood and friendship, the influences of thought systems, and the blessedness of decision and commitment.

"Sacred Literature," to use Lawrence Hyde's term, does not, however, exhaust the materials that may be used in devotional reading. Well-chosen biography is another source of reading that quickens devotion.

In reading devotional literature, the limitations of time and the wisdom of those who have used it most profitably agree in urging the wise use of the veto. We cannot read all. We must select. Find a few spiritual "*staples*" and feed on them until you know them. Be proud to be ignorant of vast areas of the "religious book" field. Nowhere does novelty count so little as in devotional reading. Few young people today and too few of those in my generation have ever carefully read the same book through five times or even three. A real devotional book is one that you can live with year after year and that never stales or never fails to speak to some needs in your life.\*-\*\*

Douglas V. Steere, 1901-. American author, Professor of Philosophy.  
*Prayer and Worship.*

Oh, how perplexed is the spirit of the man who does not understand the true sense of the words of Scripture, though every day their meaning is uttered with a sweet voice. This thing may be compared to a beautiful maiden imprisoned in a palace. This maiden has a lover, but no one knows of his love except the maiden herself. And as the lover, urged on by the desire to see his beloved, passes often by the palace, throwing his glances in all directions, to obtain sight of her, the maiden resolves to make a small opening in the wall that imprisons her; and as her lover passes, she hastily looks out of the opening, and then draws back again. But of all those persons who were passing by the palace at the same time as the lover, no one

saw the face of the lovely maiden. Only the lover saw, because he was the only one whose eyes and heart and soul were drawn toward her. It is even thus with the Scripture, which does not reveal its mystery except to its lovers. But to the initiate, whose eyes and heart and soul are drawn toward the beloved, she will for a brief moment deign to show herself. The Holy Scripture proceeds thus with a man: first she signals him to approach. If the man does not understand, she calls him "fool," as it is written: "Whosoever is a fool, let him come to me." When the man comes near, she speaks to him through the veil which still separates them. The man begins to understand little by little. He is then at the stage of syllogistic interpretation. She then begins to speak to him through a transparent veil. The man is then at the stage of symbolic interpretation. And finally, when habit has made him familiar with Scripture, she shows herself and speaks with him face to face, revealing the mysteries which she has hidden from the beginning of time. Then Scripture says to the man: "Thou seest now that in the same words which before contained a literal meaning, there is now a mystic meaning"; and just as, for the literal meaning, all the words must be there, without addition or curtailment, in the same way, for the mystical meaning, all the words must be there, without the addition of a single letter. And for this reason it is proper for men to give themselves zealously to the study of the Scripture, and to become its lovers.\* (*Zohar*, II, 99a.)

Edmond Fleg, 1874-. French author.  
*The Jewish Anthology*, Trans. M. Samuel.

### Psycho-Physical Aids

What the body does during prayer and meditation is almost as important as what the mind and spirit do. Indeed, if the body does not have the power to determine what the mind and spirit *will* do, it does seem to have almost absolute veto power as to what they shall *not* do. It therefore behooves anyone who wants to go beyond the rudiments of prayer to pay some intelligent attention to the immutable laws of God concerning his marvelous body-instrument.

*Relaxation*—One major problem involved in meditation especially is to learn to channel the mind and relax the body at the same time.



This sounds simple, but in reality it is contrary to most of our every-day psycho-physical habits. Most of us are totally incapable of keeping our minds focused on a given subject without tensing at least our necks or our eyes, and probably many other parts of the body. No wonder then that we get into trouble in meditation when we begin with the difficult art of directing our minds for moments at a time toward subjects which are wholly different from our usual surface occupations.

It is, of course, impossible for any person to be completely relaxed during these special periods of prayer if for all the rest of his hours his body is off-balance and therefore needing to be tense in order to stay in an upright position. This being true, we are in reality thinking an impossibility when we talk about relaxing the average un-coordinated mind-body organism during prayer, until we have tackled the root-problem of coordination during all one's hours, whether one be lying, sitting, standing or walking. But under existing conditions this seems to be impossible for many who are sincerely in earnest about learning to pray. So, temporarily at least, in lieu of solving the major problem of body-mind coordination, here are a few suggestions which have proved their usefulness.

The place to begin to relax is in the neck, which is not only the bridge between the body and the head but is also the key which locks or unlocks most of the body's tensions. The trouble is that most beginners who try to relax try too hard. The best way is to try less—or rather not to try at all, but simply to sit quietly and wait, mentally stepping aside and *allowing* the neck to relax itself in its own skillful way. Other parts of the body may be treated in the same way: hands, feet, shoulders, chin, eyes, throat, abdomen. But after one has learned the simple trick of letting go with the neck, the rest of the body should automatically lose much of its tightness.

Even after the neck is relaxed, the eyes may need special consideration. For most eyes have from childhood built up a habit of strain which it sometimes takes patience to overcome. The danger of tension is greatest when the brain is active and the eyes are open without being given anything to do. Then all too often they park

themselves at some point in space and stay there staring, straining not only themselves but the mind as well. The result is worse because usually they form a habit of returning again and again to the same side, left or right, thus adding muscle imbalance to the inevitable brain-fatigue.

Dr. William Bates and his followers have done a highly useful work in making people realize that the fovea or central seeing part of the eye was never meant to stop moving. Even when the eyes are closed, these should keep shifting, asleep or awake, automatically following the images of thought. The age-old practice of closing the eyes in prayer has therefore more reason than simply avoiding distraction. But if one is too tense, is trying with too much effort to concentrate, the eyes will tense also and may stay fixed, even if closed. One may need to stop a moment and remind the eyes to let go. Or one may cover the closed eyes with the crossed hands in that other ancient attitude of prayer, which has to its advantage not only the value of association but also a physiological result from the warmth and contact of the hands.

*Breathing*—Slow, rhythmic breathing is a great means to body-mind relaxation and has always been considered one of the chief steps in acquiring that serenity and poise which must precede and accompany fruitful meditation. . . . To re-learn rightly the natural skill of breathing may take serious instruction and practice. Nevertheless, there is much that anyone who really desires it can do for himself. A good deal has been written about the dangers of changing breathing habits except under skillful supervision. Probably these warnings are necessary, especially for those whose ardor leads them to long periods of consciously controlled breathing. But most people are in greater danger of doing too little rather than too much. . . .

The first thing to remember is to begin slowly. Thinking about breathing for only very short periods at first, then gradually increase the time. The second thing to remember is that nobody has to strain to take in air, or to suck it in by effort. Our world of atmospheric pressure gives us freely each breath of air in good measure, providing only that we expand and contract the thoracic air-box and receive the breath that is poured into it. Much harm can be done by

forgetting to open the receiver-box or, on the other hand, by forgetting to be receivers only and trying to be grabbers.

Another point to remember is that the air as it comes in should go as far back in the body as possible. One can test himself by laying a hand on the chest and watching to see whether it moves as he breathes. If it does, inhibit this rising and falling of the chest-wall and think of the air as going down the *back* of the body-cavity. Of course, it actually fills the whole lung-space, but this device of thinking it down—and up—the inside of the backbone, as Jeanette Lee <sup>14</sup> has pointed out, helps to involve the back-muscles, without the danger of unnatural effort and strain. Contrary to most people's habits, these back muscles should move rhythmically out and in with each inhalation and expulsion of breath.

In this way one may sit or lie quietly and breath slowly in and out, perhaps counting at first in order to establish rhythm, letting the rhythmic swing of the diaphragm accomplish those many physical and mental results which must be accomplished before serenity and detachment can be expected. Such deep rhythmic breathing, once established during a conscious period of preparation for meditation, one may put into the sub-conscious a standing-order to maintain this kind of rightness during the whole of the meditation period—and after. This is a very different thing from trying to control the function by conscious and continuous attention. The hint is soon taken, providing: that we don't strain or try to take in too much air, that at first the reminders are short enough and frequent enough, and that they are in line with the wonderfully coordinated mechanism with which we were originally endowed.

*Posture*—It is unwise to talk about breathing without at the same time thinking of physical posture. Alexander and the Lees, and probably many other conscientious teachers, refuse to teach breathing at all until the body has been trained to maintain that balance between parts which is necessary for coordinated functioning. But apart from this posture-breathing relationship, the position of the body during prayer is a highly important matter. Probably, however,

<sup>14</sup> "Gerald Stanley Lee and his wife Jeanette Lee of this country have gone far in developing the system of mind-body coordination started in England by F. M. Alexander."

the only positive things that can be said about it are that it should be a relaxed and balanced position, that it should always be the same position and that it should be quietly maintained without change or movement during the whole of the meditation period.<sup>15</sup> Of course the traditional Christian position for prayer is down on the knees. This posture seems to express with the body the spirit's adoration and humility. Besides, it is a position in which one naturally puts the hands over the eyes, a practice which, as has been said, is physiologically sound. It is, however, a difficult position to maintain for many moments at a time and is therefore not usually best for those who believe that time and a sense of leisureliness are needed for prayer.

The other great traditional position is that used by many Eastern and some Western meditators—sometimes called the meditation position—in which one sits cross-legged on the floor, arms crossed or a hand on each thigh. This position is difficult at first for Western muscles, accustomed only to sitting on chairs, but if one begins with a five minute period and gradually increases the time, it soon becomes comfortable—perhaps even more conducive to wholeness and recollection than any other position. If this be true, there must be a physiological cause. One obvious reason is that it is almost fool-proof. It would take a negatively skillful person to sit thus and still maintain the sway-back and the forward-tilted pelvis which are usual in our ordinary sitting or standing—and which in themselves prohibit correct breathing and probably every other normal functioning. As any position which stretches the spine naturally frees the circulation and the breathing and helps the body to be “whole,” there seems to be good reason why the greatest meditating peoples of the world have naturally assumed this posture when they have wanted the body to cooperate with the spirit. . . .

All these matters of breathing, posture and physical relaxation may seem entirely too physiological to be important to anyone whose chief concern is with his spirit. They may, however, make the

<sup>15</sup> “Even this statement cannot be too rigidly insisted upon. There is something to be said for the practice of Catholic monks who maintain a slow rhythmic walk during the telling of their beads . . .”

difference between a blocked channel and one that is open for the waters of God to flow through. In a matter of such supreme import no detail is unworthy of our serious attention and action.\*-\*\*

Helen Molyneux Salisbury. American poet, teacher of Body-Mind Coordination.  
Written for this compilation.

### The Element of Time

We have to make access to our subconscious and we know that it is difficult for us individualized, materialized Westerners. We must then approach that threshold when the diurnal tide favours, when the body-mind is passing from its rest on the sleep-facet to its rest on its waking-facet. It is no use attempting to cross a bar when the tide is out. Evening and morning are therefore probably the best times. When the mind is recovering from sleep it has now been established that it takes a full hour to close one aperture and open fully the other. Dreams, most people know, last often for an hour or two in the memory and then like hoar-frost are gone. When the mind is approaching sleep, it again passes across the threshold. Hypnotic and all subconscious suggestion-therapy has shown that there is a belt of accessibility to the deeper mind, or, perhaps a better, more exact simile, a stage of compromise when the two apertures of apprehension (that of the conscious and that of the subconscious mind) partly overlap. Then exchange can take place and the consciousness which has insight can inform the normal consciousness which, because it looks out exclusively on the world of physical action, has possession of material means.

For an hour after sleep, while dreams can still be recalled and an hour before, when the mind is preparing for sleep, intercommunication is possible. It is wise to reserve a considerable portion of these periods for spiritual exercises.\*

Anonymous

### The Use of the Symbol

In trying to find methods of attaining union with God, religious people have long made use of symbols and images. The Reality to be perceived is beyond sign and symbol and yet for many people

certain symbols have usefulness, especially during the period of purgation. Many mystics have found meditation possible only when they held in their thought such pictures as the figure of Jesus in his sorrows, the Blessed Mary, the Cross. In the Vedanta tradition the Lotus is widely used for meditating on the Self—the effulgent Light. Rosaries, pictures, a flower, a tree, a cloud, or a mountain often elevate the consciousness to the Divine.

Symbols can, of course, become fetish. Unless one remains clear, the symbol can come to take the place of that rapport with the Reality behind it and beyond it, for which it stands. Symbols, therefore, should only serve as a “springboard” toward recollection of God and to remind one of what one is in relationship to Him.

Anonymous  
Written for this collection.

Our epoch is scientifically and technically minded. We want first of all to understand and to know and we believe in reason. And so we try to do the same in understanding religious ideas. But religious ideas are always and everywhere symbolic truths. They can never be understood in a rational way alone. They are, as symbols, both rational and irrational; they are paradoxical. They unite psychical facts of the conscious and unconscious mind. Though they appeal to our reason and knowledge, they have contents which we cannot yet know because they are only in the making. Religion is in its essence symbolic and every religious symbol, when it originated, was an experience surpassing conscious knowledge. When a religion becomes established, symbols are worked into dogmas. The Roman Catholic Church understands even the dogma to be a symbolic truth. “The dogma unites knowing and not knowing, something which is intelligible and something which is unintelligible, a clarity and at the same time a mystery.”<sup>16</sup>

One of the most valuable achievements of Professor Jung is to have re-opened the way to symbolic thinking. By this he has led us to understand religious ideas of every race and time. He also helps the modern individual either to understand his own religion in a

<sup>16</sup> *Die Gnosis des Christentums*, Salzburg, 1939.

deeper and more vital way or to find and to experience symbols which come to him from the depths of the unconscious, from that creative psyche which has always been the mother of all the things and ideas which move humanity. The symbols which are born in someone with the help of psychology are individual, but are at the same time universal, because they derive from that layer in man which is common to all. Thus the individual is enriched by an inner creative life which is full of meaning, and at the same time he is connected with mankind in a more vital way than merely rational and conscious efforts could achieve. He may not adhere to a given church or creed, but the Christian spirit which should unite all mankind cannot be denied to him.\*

Toni Wolff, contemporary Swiss analytical psychologist.  
*Christianity Within.*

## CHAPTER FIVE

### *Prayer and Meditation* (continued)

If worship is the highest activity of man's spirit we shall expect to find it difficult. But we shall also expect to find that there are avenues leading to worship for all sorts and conditions of men.

AUTHOR UNKNOWN

Look that, leaving all curious seeking, thou do wholly worship thy Lord God with thy substance, offering up unto Him plainly and wholly thine own self, all that thou art and such as thou art.

THE CLOUD OF UNKNOWING

Such practise of inward orientation is no mere counsel for monks retired in cloisters. This practise is the heart of religion. It is the secret, I am persuaded, of the inner life of the Master of Galilee. He expected this secret to be freshly discovered in everyone who would be his follower.\*

THOMAS R. KELLY



## CHAPTER FIVE

### *Prayer and Meditation*

(CONTINUED)

#### PROCEDURES AND PATTERNS FOR MEDITATION

Most of the procedures and patterns included here are for beginners. They are suggestions only—stimuli to original meditation plans. If classified they would fall largely under the discursive<sup>1</sup> type of mental prayer. Continued practice should bring a progression toward the more simplified forms—*i.e.*, affective prayer and the prayer of simplicity.

Since the major purpose of discursive prayer is to convince<sup>2</sup> the conscious as well as to influence the unconscious mind concerning the existence of an Ultimate Reality,<sup>3</sup> the choice of material should be guided by the background and experience of each individual. It may take initiative, patience and expert advice for some persons to discover the approach which is meaningful to them, and to find material which presents few semantic barriers.

It is good to remind oneself that after prayer practice has been established experience will open the way so that prejudices will yield, the problem of terminology will gradually disappear, and the particular approach to ultimate truths will loom less and less important.

Sometimes after experimenting with several different procedures one may discover a single pattern which is so well adapted to one's needs, and which allows for such infinite expansion in meaning that it can be used for many months, even years, with great value.

Most of the discursive patterns included here embody five common elements. They are (1) realization of need—the consideration of personal

<sup>1</sup> See page 197.

<sup>2</sup> We have seen how this state of convincement differs from mere verbal or intellectual affirmation. It implies that one becomes convinced to the point where a total change in perspective occurs affecting one's habit of living—bringing a complete renovation in attitude and action.

<sup>3</sup> See Appendix.

and social "Darkness" (their interrelatedness and cause, with emphasis on the individual's own inner "Darkness"<sup>4</sup>), (2) affirmation of man's essential nature as a part of God, (3) affirmation of the power of God within and without, (4) concentration on God within, (5) commitment to God.

It will be noted that two aspects of the Life-Process are represented in these elements—the emptying and the filling, the purgative and the illuminative. It is important to achieve a balance of these two emphases.

This chapter is arranged as follows: First are the advices and the procedure suggestions for discursive prayer, then the suggested patterns for discursive prayer, followed by the advices on procedure for affective prayer, and concluding with two brief patterns for affective prayer. Much of the material on procedures was chosen from early Christian mystic sources, while the patterns are largely contemporary. If the reader will remember the theology of the centuries in which these ancient advices were written, he will be fortified against being discouraged or repelled by the language employed. In each case where terms are used that seem meaningless, the reader is urged to replace such terms with vivid modern counterparts. For example the terms "hell" and "final judgment" can be replaced by those terrifying results of greed and fear (arising from unconscious conflicts)—as experienced or observed both personally and on a world scale.

Further, if the reader finds the mystic emphasis on the life and "mysteries" of Jesus of Nazareth difficult he only needs to recall the several other approaches to the needed conviction of Reality and choose subject matter for his prayer practice from one of them. (The discursive meditation patterns included are based on a variety of such subject matter. Also see Appendix.) We need to evaluate the classic procedure suggestions mainly from the standpoint of the general movement within the meditation and the elucidation of the "points" which they found effective. Also it is wise to pause before the significant evidence their writings offer concerning the effectiveness of meditation on the life and spirit of Jesus as the supreme manifestation of God. They recommend the visualizing of incidents in the life of Christ, the using of the understanding in focusing on the significance of each incident. This approach undoubtedly has been, and still is, the most inspiring and transforming of all approaches for vast numbers of people. One should not let the accumulation of dogma

<sup>4</sup> See Chapter II (Self-knowledge), Chapter III (Obstacles to Progression); also see Chapter VI (Psychotherapy) for the methods that aid in reaching the deeper levels of consciousness. A combination of both psychological and religious subject matter can be used in discursive prayer.

and creed obscure this vital approach to God. The records of Jesus' life are open to all—a fresh study<sup>5</sup> of them can yield richly in subject matter for meditation as well as for a general heightening of vision and purpose.

We hope the variety of suggested patterns will not prove confusing. They are included with the hope of meeting the needs of people with different backgrounds.<sup>6</sup> The important step of course is to start the practice even if one has not located a “director” and therefore has to experiment with several procedures. Just the attempt to practice will in itself be clarifying and steadying though it may take some time before orientation to the new undertaking is achieved. The habit of mental concentration has first to be established. When one considers how unpracticed most people are in controlling the focus of attention—in consciously directing and holding it on any chosen object or idea, one will not become easily discouraged if distractions abound and if progress comes slowly.

Some directors advise simple concentration exercise as the preliminary to actual meditation practice. One chooses a single object or a simple short phrase around which to bind the attention for a space of several minutes. Simple concentration does not employ the Reason, but attempts to effect an opening of consciousness toward the perception of what is placed before it. Thus does an artist “perceive”—by becoming quietly absorbed in what he has chosen to observe, letting it speak to him. The habit of accurate perception, even on the material plane is a matter of high skill. Facility in short-term concentration will greatly assist the more prolonged practice of meditation wherein there is need for an undistracted use of the understanding. The habit of concentration in all daily affairs likewise helps in making for facility when one comes to focus on spiritual realities.

<sup>5</sup> See the psychological interpretation of the gospel of Matthew—by Fritz Kunkel—titled *Creation Continues*. It is a remarkable study, with material that is rich in content—for meditation purposes. Published by Charles Scribner's Sons.

<sup>6</sup> To some readers the inclusion here and elsewhere in this anthology of material from the Buddhist and Vedanta tradition may come as a shock, either because of prejudice against everything from the “dreamy” East, or because of having been taught that only from Christian tradition can religious insight be legitimately and profitably taken. To others not conventionally biased the material may seem unnecessary and inappropriate because the rest of the book is predominately Christian.

The answer is that no treatment of religious exercises seemed adequate without having some representation from these two religions which have contributed so much to the development of spiritual techniques. It is true that many of the Eastern methods are not applicable to the Westerner but there remains a rich portion which can and has proved congenial to Western minds. We regret that limitation of space prevents the inclusion of more of the material selected from these sources. If the reader wishes to seek out further information, the bibliography will be helpful.

In starting the practice of discursive prayer one is advised to allow at least an hour a day for preparation and actual exercise. The preparation provided by reading can best be of two kinds, instructive and inspirational. If the hour is divided into half-hour periods, the first fifteen minutes of the first half hour can be profitably used by the beginner in the slow reading of inspirational material, to be followed by a like period of meditation upon whatever idea or "opening" of insight has been stimulated by the reading. The second half hour could well be started by meditation, based on a chosen subject or pattern and followed by instructional reading. The time spent in meditation however should be gradually increased until the whole of each half hour is employed thus. Most people find that only when meditation reaches an hour or more does the experience begin to become of deep import—a necessary and sought-after daily exercise.

#### INSTRUCTION ON DISCURSIVE MEDITATION

##### Discursive Prayer for the Beginner

Let a soul that begins mental prayer with the exercise of meditation make choice of some good books of that subject,<sup>7</sup> as Fulvius Androtius, Granada, or the abridgment of De Ponte's *Meditations* (which I would especially recommend).

Let her begin with the matter of the purgative way, as concerning sin,<sup>8</sup> death, the final judgment,<sup>8</sup> hell,<sup>8</sup> or the like, and let her abide in the exercises of that way till she finds in herself an aversion from sin, and that much of the fear and remorse that were formerly in her are deposed, so that she is come to have some good measure of confidence in God. When she finds these effects in her, let her pass to the exercise of meditation which respects the illuminative way (as they call it), that is, to such whose matter or argument is some mystery of faith touching our Lord's Life, Passion, *etc.*, and which are apt to beget and increase humility, patience, and other virtues in her.

Being entered into the illuminative way, let her in like manner abide in the exercises thereof till she find herself apt for resignation,

<sup>7</sup> See Bibliography.

<sup>8</sup> "Personal and Social Darkness," see page 59; see "Pattern" page 281; see "Self-Knowledge" and "Obstacles to Progression" Part I, and see "Confessional Meditation"; see page 86 for modern counterparts of these terms.

love, and other affections of the unitive way, to the exercise of which let her thereupon apply herself.

For some short space before a soul begins her exercise of meditation let her look upon the book, and therein peruse the points that she intends to meditate on; or rather, indeed, those points are to be thought upon and provided beforehand, that is, over-night for the morning meditation, and after dinner for the evening. So doing, she will be less to seek about them, and better employ the time appointed for her exercise.

Let her not trust her memory for the points that she is to meditate on, but have the book ready that she may look on it as she shall have need, and let her take one point after another as they lie in the book, or as she shall have determined before, when she prepared for the succeeding recollection.

In her meditating on each point let her behave herself after this manner: 1. With her memory and understanding let her think on the matter of that point; 2. out of which let her draw a reason or motive, by which the will may be inclined some way or other toward God; 3. and thereupon let her produce an act of the will (as of humiliation, adoration, resignation, contrition, etc.), abiding in such application of the soul to God as long as the will hath life and activity for it, or as long as she shall be able to do it; 4. the which failing and growing to be disgustful, let her proceed to the next point, therein behaving herself likewise after the same manner, so proceeding in order to the others following till she have spent a competent time in her recollection.

Now I conceive a competent time for one recollection spent in meditation to be an hour, or very little less. Whereas for the exercise of immediate acts of the will a lesser space will suffice; and the reason of the difference is: 1. because in this latter exercise more acts of the will (wherein all good doth consist) are produced than in meditation; 2. and, besides, the exercise of acts is more dry and wearisome (except in some few that abound in sensible affections) than is meditation to souls fit for it.

During meditation let the soul (neglecting the too common prac-

tice, in which meditation is made rather a study and speculation than an exercise of the spirit) spend no more time in inventing motives and in internal discoursings than shall be necessary to move the will to good affections; but as for such affections, let her abide in them as long as she can (for therein consists all the profit); and if upon one consideration or motive she can produce many acts of the will, let her not fail to do so, and to continue in each act as long as she finds that she is enabled. It is no matter though in the mean time the understanding should lie quiet, as it were asleep, and without exercise.

A soul that practices meditation will find that at the first she will, during one time of recollection, stand in need of many points to be thought upon, and of many motives to produce affections. But in continuance the will will become so well affected, as fewer points will suffice to employ it in producing good affections and purposes, which will take up almost the whole time appointed for the recollection; and a soul being come to this state, will be ready and ripe for a more sublime exercise of immediate acts of the will.\*

Augustin F. Baker, 1575-1641. English Benedictine Father.  
*Holy Wisdom.*

#### CLASSIC METHODS OF TRAINING

There are six Classic Schools of mystic training represented in the Catholic tradition. They are: The Ignatian, The Carmelite, The Salesian, The Liguorian, The Franciscan and The Oratorian. While each has its unique emphasis they agree fundamentally on method. Brief advices and procedures for the beginner from only three are represented here. See *The Art of Mental Prayer* by Bede Frost for a description of all six Schools.

#### The Salesian Method

But perhaps you do not know, Philothea, how to make mental prayer; for it is a thing which unhappily few persons in this age of ours know how to practise. For this reason, I will give you a simple and brief method to that end, until such time as, by reading some of the good books which have been composed on this subject, and above all by practice you may be more fully instructed.

*The Preparation*

I note first the preparation, which consists in two points, the first of which is to place yourself in the presence of God, and the second to invoke his assistance—principal ways of placing yourself in the presence of God.

1. The first consists in a lively and attentive apprehension of the omnipresence of God, which means that God is in everything and everywhere, and that there is not any place or thing in this world where he is not most assuredly present; so that, just as the birds, wherever they fly, always encounter the air, so, wherever we go, or wherever we are, we find God present. Everyone knows this truth, but everyone is not attentive to grasp it—before prayer we must always stir up our souls to an attentive thought and consideration of this presence of God.

The second is to think that not only is God in the place where you are, but that he is in a very special manner in your heart and in the depth of your spirit.

The third way consists in making use of the imagination alone, representing to ourselves the Saviour in his sacred humanity, as though he were near to us.

2. The invocation is made in this manner: your soul, having realized that she is in the presence of God, prostrates herself with profound reverence, acknowledging her unworthiness.

3. After these two ordinary points of the meditation, there is a third which is not common to all sorts of meditations; it is that which is called by some the composition of place. This is no other thing than to represent to the imagination the scene of the mystery upon which the meditation is made, as though it were actually taking place in our presence.

By means of this imaginary scene we confine our spirit within the mystery upon which we intend to meditate, so that it may not range hither and thither. Yet some will tell you that, in the representation of these mysteries, it is better to make use of the simple thought of faith, and of a simple apprehension entirely mental and spiritual, or else to consider that the things are done within your own spirit; but that is too subtle for a commencement, and until such time as God

may raise you higher, I counsel you, Philothea, to remain in the low valley which I have shown you.

*The Considerations*

After the action of the imagination, follows the action of the understanding, which we call meditation, which is no other thing than one or many considerations made in order to stir up our affections towards God and divine things: and herein meditation differs from study and from other thoughts and considerations which are not made to acquire virtue or the love of God, but for other ends and intentions, as, for example, to become learned, to write, or to argue. Having then confined your spirit, as I have said, within the enclosure of the subject upon which you intend to meditate, you will begin to make considerations on it; if you find sufficient relish, light and fruit in one of these considerations, stay there without passing on to another, proceed quite gently and simply in this matter, without undue haste.

*The Affections and Resolutions*

Meditation produces good movements in the will or affective part of our soul, such as the love of God and of our neighbour, imitation of the life of our Lord, compassion, admiration, joy, confidence in the goodness and mercy of God, confusion for our bad lives in the past; and in these affections our spirit should expand and extend itself as much as possible.

You must not dwell upon these general affections to such an extent that you omit to convert them into special and particular resolutions for your correction and amendment. For example, the first word that our Lord spoke on the cross will doubtless stir up in your soul a good affection of imitation—namely, the desire to pardon your enemies and to love them. But I say now that this is of little value, if you do not add to it a special resolution to this effect: Well then! I will not hereafter be offended by such or such annoying words, nor by such or such an affront which may be put upon me by this person or by that: on the contrary, I will say and do such or such a thing to gain him.



*Of the Conclusion and Spiritual Nosegay*

Finally, the meditation must be closed by three acts which should be made with as much humility as possible. The first is the act of thanksgiving. The second is the act of oblation. The third is the act of petition, by which we demand of God and implore him to communicate to us the graces and virtues of his Son, and to bless our affections and resolutions, so that we may be able faithfully to put them into practice.

To all this I have added that one should gather a little nosegay of devotion. My meaning is as follows: Those who have been walking in a beautiful garden do not leave it willingly without taking away with them four or five flowers, in order to inhale their perfume and carry them about during the day: even so, we should choose one or two or three points in which we have found most relish, and which are specially proper to our advancement, in order to remember them throughout the day.\*

St. Francis de Sales, 1567-1622. French Archbishop of Geneva.  
*Introduction to the Devout Life*, Trans. Allan Ross.

Francis de Sales drew up ten meditations to help the beginner attain the contrition necessary to rid himself of "sin" and "affection to sin" (the first and second purgations). They concern themselves with a consideration of *Creation, Benefits of God, End of Creation, Sin, Death, Hell, Paradise*, etc. They all follow the method outlined in this selection. Editors.

*The Liguorian Method*

1. *The Preparation*. Kneel quietly for a few moments, letting your whole self sink into a state of rest, that you may realise the presence of God. Then make the following acts slowly:

*Act of Faith*. O my God, I believe that Thou art here present, and I adore Thee from the depths of my own nothingness.

*Act of Humility*. O my God, I acknowledge that for my sins I deserve to be in Hell. I am sorry that I have offended Thee, because Thou art so good, and I beg, by Thy grace, that I may never sin again.

*Petition for Light.* O Eternal Father, for the sake of Jesus and Mary, give me light in this prayer that I may make it to Thy glory and the good of my soul.

*Paternoster. Ave Maria. Gloria.*

2. *The Meditation.* Fix your attention on the subject you have chosen. Make a mental picture of it as clearly as you can, though without effort or strain. As you reflect quietly upon what you see, what it means, and especially to you, you will be moved to make acts of prayer, adoration, praise, thanksgiving, humility, penitence, love, etc.—any acts of prayer, in any words, in any order. Petitions for spiritual gifts may be added. Go on until your time is up, constantly recurring to your picture and renewing your fervour.

3. *The Conclusion.* Which should be short, intense and business-like. It consists of three acts of resolution and three of prayer.

To obtain the graces of God, St. Alphonsus constantly insists that the principal fruit of meditation is prayer. It is this insistence, indeed, which especially distinguishes his method from others. We do not reflect in meditation in order to reflect or to gain knowledge, but in order to pray. "Meditation is like a needle after which comes a thread of gold, composed of affections, prayers and resolutions" (*Véritable Épouse de J.C.*, chap. xv. 11). Meditation is necessary, for unless we think about God we shall have nothing to say to God. It is not a study of God, but a looking at Him, which draws our hearts and wills to Him.

He insists strongly that it is very necessary that the act of the presence of God should be one of a living faith (*Vérit. Épouse de J.C.*, chap. xvi. 11). That is, it is not an act of intellectual consideration or, still less, of feeling, but a firm and implicit Credo. God is present; all we have to do is to acknowledge His Presence, placing ourselves deliberately in that Presence by an act of pure faith. The heart of prayer consists in the affections and resolutions awakened in the will by reflection upon Divine truths or mysteries. These may be as diverse as possible, covering the whole of our Godward desires and our needs, but St. Alphonsus especially indicates four acts which

should find their place in all our prayer; of confident humility, of contrition, of love and of perseverance. (*Preparation a la Mort—Preface.*)\*

Bede Frost, 1877—. English priest, Church of England.  
*The Art of Mental Prayer.*

### The Franciscan Method

M. Bremond describes the method of Père Joseph du Tremblay as "one of the most stimulating, most attractive and simplest that I know of."

The method consists of three parts:

#### I. The Preparation, in which are four acts:

- (1) Of making a right intention.
- (2) Of profound humiliation.
- (3) Of recalling to mind the subject chosen.
- (4) Of withdrawal from distractions.

II. The Meditation. The application of the memory, imagination and intellect to the subject in four acts, by which we seek a knowledge:

- (1) Of God, the prototype of the particular perfection manifested in the mystery we are considering.
- (2) Of oneself.
- (3) Of what our Lord does or suffers in this mystery.\*
- (4) Of the end for which He works or suffers.

In an hour's prayer, about twenty minutes are to be spent on this part.

#### III. Affections of the Will:

- (1) Of Oblation.
- (2) Of Petition.
- (3) Of Imitation.
- (4) Of Union.

It will be seen that this method, whilst reminiscent of the Ignatian plan, is infused with the Franciscan spirit, and, intended primarily, as it was, for Capuchin novices, is designed to lead them to the higher degrees of prayer. The first act of the meditation

emphasises the preeminence of God Whose perfections and ways should ever be the first object of our worship and our prayer.\*

Bede Frost, 1877-. English priest, Church of England.  
*The Art of Mental Prayer.*

## TWO CONTEMPORARY PROCEDURES

### Five Steps Outlined

In worship we are reshaping ourselves in such manner that we as personalities with all our behavior can serve as connecting links between disconnected parts and thus enable the integrating process of the world to fulfill itself. We are pressed into place and so through us the circuit is closed and the wider and richer integration which God achieves is brought to pass. In worship we are thus finding the way to join ourselves with God in his work of integration.

*The first step* in the act of worship is to relax and to become aware of that upon which we are dependent, that which sustains us in every breath, that which shapes the cells of our bodies and the impulses of our hearts according as we adjust to it in this way or that.

It is not a state in which one is thinking about anything in particular. One is simply relaxed, waiting and endeavoring to be filled with the consciousness of that encompassing and sustaining and integrating reality which, if he is psychologically capable of using the word God, he calls God.

*The second step* in worship is to call to mind the vast and unimaginable possibilities for good which are inherent in this integrating process called God. These possibilities are actualized in us and in others and in all the world round about us in so far as we and others find and establish the required adjustment between ourselves and this cosmic process which is God.

No matter how we may doubt the possibilities of personal improvement and social transformation and reconstruction of physical conditions, there is that noblest kind of personality, that highest degree of health, that clearness of mind and largeness of purpose, that measure of equality of opportunity, of cooperation and mutual understanding and deep organic community of heart and mind

between all men, which may be attained by the best possible adaptation of means to ends. It is this possibility which we now bring to mind. By bringing it to mind we do not mean that one pictures what it shall be or forms any definite idea of it at all. What this best state of affairs may be we do not know and cannot know. What these highest possibilities may be we do not need to know in order to hold them in mind in the sense here indicated. We only need to know that there are such possibilities, however undefined and unexplored. In this second act of worship we become acutely aware of the fact of such possibilities and of the fact that they can be actualized through the working of the encompassing Reality and our better adjustment to it.

*The third step* is to face the chief problem with which we are struggling. If we are living earnestly we are always struggling with a problem which taxes our powers. We shall frequently have the sense of being baffled because we do not see the way to its solution. But most of the time, unless we take opportunity for the kind of worship we are here describing, we shall not face the problem in its entirety and get it in its true perspective. We are too busy dealing with some pressing detail to face it in all its fullness. But in this third stage of worship, after we have become aware of God (called by another name if we must) and of the total maximum of possibility for good which inheres in God and our relations to him, we face our problem. We survey it as comprehensively and acutely as possible to find what most needs to be done.

Every practical problem is solved by attaining some integration of parts through which the life-sustaining energies of the universe can flow. But the most important and vital thing which every individual must do if this end is to be attained in any particular case is to develop in himself the right mental attitude and consequent behavior.

*The fourth step* is self-analysis<sup>9</sup> to find what change must be made in our own mental attitudes and personal habits. No problem

<sup>9</sup> We will make more effective progress in self-analysis if we will avail ourselves of the Self Education methods of depth psychology. They can help us penetrate into the unconscious where are to be found the images and motives that so frequently block the readjustments which our worship reveals are necessary. See Chapter VI. (Editors)

was ever solved, no desired result ever attained, by worship or in any other way, which did not require some personal readjustment on the part of the person through whom it was attained. Worship has practical value and is a way of doing things only because it enables us (1) to discover what personal readjustment is required of us and (2) to establish that readjustment in ourselves.

*The fifth step* in worship is to formulate in words as clearly and comprehensively as possible the readjustment of personality and behavior which I have discovered is required of me if I am to close the circuit between certain disconnected factors in the world round me. This verbal statement of the needed readjustment is very important. It should be accurate, comprehensive, concise. Above all it must be affirmative; not negative. For in worship we are not primarily trying to break a connection but to establish a connection.

Suppose we discover, as a consequence of our worshipful self-analysis, that we have been too egoistic, too much concerned about our own prestige, too envious of others and too anxious about holding a place of recognized superiority over those we consider our inferiors. One might, then, put the needed readjustment of personality in some such words as these: "I enter into deep, organic community of heart and mind with . . ." and then mention the people who are concerned, if possible. Or he might say: "I am simple, lowly, sensitive and sympathetic toward . . ." and here again mention explicitly certain individuals, groups or classes.

This statement of the required readjustment should be repeated many times in the spirit of worship which has been engendered by the preceding stages. The repetition is necessary in order to establish the readjustment and get it rooted deeply and firmly as a subconscious attitude of the personality which will give the needed character to all thoughts, feelings, words and overt behavior of the individual in any situation that may arise without the need of giving conscious thought to it. In fact anything which requires the guidance of conscious thought is never so skillful and effective as that which is so deep-rooted in the character of the individual that it is done spontaneously without conscious thought.

Through this repetition of words you are simply establishing as

an enduring habitual attitude of the total personality that adjustment to God which you have attained through worship.\*-\*\*

Henry Nelson Wieman, 1884-. American philosopher, theologian, educator.  
*Methods of Private Religious Living*

### Free Association as a Method

*"Follow your longing, and it will lead you to God."*

More and more as I work with patients, I realize the need of teaching them how to turn inwards, to discover the inward world, to meditate and give the Divine in them a chance to grow. This is the most urgent need for young and old, men and women, people of all classes. It is not true that as we turn inward our outward adaptation and success will be hindered; on the contrary I have found even in young people, and particularly in older ones, that only in the measure that they attended to their inner life did the outward adaptation become at last possible. There is an urge in the soul for inward life; and as modern education and the exigencies of life claim outgoing only, there is disturbance. We have no schools or training for the inward life, and we cannot simply take up oriental systems; they do not fit us.

Many advocate that by will power one should concentrate on one line of thought and make every effort to exclude other invading thoughts. I do not think that this way would have been possible for me, and I felt very grateful to Professor Jung who, during psychological work with me, taught me another way which led to parallel results. If my thoughts were horses, I could either be their master, commanding them to go at my will to a certain place, or I could take an expectant attitude, hold the reins loosely, let the horses take the initiative and go where they please. Professor Jung found that if we hold on to the reins (remain awake and observe our thoughts while they take the initiative), they lead us by a logic of their own to new discoveries. I have experienced this for many years and have come to a source of inner knowledge which I know will lead me always, deeper, to new treasures.

I once heard Professor Jung say: "Always follow your longing and it will lead you to God, even if at the beginning it seems to turn

another way." I followed this principle with my patients and it has proved sound. If I follow a person's deepest longing, although it may seem to lead to human love, to amusement, or to other things, as we go deeper, following the thread of that longing, we come to the inner life, to the sanctuary of the Divine.\*\*

Anonymous, from *Inward Light*.

### SUGGESTED PATTERNS FOR MEDITATION

#### Morning and Evening Prayer

Immediately you awake set your first thought on God. Keep your mind on him for a few seconds. Do not think of him subjectively, as to your relation to him, your failures, your sins, or your needs, but rather objectively. Let your whole self become conscious of him. Think of him as shining beauty, radiant joy, creative power, all-pervading love, perfect understanding, purity, and serenity. This need only take a moment or two once the habit has been formed, but it is of inestimable importance. It sets the tone for the whole day.

Even if one is awakened by the peremptory shout of a raucous voice, or the nerve-shattering rattle of an alarm clock, the real Presence can be apprehended almost instantaneously.

One's waking mood tends to correspond to the state of mind in which one falls asleep. If, therefore, as a result of a disturbed night or simply because of lack of practice, this first thought of God should evade you, look out of the window for something obviously made by him, trees, flowers, the sky, or a wind-shaped cloud, even a gray one, and ponder on the perfection of his handicraft.

Perhaps you are living in an overcrowded home, without fresh air, entirely divorced from nature, deprived of the natural means by which God manifests himself to his people, so that from your narrow window you cannot even see the sky for smoke. If so, let your thoughts rest on a beautiful picture. But if all outside aids are denied you, a memory will suffice, a picture in your mind, or the recollection of a cool breeze you have once felt on your brow.

If unpleasant memories press in upon you so that you cannot fasten your mind on him, do not worry about it. Laugh at yourself



and think, "What a good thing God does not look at me as I look at myself! He sees something thoroughly lovable in me. He thinks of me as a potent sort of person, and is expecting something rather great and fine to work itself out through my life, and is waiting for it to show itself. As God looks upon us he sees the inherent ability, the hidden beauty, the unused power of spirit in each of us.

Do not get out of bed, therefore, until you have set your thought on God. Then remind yourself that he is waiting to illumine your spirit each morning as you awake.\*

\* \* \* \* \*

Consider yourself not ready to start the day, ill equipped, unprepared to mix with your fellows, until you have spent at least fifteen minutes in prayer. Count it as much a social necessity as washing.

The cultivation of the spirit should be considered with at least as much intelligence as the cultivation of corn. If the field is of good soil and well plowed, if good seed is sown in it, if each day it gets a normal amount of sunshine and rain, if the four winds of heaven blow upon it, good corn inevitably appears. So it is with ourselves. If our mind is prepared and disciplined, if the teaching of Christ is sown in it, if each day it is set toward God and without anxiety and fuss laid open to his influence, good character inevitably appears. "Is it likely," asks Henry Drummond, "that the growth of corn should be regulated by law and the growth of character by mere caprice?"

The day will not be the jewel, the poem, the joy it might be unless one can come to the pitch when one can say the prayer: "Behold me, O Lord, in thy hands ready for all; spin me backward or spin me forward, for I *desire nothing other than the doing of thy will*, and oh! that I might do it worthily and perfectly!"

An old man was asked by a friend to explain the secret of his serene enjoyment of life, his knack of spreading happiness. At first he demurred, but at length, seeing his friend's eagerness, he confessed to a certain rule kept from his youth up. He had devoted an hour before breakfast each day solely to thanksgiving. He never allowed

a thought of worry or a difficulty, a fault or a sin to turn his mind from the simple enjoyment of God's presence, from praising and thanking him for his glorious works. It became a matter of habit with him, just as giving way to worry, a sense of inefficiency, or self-pity becomes a habit with others. That hour of concentration on all that was glorious, beautiful, and satisfying brought him so near to God that the glow of it lasted all day. The law of cause and effect is as reliable in the spiritual as in the physical realm.

There are many who depend on their morning prayer for strength to tackle the difficulties ahead of them, and for wisdom to solve the pressing problems of the day. Yet they would soon cease to think of these difficulties ahead if they habitually linked themselves to God with their waking thought. Our puniness turns into strength as we think of Him, so that even the fact of our being well or ill depends to a large extent on how many seconds out of the twenty-four hours we have God in our minds.

Self-consciousness—that bane of youth—disappears, as we practice praying. During this hour we become more conscious of God than of our fellows and learn that achievement is worth more than anything else in life. During the morning prayer-time new aspirations form themselves in one's mind.

"Am I ready for such tasks?" Anyhow, I am ready to be made ready, as I wait in quietness for God's help and co-operation.

"Faith is the conscious co-operation with an unseen force which is ever molding men and things to higher uses." If we want to play our part in this cosmic process, we have to *hold ourselves in readiness to do anything at any time and in any circumstances*. "I would fain be to the Eternal Goodness what his own right hand is to a man." \*

Never get into bed with a burdened or a heavy mind; whether it be a vague oppression or a definite fear, shame or remorse, anger or hate, get rid of the evil thing before you lie down to sleep.

Night is a holy time, a time of renewing and refreshment. He giveth to His beloved while they sleep; our unconscious mind is active during our slumber. Settle down restfully to let your mind

get clear and your spirit unclogged. It would be better to sit up half the night, wrestling in spirit until you have won your way to peace and wholeness rather than embark upon hours of unconsciousness with an unresolved conflict, an unacknowledged fear, or an unforgiven friend in your mind.

It is a folly ever to shirk the issue of a single, worrying, doubting thought. Face each one before you get into bed, face them in the presence of your Father who knows all your muddled feelings and understands your tempestuous passions.

It does not take long, this process, but it forms one of the most important parts of your evening prayer. Silent in God's presence, you can relax yourself completely. The restfulness of being alone at last, facing reality, may even make you laugh aloud for joy as you open your mind in perfect confidence and summon the whole bustling medley of burdensome thoughts before Him. Let them come, waiting quietly for each, without a shadow of dread. See how they show up in the deep calm of God's presence. "That anger I felt this morning, it was like murder, it did real harm to the person it was vented upon, others are re-acting to it still; it was anti-social, a sin. God forgive me. It is not remission of penalty I am asking for when I say 'forgive'." It is a longing to be made whole again, a passionate desire to save my victim from the consequences of my anger, a willingness to do anything to make amends. Anger is a force and I have let it loose upon the world; it may have wrecked the happiness of several people today.

One may wait a few moments before the next impression comes to the fore. That new line of thought: it seemed dangerous, but there was no time to explore it. Now, you can welcome it, pursue it with far greater clarity. Patiently seek the truth. Certainly one of your most cherished convictions may be threatened if this new line of thought is true, but why have you been cherishing this conviction? You must continue to observe its course. You must talk it out with wise friends. You can go no further just now, alone.

As one waits quietly, other thoughts of fear or anxiety come to the forefront and are faced in the same way. Most of them disappear, vanish incontinently in the presence of God.

One is at peace now. Then, as drowsiness increases, the words of committal can be used. "Father, into thy hands I commit my spirit." \*

Muriel Lester, 1883-. English author, social worker.  
*Ways of Praying.*

## A Discursive Meditation on the Nature of Reality

*Cause and effect an aspect of Reality:* The forces of reality impinge upon me here this instant and at all times and places. Everything I feel and think and do brings down upon me definite and certain reactions, though these reactions may not become discernible to me until after a long or short lapse of time, though I may never become aware of some of them. No matter how it may appear to me, it is absolutely impossible for me to fool the universe.

Where the connection between my thoughts and actions and the result is clear, I can see that my failures to realize genuine, lasting satisfaction have been due to a distorted self-seeking, leading to a feeling of separateness or alien-ness. Fear is largely responsible for this feeling of alien-ness. (By fear, I mean an excess of feeling beyond what is necessary to guide me out of an injurious situation.) Because of the interposition of the false self, of which fear is one expression, the universe that I see is not the real universe but a construction based upon the extremely few and distorted fragments that get past all these obstructions to my mind. Thus, I am ignorant of the Good, and what I miss thereby is the punishment for my sin.

On the other hand, I know from my own experience that whenever I have been able to pierce through this feeling of separateness to a more constructive feeling—to one of love, interest and of real (not simulated) compassion for all kinds of persons—I have tended to be happier, in better health, have appreciated more the beauty around me, and have grown in understanding. For instance, I have discovered in discussing controversial matters with other people that when I have first taken the trouble to see the elements of truth in their points of view, and so have been ready to modify my own, they have usually been more disposed to prune away the remaining erroneous parts of theirs. And I find that the parts of truth, from whatever

source derived, when errors are pruned away, tend to fit together completely. Over and over I have been shown that a fellow-feeling with the universe and with all the persons and things in it is more nearly in harmony with the basic plan of the universe than any feeling of separateness can be; and this fact is an indication that the forces, principles, relationships that make up the real universe are bound together—integrated into a harmonious whole, which I may, if I wish, call God.

*The sustaining nature of ultimate Reality:* Now the more I have constructive feelings of love, of interest, and of unity with others, and think and act accordingly, the more my much distorted conception will right itself and move gradually toward an awareness of ultimate Reality. Ultimate Reality is more kind, more loving, more helpful to me than any human father, mother, or friend can be, for humans are always fallible, arbitrary in some matters, making mistakes in their desire to help. But the structure of ultimate Reality is perfect in its integration, always boosting me along if I act in accordance with any part of it, though I may not be immediately aware of it, and always making me uncomfortable if I have wrong feelings, thoughts, and acts. The discomfort necessarily involved in the mistaken course may, in the flush of supposed worldly success, be only a dull, subconscious awareness that something is amiss, that my apparent pleasure is transitory; but ultimately it becomes more fully conscious. Sooner or later my wrong course leads me to a position where I am so far out of line with the universe that I come into conflict with the invariable forces governing it and experience severe suffering. Thus, again and again I am given opportunity to break away further from my false view of life and realize anew and more deeply the true joys of universal fellowship.

*Obstacles to fellowship:* The most basic psychological urge is for complete intimate fellowships with all life. When this is not found, the various “drives” appear as abortive attempts to compensate. Such are the sexual drives, the “will to power,” intellectual ambitions, particular egocentric patterns, *et cetera*. These do not, and cannot, satisfy. I learn and experience what the universe really *is* only when I allow these desires to melt into the warmth of a love that is not

falsely motivated, nor confined only to particular individuals who might reciprocate. It must be a love that is able to see, beneath the unpromising exterior of each person whom I chance to meet, the same kind of struggle going on that I am waging. Thus, the barriers between myself and other selves break down.

Further, I must consider criticisms of myself to find the elements of truth behind them. And in order to keep myself from obscuring truth, I must strive to become disinterested and non-partisan in the sense that I do not follow any course merely because it maintains a position my own self has previously taken or my friend or the party which I like, but solely because it fits with truth, with my growing conception of the wider fellowship of the entire universe. I must be willing continually to offer up my own pet ideas, to see them modified or discarded altogether—ideas such as any particular form of meditation (like this one), any particular form of pacifism, any particular form of religion, any theories of socialism, capitalism, behaviorism, or Americanism. I must offer up my pet ideas as to the running of my own home and children as well as all other specific “willings” that obscure Reality.

*Dedication to ultimate Reality:* As I thus concentrate on the desirability of achieving a greater awareness of Reality, I am moved to reaffirm a willingness to give up the fears, greeds and hatreds which block my own awareness. I call upon the integrating process of the universe further to reveal me to myself, and to strengthen my commitment.

I now realize that if I want to pursue an upward course, I have no other choice. The only way I can improve, the only way I can attain to more satisfactory relationships—indeed, the only way I can keep from getting worse—is to dedicate myself without reservation to live the life which tends most toward greater integration with Reality, the life of wider compassion and of the elimination of selfness. Whatever my age, whatever my station in life, I cannot afford to lose any time in following this course, both for my own welfare and for that of others, both for this life and for the future states of existence.\*

### Meditation on Forgiveness

*"Forgive us our debts as we forgive our debtors."*

Concentrate on what forgiveness means, both the need for Forgiveness and the need to Forgive. The one seems to be dependent on the other.

Try to think of all those whom you need to forgive because of what they have done to you. Think concretely of them—of those who have unjustly accused you and hurt you; of those who have justly hurt you because of something you did; of those who in your past have unwittingly done you harm, even perhaps your parents and those who loved you. Take all these persons into the presence of God and love them, try to understand them and why they did what they did. Try to keep them in mind until all hurt and prejudice is gone, at least for an instant.

Then think of all those who need to forgive you—of all the "sins" which you have committed against people, all those you have hurt, either consciously or unconsciously. Try to imagine how hard it is for them to love you, even as it is hard for you to love them. Stay in an attitude of humility in their presence as you hold them before the presence of God.

Remember all the "evil" and "sin" of an impersonal nature of which you are a part. Think of the suffering in the world, the injustice, the people that are deprived of even the necessities of life because of the kind of world in which we live, and to which you, in your present unilluminated state, give your assent, by just being part of it.

Think of the suffering that you and others have had to undergo because of being a part of such a world as ours—that is, not what you have done but what has been done to you and others.

You realize then that both personally and impersonally you are a victim often of wrong, and that you also inflict suffering on others. Forgiveness must be the total act of turning to God, whose presence you are able to sense again once you have gotten through these hurts and wrong dealings. Having Forgiven and having asked Forgiveness, you can now feel that God is Here, holding nothing against you, as you hold nothing against anyone. His forgiveness of you, with

all your sinning and erring, becomes real because you have forgiven. Love becomes real, the center of all, when you are able to love through all difficulties, and to be loved. Then you know that God is always there, with His great Forgiveness blocked only when you are blocked.

Anonymous. Written for this compilation.

### Meditation on "God is Love"

Start with a few moments of unreflective quiet, trying to quiet the mind from all the things that have been occupying attention, and to get away from the immediate distractions.

God is Love. Think of all the manifestations in the world of Love: the people whom you know and love, the examples of real love about which you have read, the situations between groups, or, on a larger scale, between different peoples where there has been some measure of mutual regard (*i.e.* where people of different nations at war have been able to transcend these differences and come together, as in China and Japan with certain student Christian groups.) Put all the content possible into what this must mean. Think of the difficulties involved. Think of the demands, the extent, —the transforming power of love.

Next, think on the negative side as to what stops love—what are the blocks in people—the selfishness, the greed, the desire to dominate, the fear and hatred. Think of instances of these.

Realize that there are two contrasting ways working in the Universe, each with tremendous results.

Concentrate, then, on your own life. Think first of the negative aspects, the contribution you are not making to your own life and to society by not being loving, by being closed and self-centered. Look at this Darkness in yourself, until you want to run away from it. Seek to understand it.

Finally, concentrate on the Positive—think of any instances, however small, when you have acted on the Positive Principle—remember how it felt, what were the effects of it. What would be the effects if you were able to be that way all the time. Determine by a conscious re-affirmed attitude that you will keep the Good Way



before you at all times—attempting to give yourself to it. Realize that you are dealing with the most dynamic, the strongest thing in the world—the Love that is God, which works through people, which can work through you, and which you resist because it means giving up self-centeredness. Realize that it will doubtless take you a long time to come to the point of giving up the “false” self, even half-heartedly—but that at least you determine to start. You resolve to give sufficient time and energy to whatever methods will assist the unconscious as well as the conscious mind gradually to yield up their store of egocentric patterns.

Affirm God as Love within you. Let yourself be permeated with that love.

Anonymous. Written for this compilation.

### A Buddhist Discursive Meditation

The meditations of the Four Divine States are important and thoroughly suitable for Western students.

1. *Mettā* means Love in the sense of benevolence or loving-kindness.

2. *Karunā*<sup>10</sup> is compassion, or pity for all suffering.

3. *Muditā*<sup>10</sup> is joyous sympathy with the happiness of other beings.

4. *Uppekkhā*<sup>10</sup> is equal mindedness, *i.e.* a state of serenity or indifference to joy or sorrow.

### *Mettā*

*Mettā*: Before concentrating upon Love it is well to consider the evil of hate and of the actions inspired by enmity and to reflect upon the advantages of forbearance. “And it is with the object of *separating* the heart from enmity—the evil of which is discerned, and of *uniting* the heart with forbearance—the advantage of which is discerned, that the exercise of Love is to be begun.”

It is necessary to realize that all beings desire happiness, and to begin by wishing happiness for one’s self; for no distinction should

<sup>10</sup> For instruction on this meditation the reader is referred to Miss Lounsbery’s book.

be made between one's self and other beings and moreover one cannot radiate love and happiness unless one possesses them.

### *Mettā Sutta*

The *Mettā Sutta* is so beautiful that it would be well to memorize it before studying the meditation formula.

*Mettā Sutta*: This is what should be accomplished by the man who is wise, who seeks the good and has obtained peace:—

Let him be strenuous, upright, and sincere, without pride, (easily) contented and joyous; let him not be submerged by the things of the world; let him not take upon himself the burden of riches; let his senses be controlled; let him be wise but not puffed up, and let him not desire great possessions (even) for his family. Let him do nothing that is mean, or that the wise would reprove.

May all beings be happy. May they be joyous and live in safety. All living beings, whether weak or strong, in his, or middle, or low realms of existence, small or great, visible or invisible, near or far, born, or to be born, may all beings be happy.

Let no one deceive another, nor despise any being in any state; let none by anger or hatred wish harm to another. Even as a mother at the risk of her life watches over and protects her only child, so with a boundless mind <sup>11</sup> should one cherish all living things, suffusing love over the entire world, above, below, and all around without limit; so let him cultivate an infinite good will toward the whole world. Standing or walking, sitting or lying down, during all his waking hours let him cherish the thought that this way of living is best in the world. Abandoning vain discussions, having a clear vision, freed from sense appetites, he who is made perfect will never again know rebirth.

### *Long Meditation Formula*

*Mettā*: Begin by saying: 1. "A long breath I breathe in"—10 times; then, "A long breath I breathe out"—10 times. 2. "A short breath I

<sup>11</sup> Free from discrimination between one's self and others.

breathe in"—10 times; then, "A short breath I breathe out"—10 times.  
 3. Let the breath regulate itself according to a rhythm which is natural and easy. Simply observe the breath as it comes and goes, thinking of nothing else.

Before beginning to practise this longer meditation, it is necessary to choose three persons to whom one will send thoughts of loving good will. These three persons should be living, and no one of them should tend to awaken passionate desire or lust.

Choose then: 1. A person who is very dear. 2. A person who inspires only indifference. 3. A person who is an adversary or an enemy.

Having these three persons clearly in mind, having recited *Ti Sarana* and practised the breathing exercises, begin by awakening thoughts of love for one's self. This makes four persons who should be considered as equally dear.

A. *One's Self*: May I be happy, may I preserve my happiness and live without enmity. My heart is full of loving-kindness.

B. *To one who is dear*: I am sending loving thoughts to X, may he (or she) be happy, may he preserve his happiness, may he live without enmity. Continue to surround and to bathe this person with pure, benevolent, loving thoughts.

C. *To the indifferent person*: (Repeat formula of B).

D. *To the adversary*: This person (X) has been unkind, unfriendly, or harmful to me. May I free myself of enmity toward him, may I free myself from anger. May I wish him no hurt or harm, may he be happy, may he preserve his happiness, may he live without enmity.

Do not fight, but refuse to harbour the disturbing feelings of resentment that the thought of an enemy may awaken.

For a few seconds say: I am filled with good will, I am nothing but good will. Or: I am making a thought of hatred to cease in the universe and so diminishing the force of hatred.

When calm, think again of this person, his good qualities, think of the suffering he is creating for himself (through bad *Karma*) by his wrong actions. So, arousing compassion in the heart, try again to send out thoughts of loving-kindness toward him.

"And now that he (the meditator) is again and again sending out love to four classes of persons—to himself, to the dear person, to the indifferent, and to the hostile—he should bring about a breaking down of frontiers."<sup>12</sup>

Try to make no difference, no distinction between one's self, the person dear, the indifferent person, and the adversary. Envelop them all in thoughts of love and goodwill *as if they were one person*.

Break down the boundaries between them by encircling them with love; try to create a composite image, superimposing one face upon the other, and to make no distinction between one's self and others.

One will become conscious of nothing but love when the barriers of personality are down—only a thought of love identified with the love-consciousness will exist; continue to practise and develop this state of mind.

### *Mettā Bhāvanā*

Developing or expanding the love formula,<sup>13</sup> send thoughts of love to the place one inhabits, the house, the country, and the continent.

Let the mind run over these divisions pouring down thoughts of love, suffusing them with love, as one would a person who is dear.

By Quarters: Imagine the globe divided into four quarters: East, West, North, South. Take each quarter in turn and imagine each as being dear. Pour down upon it thoughts of good will and of loving-kindness, as upon a person who is dear. If it is of any help, imagine some fellow-being living among the inhabitants of these quarters. Or imagine that one is in the midst of these people, while thinking of each quarter in turn. So continue to suffuse one quarter of the globe with thoughts accompanied by love. Again expand and develop the field of meditation to cover the Universe.\*-\*\*\*

Grace Constant Lounsbury, President of Les Amis DuBouddhisme (Paris).  
*Buddhist Meditation.*

<sup>12</sup> "The breaking down of the barriers (when love toward each and all is equal) gives rise to the love image and to ecstasy."

<sup>13</sup> "Beginners should not tire themselves by pursuing the meditation any further, but as soon as sufficient training has been acquired the love formula is applied to the four quarters of the globe."

### The Use of the Holy Sentence

Some modern teachers believe in the use of the holy sentence. At times the aspirant will find that his mind lingers naturally over one word or sentence, and that his consciousness seems to be permeated with its meaning, to the exclusion of other thoughts. As he meditates, the actual words seem to fade, and he finds himself plunged straight into their meaning, apprehending truth directly, in a new mode.

Holy sentences, like symbols, get past the conscious into the subconscious mind; like symbols, they are full of pious associations, powerful, evocative. Round it, as time goes on, clusters the mystic's religious experience. The Hindu's initiation formula, the Christian's text, can express the particular aspect of divine truth with which he has most affinity and on which he may most profitably meditate.

Aelfrida Tillyard, English lecturer, writer.  
*Spiritual Exercises and their Results.*

### Examples of "Sentences" for Meditation<sup>14</sup>

"And ye shall seek me, and find me, when ye shall search for me with all your heart."

Jeremiah.

"Let nothing be great unto thee, nothing high, nothing pleasing, nothing acceptable, except it be simply God, or cometh of God."

Thomas a Kempis.

"Lead me from the unreal to the real! Lead me from darkness to light! Lead me from death to Immortality."

The Upanishads.

"Let the good be; it is my one desire, and if the change in me, needed to make it actual, lead to my elimination, it is well, indeed it is so much better—for what is base has been permitted to purchase excellence."

Anonymous.

<sup>14</sup> The reader can select his own "sentences" for meditation from other material in this anthology which may have special meaning for him. The Appendix, presenting various ideas of God, should yield richly for this purpose. Material typical of both the negative and the positive emphases in discursive prayer is also available. See Chapt. II; III (Suffering).

“. . . and having found one pearl of great price, he went and sold all that he had and bought it.”

Jesus of Nazareth.

“No man is free until he is free at the center. When he lets go there he is free indeed.”

E. Stanley Jones.

“Give up what thou hast and then thou wilt receive.”

From the Greek Mysteries.

“One must be able to strip oneself of all self-deception.”

Frances G. Wickes.

“Meekness in itself is nought else but a true knowing and feeling of man’s self as he is.”

The Cloud of Unknowing.

“Give me the patience to accept those things which cannot be changed, the courage to change those things which can be changed, and the wisdom to know the difference.”

Source Unknown.

“True education can only proceed from naked reality, not from any ideal illusion about man however attractive.”

Carl Jung.

“Ye outwardly appear righteous unto men, but inwardly ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity.”

Jesus of Nazareth.

“One must go into the darkness for that is where God is.”

Alfred Romer.

“There is nothing covered up that shall not be revealed: and hid, that shall not be known.”

Jesus of Nazareth.

“Beauty is Truth, Truth Beauty.”

John Keats.

“True self-revaluation has always as its counterpart a growth in the knowledge of God.”

Edward Leen.

"Do you know that you are God's temple and God's spirit makes its home in you? If anyone destroys the temple God will destroy him. For the temple of God is sacred and that is what you are."

Saint Paul.

"God is creative power, immanent in the Soul."

"God is Mind Essence, the all-inclusive Whole, containing all things in potentiality."

"God is the binding element in the world."

"God is creative energy, the spring of all renewal."

"God is Truth, Goodness and Beauty."

Unknown.

"God is Love."

Jesus.

"I am the Light of the World. He that followeth me shall in no case walk in darkness, but shall have the light of Life."

Jesus Christ.

"Trust in the Lord with all thine heart; and lean not unto thine own understanding. In all thy ways acknowledge Him, and He shall direct thy paths."

Proverbs.

"In quietness and confidence shall be your strength."

Isaiah.

"Wherever the spirit of the Lord is, there is freedom."

Saint Paul.

"Creative Patience,  
Who has set thyself to wait,  
While law achieves thy purposes,  
And knows no soon nor late,  
Shed thy still mood of timelessness  
On us who watch with thee;  
School us in love that we may share  
Thy creativity."

Harriet Nugent.

"Blessed is the man whose strength is in thee; in whose heart  
are thy ways.

Who going through the vale of misery useth it for a well;  
and the pools are filled with water."

Psalm 84.

"They that wait on the Lord shall renew their strength,  
They shall mount on wings, like eagles,  
They shall run and not be weary  
They shall walk and not faint."

Isaiah.

"My God, may all thy most holy intentions be accomplished in  
me;—may they be accomplished because, while infinitely just in  
themselves, they are also infinitely advantageous for me."

Père de Caussade.

"If ever, my God, it should happen through ignorance and  
passion that I persist in desires contrary to thine, may I be dis-  
appointed and punished, not by thy justice, but by thy pity and  
great mercy."

Père de Caussade.

"Lord, I know not what I ought to ask of thee; Thou only  
knowest what I need; Thou lovest me better than I know how to  
love myself. O father, give to Thy child that which he himself knows  
not how to ask. I dare not ask either for crosses or for consolations;  
I simply present myself before thee, I open my heart to Thee. Behold  
my needs which I know not myself; see and do according to Thy  
tender mercy. Smite, or heal; depress me, or raise me up; I adore all  
Thy purposes without knowing them; I am silent; I offer myself in  
sacrifice; I yield myself to Thee; I would have no other desire than  
to accomplish Thy Will. Teach me to pray. Pray Thyself in me.  
Amen."

François de Fénelon.

"If I speak with the tongues of men and of angels but have not  
love I am become sounding brass or a clanging cymbal."

Saint Paul.



"Love rejoiceth with the Truth."

Saint Paul.

"And whenever you stand up to pray, if you have a grievance against anyone, forgive him."

Jesus of Nazareth.

"Every event is a creative opportunity, every contact is an insight, a revelation."

Anonymous.

"This one commandment I leave unto you that ye love one another."

Jesus of Nazareth.

### The Use of One Word

And therefore, when thou purposest thee to this work, and feelest by grace that thou art called by God, lift up thine heart unto God with a meek stirring of love. And mean that God made thee, and bought thee, and that graciously hath called thee to thy degree: and receive none other thought of God. And yet not all these, except thou desirest; for a naked intent directed unto God, without any other cause than himself, sufficeth wholly.

And if thou desirest to have this intent lapped and folden in one word, so that thou mayest have better hold thereupon, take thee but a little word of one syllable, for so it is better than of two; for the shorter the word, the better it accordeth with the work of the spirit. And such a word is this word God or this word Love. Choose whichever thou wilt, or another: whatever word thou likest best of one syllable. And fasten this word to thine heart, so that it may never go thence for anything that befalleth.

This word shall be thy shield and thy spear, whether thou ridest on peace or on war. With this word, thou shalt beat on this cloud and this darkness above thee. With this word, thou shalt smite down all manner of thought under the cloud of forgetting. Insomuch, that if any thought press upon thee to ask thee what thou wouldst have, answer with no more words but with this one word. And if he offer of his great learning to expound to thee that word and to tell thee the conditions of that word, say to him that thou wilt have it all

whole, and not broken nor undone. And if thou wilt hold fast to this purpose, be thou sure that that thought will no while bide. And why? Surely because thou wilt not let him feed himself on such sweet meditations of God touched before.

An unknown English mystic of the fourteenth century.  
*The Cloud of Unknowing.*

### Meditation on "Beauty"

Beauty arises when the parts of a whole are related to one another and to the totality in a manner which we apprehend as orderly and significant. But the first principle of order is God, and God is the final, deepest meaning of all that exists. God, then, is manifest in the relationship which makes things beautiful. He resides in that lovely interval which harmonizes events on all the planes, where we discover beauty. We apprehend Him in the alternate voids and fullnesses of a cathedral; in the spaces that separate the salient features of a picture; in the living geometry of a flower, a sea shell, an animal; in the pauses and intervals between the notes of music, in their differences of tone and sonority; and finally, on the plane of conduct, in the love and gentleness, the confidence and humility, which give beauty to the relationships between human beings.

Such then, is God's beauty, as we apprehend it in the sphere of created things. But it is also possible for us to apprehend it, in some measure at least, as it is in itself. The beatific vision of divine beauty is the knowledge, so to say, of Pure Interval, of harmonious relationship apart from the things related. A material figure of beauty-in-itself is the cloudless evening sky, which we find inexpressibly lovely, although it possesses no orderliness of arrangement, since there are no distinguishable parts to be harmonized. We find it beautiful because it is an emblem of the infinite Clear Light of the Void. To the knowledge of this Pure Interval we shall come only when we have learnt to mortify attachment to creatures, above all to ourselves.

Moral ugliness arises when self-assertion spoils the harmonious relationship which should exist between sentient beings. Analogously, aesthetic and intellectual ugliness arise when one part in a whole is

excessive or deficient. Order is marred, meaning distorted and, for the right, the divine relation between things or thoughts, there is substituted a wrong relation—a relationship that manifests symbolically, not the immanent and transcendent source of all beauty, but that chaotic disorderliness which characterizes creatures when they try to live independently of God.

Aldous Huxley.

### Meditation on "Holiness"

Whole, hale, holy—the three words derive from the same root. By etymology no less than in fact holiness is spiritual health, and health is wholeness, completeness, perfection. God's holiness is the same as His unity; and a man is holy to the extent to which he has become single-minded, one-pointed, perfect as our Father in heaven is perfect.

Because each of us possesses only one body, we tend to believe that we are one being. But in reality our name is Legion. In our unregenerate condition we are divided beings, half-hearted and double-minded, creatures of many moods and multiple personalities. And not only are we divided against our unregenerate selves; we are also incomplete. As well as our multitudinous soul, we possess a spirit that is of like substance with the universal spirit. Potentially (for in his normal condition he does not know who he is) man is much more than the personality he takes himself to be. He cannot achieve his wholeness unless and until he realizes his true nature, discovers and liberates the spirit within his soul and so unites himself with God.

Unholiness arises when we give consent to any rebellion or self-assertion by any part of our being against that totality which it is possible for us to become through union with God. For example, there is the unholiness of indulged sensuality, of unchecked avarice, envy and anger, of the wantonness of pride and worldly ambition. Even the negative sensuality of ill health may constitute unholiness, if the mind be permitted to dwell upon the sufferings of its body more than is absolutely necessary or unavoidable. And on the plane of the intellect there is the imbecile unholiness of distractions, and

the busy, purposeful unholiness of curiosity about matters concerning which we are powerless to act in any constructive or remedial way.

From our natural state of incompleteness to spiritual health and perfection there is no magically easy short cut. The way to holiness is laborious and long. It lies through vigilance and prayer, through an unresting guard of the heart, the mind, the will and the tongue, and through the one-pointed loving attention to God, which that guard alone makes possible.

Aldous Huxley.

### Meditation on "Grace"

Graces are the free gifts of help bestowed by God upon each one of us, in order that we may be assisted to achieve our final end and purpose, namely, unitive knowledge of divine reality. Such helps are very seldom so extraordinary that we are immediately aware of their true nature as God-sends. In the overwhelming majority of cases they are so inconspicuously woven into the texture of common life, that we do not know that they are graces, unless and until we respond to them as we ought, and so receive the material, moral or spiritual benefits which they were meant to bring us. If we do not respond to these ordinary graces as we ought, we shall receive no benefit and remain unaware of their nature or even of their very existence. Grace is always sufficient, provided we are ready to co-operate with it. If we fail to do our share, but rather choose to rely on self-will and self-direction, we shall not only get no help from the graces bestowed upon us; we shall actually make it impossible for further graces to be given. When used with an obstinate consistency, self-will creates a private universe walled off impenetrably from the light of spiritual reality; and within these private universes the self-willed go their way, unhelped and unilluminated, from accident to random accident, or from calculated evil to calculated evil. It is of such that St. Francis de Sales is speaking when he says, "God did not deprive thee of the operation of his love, but thou didst deprive His love of thy co-operation. God would never have rejected thee, if thou hadst not rejected Him."

To be clearly and constantly aware of the divine guidance is given only to those who are already far advanced in the life of the spirit. In its earlier stages we have to work, not by the direct perception of God's successive graces, but by faith in their existence. We have to accept as a working hypothesis that the events of our lives are not merely fortuitous, but deliberate tests of intelligence and character, specially devised occasions (if properly used) for spiritual advance. Acting upon this working hypothesis, we shall treat no occurrence as intrinsically unimportant. We shall never make a response that is inconsiderate, or a mere automatic expression of our self-will, but always give ourselves time, before acting or speaking, to consider what course of behaviour would seem to be most in accord with the will of God, most charitable, most conducive to the achievement of our final end. When such becomes our habitual response to events, we shall discover, from the nature of their effects, that some at least of those occurrences were divine graces in the disguise sometimes of trivialities, sometimes of inconveniences or even of pains and trials. But if we fail to act upon the working hypothesis that grace exists, grace will in effect be non-existent so far as we are concerned. We shall prove by a life of accident at the best, or, at the worst, of downright evil, that God does not help human beings, unless they first permit themselves to be helped.

Aldous Huxley, 1894-. English novelist, poet, literary critic.

### Meditation Based on Three Levels of Personality

Meditation is to help me to "live under the aspect of Eternity" by cleansing my consciousness from the mistaken sense of Life as included within time and of Self in separateness.

I am convinced that the realization and enjoyment of Life involves the loss of life in the egocentric conception of it. The more completely self-will can draw into consciousness all the implications of personality of which it is the center, and the more completely it can relinquish self and them, the more nearly empty and open is consciousness for the flooding of a realization of the Unity that transcends personality.

As I breathe deeply and quietly, therefore, I inhale to the thought

"I" with a widening inclusiveness of that self-concept, and exhale to the thought "am," yielding the self to the boundlessness of true existence.

I draw into the individuation of my "I" my vegetative level—all the unconscious functioning that makes for assimilation and nourishing. I realize that in "my" chemistry I am akin to earth and water; I recognize my kinship with flowers and grass and trees, with brooks and lakes and rivers, and I feel their rhythms flow through me with peace and power, as I yield my sense of them-in-separateness to the Unity which is their underlying reality.

I draw into my widening sense of self my circulation-level, the blood, with all that implies of emotion and passion and creative power. I feel my kinship with animals and man, man of all races and colors, man with his untamed impulses and instincts; all that surges through the darkness of the unconscious I recognize as part of my inheritance. I acknowledge it and accept responsibility for it and outbreathe it into the "allness" where it can function creatively and unrestrictedly.

I recognize my respiratory level as the one that links the conscious and unconscious in personality, and I use it, in quiet breathing, to reconcile the two. Breath is like the wind that "bloweth where it listeth," we "know not whence it cometh or whither it goeth." It symbolizes the spirit which broodeth over the face of the dark mysterious waters. I feel the kinship of my quiet breath with the breath of Life which God breathed into man's nostrils. God's breath fans me and winnows me, and hastens the relinquishing of what I hold pent within my sense of separateness.

"I" am *standing* at my mental level as I draw level after level of personality into my thought. The mental is the role in which I conceive my "I." It must kneel in contrition for the arrogance of its denial of the more basic levels, and for its proud assurance of my personality's greatest mistake: its sense of itself as an isolated identity. I link myself lovingly with other lonely consciousnesses, feeling my oneness with them and outbreathing them with mine, yielding our ignorance to the all-knowing, our impotence and futility to the all-powerful, our little partialness to the great Whole.

My self-will and self-consciousness expand thus, through the widening sense of kinship, outward toward the limits of separateness; but it is still only "kinship" not "Unity" that self-consciousness can conceive. With all the completeness possible I now empty myself of myself and wait—dark and empty, and silent—waiting if per-adventure I may be filled, irradiated, orchestrated by *that* which in *its* Infinity and Eternity transcends personality.

Ruth Raymond, contemporary American, Art educator.  
Written for this compilation.

## Meditation to Recall Reality

### *Recall the Need*

At those times when it is difficult to concentrate or when there is a feeling of revulsion toward meditation it is advisable to call to mind one's present need for illumination (one's failures, lack of insight, ineffective action, etc.). Although negative realization *is not a place in which to stay*, it can rightly stir zeal and form a spring-board for concentration on the positive. It should not stop with oneself but be expanded to a realization of the need of one's immediate associates, of one's community, of the nation, and on to include the whole of mankind. Consider the close relation between personal lacks and needs and the injustices in the world. See them as a projection of one's own distorted, unfree self and consider that, as a prerequisite to changing the world, one must first be changed oneself. Genuine humility can be achieved through such consideration, and a deep desire for the discipline of prayer can be thus awakened.

### *Recall Value*

Turning to the positive one affirms faith:

In the power of God, its availability, its transforming efficiency.

In the activity of God, His initiative toward all mankind.

In meditation as one of the means whereby the conscious and the unconscious self become increasingly controlled by God.

### *Recall Reality*

A. Concentrate on *God Without*, on God throughout the Universe. This consideration will vary according to what God means

to each person. For some it may mean "the supreme and unknown Good"—or the "Other Mind—the Creator." For others it may mean "the all inclusive whole containing all things in potentiality." Let *God Without* be recalled with great and growing vividness. It is well to remember that one's present extremely limited vision of Reality can only be extended by the courageous willingness to let it all go—willingness to see it superseded and even nullified if need be by what may appear that is closer to actual Reality. This involves a faith in there being an infinitely larger Universe than one has yet glimpsed.

B. Concentrate on *God Within*.<sup>15</sup> Explore the meaning of these three statements:

"God is Existence."

"God is Knowledge."

"God is Bliss." (Or Joy.) (Beyond pleasure or pain, success or failure, *et cetera*.)<sup>16</sup>

Then—"God is the One containing all three." (Perhaps best symbolized by *Light Within*—see Symbols—page 228.)

At first this particular trinity of meaning may not appeal to the Westerner, but it is worthy of one's experiment. It effectively shifts the emphasis from self to God. (*God Within* is considered by many the real Self as distinguished from the false self.) It helps one realize: "I am not existence—*God* is Existence. This, that, or myself is not Knowledge—*God* is Knowledge. This or that is not Bliss—*God* is Bliss." To some people this realization brings a sense of great relief as well as a transforming experience of the nearness and the availability of God. These simple sentences are capable of infinite expansion in meaning.

Anonymous. Written for this compilation.

## Meditation on Freedom

Give freedom to the ones who dwell close to your heart, not by separating yourself from them, trying to draw apart, for that often

<sup>15</sup> Both Christian and Hindu teachers recommend that one think of God as within, as in the heart.

<sup>16</sup> See Exercise in Resignation.



holds them in closer bonds. Give freedom in every thought, give love, overflowing love—with no restriction in your mind, no question of any kind. As you fully let go, each one will swing into his own accepted place.

Nothing relinquished is lost; everything finds its true balance, its equilibrium, in God. Leave each soul loose and free in your mind to swing into universal Life—a creative being in God, alone, at one with God.

Be not held by false illusions of your worth. Pride and self-condemnation walk side by side. Rid yourself of all condemnation, and give freedom to the ones you felt called upon to please.

Rejoice over the falling leaves of self—you will be light and free indeed when all sense of ownership is gone forever.

Realize that each soul is related to you. When you recognize that everyone is part of you, you will find that you cannot withdraw from another. Open your soul to the sun; you know how to loosen every knot, release every cord, and leave everyone free.

No one comes to you by chance. Give of your bread to all who would approach—then give them space, quietude, love.

Love gives; love never withdraws. Love warms and frees the will of man, so he may receive his own inheritance and make his own decisions.

Elise Morgan, American writer.  
*Your Own Path.*

### Intercessory Prayer

Intercession is a great and necessary part of christian Devotion. The first followers of Christ seem to support all their love, and to maintain all their intercourse and correspondence, by mutual prayers for one another. This was the ancient friendship of Christians, uniting and cementing their hearts.

A frequent intercession with God, earnestly beseeching him to forgive the sins of all mankind, to bless them with his providence, enlighten them with his Spirit, and bring them to everlasting happiness, is the divinest exercise that the heart of man can be engaged in. Be daily therefore on your knees, in a solemn, deliberate

performance of this devotion, and you will find all little, ill-natured passions die away, your heart grow great and generous, delighting in the common happiness of others, as you used only to delight in your own. This is the natural effect of a general intercession for all mankind.

Though we are to treat all mankind as neighbours and brethren, as any occasion offers; yet as we can only live in the actual society of a few, therefore you should always change and alter your intercessions, according as the needs and necessities of your neighbours or acquaintance seem to require; such intercessions, besides the great charity of them, would have a mighty effect upon your own heart for *there is nothing that makes us love a man so much, as praying for him*. That will give you a better and sweeter behaviour than anything that is called fine breeding and good manners.\*

William Law, 1686–1761. English, clergyman, mystic.  
*A Serious Call to a Devout and Holy Life.*

### Meditation on the Interdependence of Mankind

The community of need and interdependence is not a dream; it is not a hope; it is an actual fact however undiscerned by the institutionalized mind. In the hour of his forsakenness the prophet can sink into the folds of this great fellowship and be comforted. By means of it he can leap over the barriers of enmity that separate him from his fellows and hold with them a great friendliness even while they destroy him. For this great fellowship of common need and interdependence, we repeat, is not merely a dream or a hope. It is a present, existing actuality, however hidden from eyes that see not.

One of the great functions of religious worship, both public and private, is to enable a man to grope his way into this community that underlies the mores. Discernment of this community and adaptation to its requirements is one of the chief parts of the practice of religion. The great brotherhood which some religions have fostered, when it is not mere sentimentality, involves some discernment of this interdependence which is so deeply hidden from the custom-bound mind.

Turn away from all other things and contemplate the fact of this

unexplored interdependence of men with all its possibilities, which is God.

Strive to attain some deeper insight into this great fact of human interdependence and fellowship wherein God is revealed.

"Ponder in your heart" the social experiences you have had with a view to finding those deeper meanings and integrating objectives which bind men together but which have not yet come into the full light of social recognition. Searchingly examine your own habits and attitudes to discover what hinders you from serving more fruitfully this sacred community.

Formulate as clearly as possible those personal attitudes which are required to connect you creatively with your fellows to the end of reconstructing the established system to meet the needs of human interdependence.

Establish that attitude of mind in which you will be constantly searching through all your associations with others for more complete mutual understanding and cooperation with them, quick to catch every hint that shows the way to better understanding, sensitive to every sign that tells you you have missed the way, patient and long suffering before every rebuff, with a meekness which cannot be humiliated nor angered because it has laid hold on a bond which cannot be broken and which lifts you above the petty pride that is subject to humiliation and anger.

Establish this questioning attitude by some such words as these, repeated many times, "I enter into deep organic creative community with all mankind." \*

Henry Nelson Wieman, 1884-. American philosopher.  
*Methods of Private Religious Living.*

### Meditation on the Unifying Life

The first contemplation must be of the unifying life to which the individual belongs and into which he may be delivered by pushing through and beyond his individualistic arbitrary frontiers. He should realize by mental concentration the state of being which (in contra-distinction from the natural state of the individual—activated

by greed, fear and resentment) is manifested by three phases of enlarged consciousness, which phases neutralize those intense aspects of individuality and so make its resolving possible. The first is creativeness, so that the power to make may cancel and cut off at its source the need to accumulate. The next is understanding—the realization of the life ahead, the realization that individuality is a phase to be transcended: this knowledge cuts the root of fear which is grounded in anxiety that the individual self, the only reality, may not be preserved. The third phase of the enlarged consciousness is compassion, the insight to see, in the other individuals who attack one's own individuality, the blind struggle which went on in oneself—because the individual is striving to live and yet shrinking from birth: the insight to see that such individuals and oneself can only be delivered when their claims are both met and explained to them: the insight to see that in their struggle the process of one's own salvation is not only recapitulated but is actually being worked out; for without them, as enlightened beings, one's own extra-individuality cannot be completed.

It should be clear that in this exercise the drive and trend is not to thwart and deny the individuality in oneself but to make it realize that the life which it so passionately desires, and fears may be taken from it, will be won if only it can find its path out of its self-defeating entanglement—an entanglement arising from ignorance of its real nature. These positive aims, of creativeness, understanding, and compassion aim at healing individuality by growth into its next stage, by expansion, not by extirpation. Left as it is, it can only press with increasing misery and inflammation against limits which it imagines are imposed from without, but which in reality are due to a blind hypertrophy, a refusal to realize the radical expansion of development which is its true line of vital advance.

When the contemplation has reached this preliminary lucidity, a next stage is to take up into the mind examples, those occasions of other individuals' failure, treating such—as when in this condition one can—as one's own failure. Then, translating all such egotisms and violences as failure to realize the process of the evolution of

consciousness, it is possible to see them as desperate efforts of a drowning man who, though sinking lower and even dragging down those who swim to his rescue, has no wish but to be on land and who would swim with all his might, did he but know the art. We must, then, never say: "I cannot understand such behaviour." Our task of enlightenment is to be able to analyse and translate all human conduct. Nor is Baxter's "There, but for the grace of God, go I" anything but a very rudimentary attitude. It is only the noblest reaction of the anthropomorphic ethic. The new ethic says rather: "There at this moment go I." It sees all life (wronged and wronger) as a nature tragically divided against itself, and it realizes that only the heart which dares to endure the pain of understanding and feeling for both sides is the heart which is already creating the new creature which can embrace and reconcile both.

So, in contemplating, the practician broadens his sympathy until there is no failure or cowardice, no betrayal and no treason that he cannot understand. When he can conceive how natural it is for individuals to fall to such depths, then he realizes how desperate is the case of individuality. He himself is driven with a double urge towards illumination—to escape such degradation but also to make it possible for his fellow, who is caught in that particular trap and so degraded, to be extricated.

When, then, we have refreshed our understanding of the process, we can turn and contemplate that transmuting delivering life.

The body is quiet and at rest—ready to reflect and not distract the spirit's apprehension. The personality is relaxed and loosened—its hard harness of character-habit is unbuckled and movements of consciousness, which the restricted, professional, customary life does not permit, are possible. The spirit stretches and, day by day, as it does these exercises, finds its touch and even its grasp is gradually extending. This is real evolutionary growth. Many details practical authorities and advanced pioneers have added, add, and will add, to this rudimentary outline and skeleton of praxis. He who knows and goes to the limit of his knowing, will grow and, growing, will know how much further he may see and go.\*

BRIEF INSTRUCTION FOR AFFECTIVE PRAYER <sup>17</sup>

Our natural dispositions and mode of life have an influence upon the nature of our prayer. We shall not be surprised, therefore, to find that one person should have passed on at once to affective prayer, having had hardly any acquaintance with the prayer of meditation, and that another should have arrived at certain other degrees without having first gone through all those that were intermediary.

In order to facilitate the practice of affective prayer, it is as well to do as St. Ignatius did, and to take as subjects for prayer not the abstract virtues, but the historic facts that teach these virtues. When we meditate on any Mystery of Our Lord's life, it is easy to make the affections predominate by testifying our respect, love, gratitude or compassion to Our Saviour or His Blessed Mother and holding "colloquies" with them.

We can also establish a certain order in the sentiments that we try to excite. To produce affections is really to make interior acts of certain virtues; we shall therefore draw up a list of virtues appropriate to our needs. We begin, for instance, by acts of faith, hope, or charity towards God and our neighbor. We then go on to resignation, zeal, love of regularity, *etc.*; or the four ends of the holy sacrifice of the Mass: adoration, thanksgiving, petitions for pardon and for graces.

If we compare it with prayer in which the considerations predominate, we see that it is usually superior; for, all other things being equal, its effect upon the conduct is greater.

The difficulty arising in the practice of the virtues proceeds, as a rule, less from a want of knowledge than from a lack of faith, hope, or love. The will is weak; we must begin, therefore, by arousing its activity.

And then the virtues are acquired by a repetition of their acts rather than by reflections; and, finally, these acts are more meritorious than those of the understanding.

In this kind of prayer we not only throw off the inertia of the

<sup>17</sup> Unlike discursive meditation wherein "careful attention is necessary to direct the understanding to consideration of divine Realities," affective prayer moves the will more spontaneously toward God in adoration, humiliation, renunciation, contrition and commitment. (Editors)

will, but we dwell on certain sentiments and develop them. Now, present-day psychologists have shown the great importance of feelings from the point of view of action. A mere idea is not usually sufficient to urge us to action. "Motor-ideas" (ideas-forces) are ideas accompanied by one or more feelings.

Union with God, wherein holiness lies, is, above all, a union of the will. A method in which the acts of the will are more numerous or more interior, leads most rapidly to the goal, the soul's activity being less absorbed by the reason.

We must not exaggerate this doctrine, however, by despising the considerations. For they are indispensable in order to excite the will, more especially in the case of a soul that is not yet penetrated with a horror of sin and has not understood that certain virtues, such as prompt obedience, mortification, meekness, and devotion, are essential. The motives for their practice must be insisted upon. If the acts of the will are the end, those of the understanding are the means.\*

A. Poulain, S.J., 1740-1801. French Jesuit Father.  
*The Graces of Interior Prayer*, Trans. A. Smith.

### Exercise in Resignation (Affective Prayer) <sup>18</sup>

Whereas all internal affective prayer consisteth either: 1. of such affections as are apt to cause suitable motions in corporal nature; 2. or of acts of the will, produced by and residing in the superior soul, as among holy affections the principal is love, the source and mover of all the rest, so among all immediate acts of the will the most useful and considerable are those of Resignation or submission to the Divine will.

As for the exercise of Resignation (which is, indeed, an exercise of love too, but so as that it regards external difficulties as the occasion or matter about which such love is expressed), it is an exercise that deserves to be more particularly treated of.

There is in acts of Resignation far more security and less danger of propriety or self-interest than in acts of immediate love. Again, there is in Resignation exercised more directly true mortification and contradiction to self-love and interest than in any other kind of inter-

<sup>18</sup> See Kinds and Degrees, Chap. IV.

nal prayer, and consequently it is a prayer more purifying, and, considering the daily and hourly use that we have thereof in unavoidable occurring difficulties, it is of all other the most profitable.

Good Lord, what millions of questions, debates, and perils doth total Resignation cut off? Total resignation doth tend to simplicity, doth reject all other things that may hinder or delay the soul from attaining to that one only necessary good.

Hence it follows that that soul which is resigned both for external and internal matters is not only freed from perils that may come from temptations or contradictions, but in a manner from all doubts, questions, and debates; whereas the unresigned soul is in a state wherein nothing can satisfy or secure her conscience.

Concerning the matter of objects of Resignation they are: 1. such difficulties as are sure to happen; 2. or only probably; 3. or very unlikely; 4. or, lastly, altogether impossible. Now in all these Resignation may be profitably exercised. But the better the more likely that the things are to happen; and the best and most necessary Resignation of all is in things sure to befall us, and which belong to our state especially such against which our nature finds the greatest difficulty.<sup>19</sup>

Now, having made efficacious and prevalent acts of internal Resignation, if, when the said difficulties do *de facto* happen, we do truly and really accept and embrace them with our superior will (whatsoever repugnance we find in our sensitive nature), this will much more advance the soul in Divine Love, and increase the good habit of Resignation, than many bare internal acts would do, by which the soul doth only represent a difficulty in the imagination, resolving with the will to accept it.

In performing these acts internally, a soul must be very careful to exercise them with most profound humility, and a distrust of her own ability to resist any temptation or contradiction, and with an entire trust and dependence on God's grace, with a firm faith in Him that He will assist her at all times whensoever He shall bring such trials upon her.

In the beginning of the exercising this degree of prayer, I con-

<sup>19</sup> See Chapter II—Self-knowledge (Pressure and Ego Investigation) and Chapter III—Role of Suffering and Crisis.



ceive it will be the best course for a soul to single out and make choice of such acts of resignation as do regard such daily occurring difficulties, to which nature hath less aversion to resign herself, and from these to ascend afterwards by degrees to matters of more difficulty, till at last, by God's grace, she be enabled to accept even those things which nature doth most abhor; for if she should suddenly adventure upon acts above her present strength and forces of mind she will be in danger to be dejected, finding that she wants internal courage to undertake or submit to such difficulties represented to her mind.

When special occasions of actual and real Resignation do not occur, a soul may make general and indefinite acts of Resignation, regarding in gross all occasions whatsoever without exception. This practice of universal Resignation may be begun very timely, and accordingly continued one's whole life; although, indeed, only perfect souls can purely, without reservation, exercise such acts.

In exercising internally these acts, a soul is not to produce them overfast, and quick one upon another, to the hurt and oppression of the head or spirit, but quietly and leisurely one after another, with reasonable pausings.

As she may resign to sickness, pain, want, dishonour, etc., so she may also, for the glory of God, resign herself to health, pleasures, riches, honour, *etc.*, intending, if God's will be such, to accept of these also, and to employ them only to His glory, and not to the satisfaction of corrupt nature, not diminishing but rather increasing humility and divine love by them. It is the nature of a spiritual life to make good use both of prosperity and adversity, in all things renouncing all self-seeking, and having an eye only to God; though, indeed, considering our frailty and inclination to be corrupted by prosperity, adversity is far more secure and profitable for us, and therefore such resignations are proper for few souls.\*

Augustin Baker, 1575-1641. English Benedictine Father.  
*Holy Wisdom.*

### Consideration of Death as an Act of Resignation

All things are impermanent, all the constituents of the body are constantly changing.

Certain cells are dying, others are coming to be; death is ever present in the body, bound up with life. Death is nothing but the retreat of consciousness from the body.

Try to be detached from the obsession of clinging to personality. Do not hold on to that which is illusive, impermanent, and unsatisfactory.

Be peaceful; life is so short that it is foolish to waste the days, or to be dominated by greed and grasping. It is well to cultivate pure thoughts and higher states of consciousness. Pure thoughts and pure actions are said to ensure rebirth under favourable conditions.

Call to mind the good actions performed in this life and ignore the mistakes; say to one's self:

"There is nothing in death that should frighten; there is nothing in life that should hold one back."

Before falling asleep at night send out loving thoughts to all living beings.

Resolve, when the time comes, to sink peacefully into the sleep of death, free from all regret and from all desire.

Such indeed is the Buddhist attitude toward death and the faring on.

Grace Constant Lounsbury, B.S.C., President of Les Amis Du Bouddhisme (Paris).  
*Buddhist Meditation.*

### Consideration of One's Psychic Abyss as an Act of Resignation

One of the most helpful forms of Affective Prayer is that in which the individual seeks to face his own particular psychic abyss, his minus 100, the thing that seems worse than death to him since it represents the elimination of his false self. He should try to feel and imagine himself as being actually in this worst-of-all situations. He should seek to visualize what the objective reaction, as contrasted to the egocentric fear-driven reaction, would be. He should remind himself that minus 100 situations are after all very human and general and that even in these "worst" situations there have been men and women who have responded in the creative, courageous, serene way and that the same kind of inner courage and wisdom is available to him. He should remind himself that it is available if he will but learn

to face and understand his own inner fear, thus lessening its hold on him; and if he will affirm the transforming power of the Spirit within. It is to the progressive realization of this inner Spirit—this Real-self—that he must commit himself.

Anonymous.

## DIFFICULTIES OF THE BEGINNER <sup>20</sup>

For those of us who have recently begun the practice of religious exercises, or mental prayer (as distinguished from vocal or traditional petitionary prayer) the difficulties seem bewilderingly various. Especially is this so, if the early attempts to meditate have been lightened by the insight or joy which often strengthens the beginner. These difficulties can be placed perhaps in two groups—difficulties arising from outer circumstance, and those springing from one's inner attitude.

Many simple physical adjustments must be made:—the body taught to be relaxed, the hour for prayer chosen wisely so that one is best able to concentrate, the amount and kind of food one eats must be strictly chosen, not on the old basis of one's likes, but on the new one of bodily efficiency. One must learn to relax *toward* the irrelevant noises which seem to fill one's ears, rather than resist them, which serves only to make them roar the louder. The exciting activities and demands of the body, now noticed in the unaccustomed quiet, are to be forgotten. The actual schedule of the day may have to be drastically rearranged to make way for this effort, for it is important to have a margin of time on either side of the hour for meditation to forestall the feeling of breathless self-importance we carry into much of our daily activity. For some people it is a problem to find a solitary, if not a quiet place, where one can be alone or with friends who are meditating too. These adjustments can be grouped together as making up some of the difficulties of outer circumstance or environment.

Harder to banish are the obstacles or difficulties in meditation which spring from one's inner life. Disheartenment over "the years

<sup>20</sup> Also see Part One—Chapter III—Obstacles to Progression.

that went in empty sacrifice to mortal things" fills the mind with gloom, amounting almost to despair. Everyone, it seems, goes through this experience. Sometimes, too, it becomes an excuse for not working harder. Suddenly it is clear, "I'm just making this a side-line, all my real interests are out on the counter. Perhaps I really don't want this enough to go on with the discipline." And when this happens one has stumbled on the very stubborn fact of one's own sloth. It is a natural reaction, particularly at those times when the mind seems full of sand, both heavy and dry, or when the mind swarms like a freshly stirred ant hill with thought of everything else but the Reality about which one desires to think.

At other times, over-confidence, the conviction one really belongs among those who may be gifted in prayer, keeps one from making progress. To begin to expect special manifestations of God's grace, to anticipate experiences which one has read about but which belong to a stage far beyond one's own development, is fatal to the real spirit of meditation. If the experts agree on one essential quality of mind and heart, in this work of practicing the Presence of God in prayer, that essential is humility. For, say they all, the real work of prayer is done by God,—our part is to empty the heart of those things which keep Him out. Whatever then comes, if one has been sincere and humbly eager to be fit for His indwelling, will be accepted tranquilly as a necessary part of the process which is to lead us out of our narrow selves into the wideness of God's infinite charity.

So then we learn to pray, not that one's prayer be made easier, but that one's desire for Him be made deeper, not that one can have the gifts one has not earned, but rather, the power to serve Him through each day in every tiny act. We learn that everything we do is insignificant if it points toward ourselves, but strangely significant if it points toward God. With humility and desire and faith in God as infinite and eternal and unchanging in His love and understanding for all his creatures, the difficulties of meditation are seen as part of one's growth. We must all come to terms with Holiness, soon or late. It is for us to decide when.

### Insincerity

A temperamental hazard (to progress), if such it can be termed, as high for most honest people as a mountain, is the *insincerity of daily life*. No honest man can pray without a sharp compunction; I pray *this* way, but I live *that* way. The battle is promptly joined between prayer and conduct. Often it is an unequal battle; prayer is killed and buried without obsequies, while conduct lives on uneasy in its unworthiness. Herein is the reason why prayer is tepid and fitful; prayer keeps us from baseness, or baseness keeps us from prayer. Doubt of prayer is sometimes a consequence rather than an origin: we are self-indicted, and then take refuge in alleged perplexities to justify our brokenness. Prayer involves us in a discipline so hard that it resembles surgery. For our wrong does not rest like dust on a smooth surface of life: it cannot be washed away by some ablution of morning and evening prayer. Nor is the wrong separate and distinct: it cannot be picked out by some tweezers-moment of self-criticism.

Prayer is not a vain attempt to change God's will: it is a filial desire to learn God's will and to share it. Prayer is not a substitute for work: it is the secret spring and indispensable ally of all true work—the clarifying of work's goal, the purifying of its motives, and the renewing of its zeal.\*

George A. Buttrick, 1892-. American clergyman.  
*The Christian Fact and Modern Doubt.*

### Social Pressure

As soon as worldlings perceive that you wish to follow the devout life, they will let fly at you a thousand shafts of their gossip and slander: the more malicious will falsely attribute your change to hypocrisy, bigotry and pretence; they will say that the world has frowned upon you, and that for this reason you turn to God; your friends will hasten to pour out upon you a flood of remonstrances, which in their opinion are very prudent and charitable; you will fall, they will tell you, into a state of melancholy, you will lose credit with the world, you will make yourself unbearable, you will grow old before your time, your domestic affairs will suffer thereby; when one

is in the world one must live the life of a person in the world; salvation may be attained without so many mysteries; and a thousand such-like foolish things.

We have seen gentlemen and ladies spend the whole night, and even many nights consecutively, in playing at chess and at cards. Can there be any attention more dull, more melancholy and more dismal than that? And yet worldlings say not a word, friends are not in the least disturbed thereat; but if we make an hour's meditation, or if we are seen to rise a little earlier than usual in the morning, in order to prepare for Communion, everyone runs off to the doctor that he may cure us of melancholy and jaundice. People spend thirty nights in dancing, and not one of them complains of any ill effects; but if they spend one Christmas night in watching, everyone coughs and complains of being ill next day. Who cannot see that the world is an unjust judge; gracious and favourable towards its own children, but harsh and rigorous towards the children of God?

We cannot stand well with the world unless we become one with it. It is impossible for us to satisfy it, for it is too capricious.

St. Francis de Sales, 1567-1622. French Bishop of Geneva.  
*Introduction to the Devout Life*, Trans. Allan Ross.

### Immaturities in Devotion

It is amazing to see, how eagerly men employ their time, and study—how all helps are called to their assistance, when any thing is intended in worldly matters; and how dull, negligent, and unimproved they are, how little they use their abilities, to raise and increase their devotion!

Mundanus is a man of excellent parts, and clear apprehension. He has made a great figure in business; and he is always contriving to carry every method of doing any thing well, to its greatest height. He can tell you all the defects and errors in all the common methods whether of trade, building, or improving land, or manufactures. Thus has Mundanus gone on.

The one only thing which has not received any benefit from his judicious mind, is his devotion: This is just in the same poor state it was, when he was only six years of age, and the old man prays now,

in that little form of words, which his mother used to hear him repeat night and morning, without considering how improvable the spirit of devotion is, how many helps a wise and reasonable man may call to his assistance, and how necessary it is, that our prayers should be enlarged, varied and suited to the particular state and condition of our lives.

If Mundanus sees a book of devotion, he passes it by, as he does a spelling-book, because he remembers that he learned to pray, so many years ago under his mother, when he learned to spell.

Now how pitiable is the conduct of this man of sense, who has so much judgment in every thing but that which is the whole wisdom of man?

And how miserably do many people, more or less, imitate this conduct? \*

William Law, 1686-1761. English clergyman and mystic.  
*Serious Call to a Devout and Holy Life.*

### Inadequacy of Plan and Experiment

Prayer will always tend to settle down at the premature synthesis of too slight experiment and too narrow a theory unless we have a full plan of prayer. We must know of its three stages and from the view of those three stages we must realize what through the entire life of prayer we are intended to achieve. We must realize that we are created by this method to achieve an evolution of consciousness until our will is one with the divine will and our knowledge shares its purpose. The arrest of this process always leads to one of two sorry states. In some cases there comes an assured narrowness which by lack of charity and a degree of willful ignorance may actually come to "sin against light." It may come to deny that spiritual people who differ from it can be good, e.g., Teresa's gratuitous remark that the *Mirror of the Soul* is hopelessly broken in all heretics. Even more frequently it will end in a slow return to indifference. Gradually the mind realizes that answered prayer is not the simple and complete proof that it was assumed at first to be. Gradually the soul feels the return of old desires, the urgency of former material interests, against whose invasion it can oppose no valid arguments nor strong loyalties.

The alteration in conduct has not been sufficiently sustained to lead to a change in character, still less in consciousness. The reaction of the deeper habit-patterns, suppressed but not sublimated, now comes on with renewed strength. The man either returns to his former way of living, or, with a stoic defiance, and for the sake of his pride in his own consistency and fear of contempt, hangs on, dry, embittered and inwardly not far from despair.

This great danger, so common and so comprehensive, real knowledge of prayer (and it alone) can wholly prevent. The right knowledge which shows what life is for, that it is for the attainment of a new quality of consciousness and that the whole of life is a "hatching process," this knowledge guards us against being content with Low Prayer or Middle Prayer, with "supply," with "cures," with any specific influence. It points us on to an entire process whereby we see our prayer life as the essential method whereby evolution continues in us and we co-operate with it.

Gerald Heard, 1889-. English author, religious philosopher.  
*A Preface to Prayer.*

### Advice Regarding Distractions

All day long we go about disguised, to a very large extent hiding our real self that others may not see what we are, and this not seldom to such a degree that the disguise becomes more real to us than our actual self. But when we come to pray, our real self, torn by a myriad interests, our interior mental life, crowded with distractions, surges out into that silent sanctuary wherein we seek the peace of God. 'If we find the door shut, why should we be surprised?'

We must be convinced that little things are often as dangerous in hindering our walk in the path of perfection as are great things. For instance there is no occasion for us to hear and see, still less to say, half the things which, if they do not lead to sin, yet disturb the peace and calm of the soul. 'Keep thy tongue from evil' and from that idle speaking to which our Lord refers so sternly, for talkativeness and all that it leads to are most harmful to the spiritual life. It is too often the mark of a shallow spirit; indeed, it would seem that the less a man thinks—and thinking is fast dying out—the more he talks.



'Talking,' said Faber, 'is a loss of power,' and it certainly tends to dissipate that sense of the presence of God which is the greatest guard of the soul. Deliberately to choose to be silent at times, to watch and weigh our words when we speak, would accomplish more for many than the pious practices they so much enjoy.

Another sphere in which custody of the sense is necessary, especially in view of our prayer, is that of concentration in the spirit of St. Catherine of Genoa's 'One thing only and one thing at a time.' To pray well demands not merely concentration, but a concentration which has nothing forced or violent about it. St. Francois de Sales never tires of insisting upon the need of calmness and tranquillity in our approach to God. But to have this at our prayer means that we must strive for it outside of our prayer, and one of the greatest aids to this is to learn to do each thing as it comes, as if it were the only thing we had to do, and having done it, or being compelled to leave it to go on to another duty, to do so in the same spirit. So, occupied and fully and calmly concentrated on each duty as it presents itself, repressing all impatience, excitement and the vain attempt to do or think of half a dozen things at once, we shall come to our prayer in the same spirit, and find ourselves free from a swarm of distractions which are simply due to the lack of any concentration in the rest of our life.

The world of affairs is full of men who are intensely recollected because they are intensely interested in some particular aim or project. They do a thousand things a day, but behind all they do, dominating and influencing all their life, is one supreme thing. They are not always actually thinking of it; they may, indeed, and will at times, be thinking of and doing the commonplace things, eating, drinking, playing, that all men do. But always, even if not consciously at the moment, one thing and one alone is supreme and central; for that thing they live; without it, life to them would lose all meaning. They are men of recollection.

And recollection in the spiritual life means precisely the same thing; it is the spirit of the man who is possessed with the reality of God as the true end of all human life. We need a conversion to God, not merely from sin; 'seek the Lord and your soul shall live,' 'for if

ye truly seek Me with all your heart ye shall surely find me,' and to find God is to have found that one absorbing interest before which all else is as naught.\*-\*\*

Bede Frost, 1877-. English priest, Church of England.  
*The Art of Mental Prayer.*

## Psychological Phenomena <sup>21</sup>

Where the intensity is great, unusual psychological phenomena appear. Sometimes voices are heard or sounds "like a mighty rushing wind"; sometimes there are automatic visions of light or of forms or figures,<sup>22</sup> as, for instance, of Christ or of a cross; sometimes automatic writing or speaking attends the experience; sometimes there are profound body changes of a temporary or even permanent character; sometimes a state of swoon or ecstasy lasting from a few seconds to entire days. These physical phenomena, however, are as spiritually unimportant and as devoid of religious significance as are the normal body resonances and reverberations which accompany, in milder degrees, all of our psychic processes. They indicate no high rank of sainthood and they prove no miracle-working power. The significant features of the experience are the consciousness of fresh springs of life, the release of new energies, the inauguration of a sense of mission and the conviction amounting in the mind of the recipient to certainty that God is found as an environing and vitalizing presence.

Rufus Jones, 1863-. American philosopher, author.  
*Spiritual Reformers of the 16th and 17th Centuries.*

## Reformation of Others

Nothing is more important in the early stages of the spiritual life than to resist that 'temptation of beginners,' the reformation of others. 'Let us look at our own faults, and not at other people's. We

<sup>21</sup> See "Mysticism" by Evelyn Underhill (E. P. Dutton and Company).

<sup>22</sup> In recent years, fortunately, the highly trained religious psychotherapist has become equipped to help persons who experience such psychic phenomena. If properly handled, dreams and visions can be used to great advantage in clarifying religious experience, and in releasing, assimilating and thus integrating unconscious dynamic factors. (See Chapter VI; also see "Analytical Psychology and Religious Experience" by Michael Fordham, M.R.C.P.—Lecture 46—1947—of the series published by *The Guild of Pastoral Psychology*—London). It is true, as Dr. Jones writes, that such manifestations indicate no high rank of saintly achievement. Their importance rests in the opportunities they afford for inner clarification.

ought not to insist on everyone following in our footsteps, nor to take upon ourselves to give instructions in spirituality when, perhaps, we do not even know what it is.' (St. Theresa) <sup>23</sup>

'When people begin to have pleasure in the rest and the fruit of prayer, they will have everyone else be very spiritual also. To desire this is not wrong, but to try to bring it about may not be right, except with great discretion and great reserve, without any appearance of teaching.' She, (St. Theresa), gives an illustration from her own experience, for she had made others endeavour to pray, only to find that they contrasted what she said of the blessedness of prayer with her lack of virtues, in spite of her prayer. 'And thus, during many years, only three persons were the better for what I said to them; but now that our Lord has made me stronger in virtue, in the course of two or three years, many persons have profited.' <sup>24</sup> \*

Bede Frost, 1877-. English priest, Church of England.  
*The Art of Mental Prayer.*

### Aridity

There are scarce any souls that give themselves to internal prayer but some time or other do find themselves in great indisposition thereto, having great obscurities in the mind and great insensibility in the affections. So that if imperfect souls be not well instructed and prepared, they will be in danger, in case that such contradictions in inferior nature continue long, to be dejected, yea, and perhaps deterred from pursuing prayer, for they will be apt to think that their recollections are to no purpose at all.

Yea, some souls there are conducted by Almighty God by no other way, but only by such prayer of aridity, finding no sensible contentment in any recollections, but, on the contrary, continual pain and contradiction, and yet, by a privy grace and courage imprinted deeply in the spirit, cease not for all that, but resolutely break through all difficulties and continue, the best they can, their internal exercises to the great advancement of their spirit.

The causes of this aridity and indisposition to prayer, ordinarily

<sup>23</sup> (Inter. Castle, M. III., chap. ii. 19.)

<sup>24</sup> (Life, xiii, 11, 12).

speaking, are principally a certain natural complexion of some, and especially of those who by their corporal temper are most fitted for the exercise of sensible affections, because the humours and spirits of the body, together with the change of weather, etc., have a far greater influence upon these sensible affections than upon the mere operations either of the understanding or will, which do not so much depend upon the body. From this ground it is that devout women, who naturally do more abound with sensible affections than men, are more subject to be afflicted and persecuted with these aridities.

Such discouragements do least appear in Vocal prayer. The prayer of Meditation likewise, in those for whom it is proper, is not usually much assaulted with such aridities. The pain and anguish that good souls suffer from these aridities is very grievous, being a kind of continual martyrdom; and therefore the merit of constancy in prayer, notwithstanding such discouragements in nature, is the greater, and souls to whom God shall give such constancy will find their exercises both much more secure, yea, and much more profitable than if they had flowed with sensible affections.

The spirit, whose operations do not much depend on the corporal disposition, may in the midst of all sensible aridities and obscurities perform its functions with great efficacy. The intellectual faculty is at all times capable of illumination, and the will of receiving grace and strength from God, and the light and grace which we receive at such times are far more pure and divine than when corporal affections do abound, for then they are communicated purely to the spirit. The essential profit of a soul consists in the light and love of the spirit; such light and love, therefore, which are got with so much difficulty, is far more solidly rooted in the soul than that which is got by the exercise of sensible affections; because all the while there is a continual combat against self-love, and all the most secret, subtle, and deeply-hidden snares of it.

To the end to attain unto this most necessary courageousness of mind, such souls may do well to help themselves during their aridities with the best motives and most efficacious affections that they can furnish themselves withal, either out of their own invention or by

collection out of books, as likewise frequently to urge themselves to the love of God by such ejaculatory prayers and desires.\*

Augustin F. Baker, 1575-1641. English Benedictine Father.  
*Holy Wisdom.*

### The Dark Night of the Soul

Probably the most celebrated of all works dealing with the difficulties (periods of dryness and desolation) met on the religious way is *The Dark Night of the Soul*, written in the sixteenth century by the Spanish mystic San Juan de la Cruz. It describes the benefits and trials of two purgations or Dark Nights. The first Night is described as the purgation of the senses. It is operative through most of the first stage of the spiritual way, becoming more intense as the beginner is being prepared to pass on to the state of proficiency.

These Dark Nights<sup>25</sup> are variously described by different writers<sup>26</sup> and seem to be the common experience of the great mystics. They offer data of special interest to the religious psychologist who wishes to study the Mystic Way and its practices in relation to the release of the creative Self. This data will also be of general interest to all who are intent on following the Way, for to be aware of its hardships helps prevent retarding discouragement.

Although the experience of the first Dark Night is unquestionably inherent in the process of purgation and self-knowledge, there is reason to believe that some of the terrific intensity suffered by the early mystics, especially in the second or Spiritual Night, may have been, in part, due to a too rapid rate of progress, or perhaps to the inconsistencies between an anthropomorphic cosmology and their experience which did not fit the cosmology. The actual Light which they experienced may have been brighter and more vast than the conceptual preparation so that the bright dawn of a new day was like a Dark Night.

It is believed that the techniques for clarification developed by analytical psychology, if properly handled, can contribute toward an acceleration in the traverse of these Nights of Purgation wherein a transformation of the personality is effected.

Though St. John's writing may present difficulties in the manner of expression, they hold a wealth of insight. We deeply regret that lack of

<sup>25</sup> The second Night is referred to as the *Cloud of Unknowing* by the anonymous writer of the classic treatise by the same name.

<sup>26</sup> See *Mysticism* by Evelyn Underhill for an excellent discussion of difficulties on the Way.

space prevents the inclusion here of the long selections chosen from this great work. The reader is referred to the book itself, *The Dark Night of the Soul* (trans. by G. C. Graham, Watkins, 1922, London). See especially the material on The First Dark Night. See pages 61-83 and 87-105. The reader who has some psychological background is also referred to the lecture by Michael Fordham, M.R.C.P., titled *Analytical Psychology and the Religious Experience*, printed by the Guild of Pastoral Psychology (16 Hillside, London S.W. 19.). Dr. Fordham says of St. John, "One is tempted to call him a medieval analyst, for mysticism has become almost scientific in his hands. . . ." (Editors)

### Two Levels of Interest to Aid in Aridities

One quite general, yet very helpful preparation towards the practice of sobriety in prayer, and hence towards escaping, as far as possible, the acute reactions liable to follow upon such very delightful prayer, is admirably preached and practised by Jean Nicholas Grou. This fine classical scholar, and deeply spiritual writer and leader of souls, urges *the importance of the soul's possession and cultivation of two levels and kinds of action and interest*—a wholesome, natural interest and action, and a deep supernatural interest and action. The soul will then possess and will cultivate a genuine interest in politics or economics, in language or history, in natural science or philosophy—in these, as part of its bread-winning or as quite freely chosen studies. And we will thus, when in dryness and even in anticipation of it, possess a most useful range of interest to which to turn, as our disporting ground, in relief of the dreariness or the strain of our directly religious life.

Spiritual dryness is indeed inevitable in the life of prayer; we will be much helped to bear these desert stretches, by persistent recognition—hence also, indeed especially, in our times of fervour—of the normality and the necessity of such desolation. We will thus come to treat desolation in religion as we treat the recurrence of the night within every twenty-four hours of our physical existence; or as bodily weariness at the end of any protracted exertion in our psychic life. When desolation is actually upon us, we will quietly modify, as far as need be, the kind and the amount of our prayer—back, say, from

prayer of quiet to ordinary meditation, or to vocal prayer—even to but a few uttered aspirations. And, if the desolation is more acute, we will act somewhat like the Arab caravans behave in the face of a blinding sandstorm in the desert. The men dismount, throw themselves upon their faces in the sand; and there they remain, patient and uncomplaining, till the storm passes, and until, with their wonted patient endurance, they can and do continue on their way.

There are generally a weakness and an error at work within us, at such times, which considerably prolong the trouble, and largely neutralise the growth this very trouble would otherwise bring to our souls. The weakness lies in that we let our imagination and sensitiveness be directly absorbed in our trouble. We contemplate, and further enlarge, the trouble present in ourselves, instead of firmly and faithfully looking away, either at the great abiding realities of the spiritual world, or, if this is momentarily impossible for us, at some other, natural or human, wholesome fact or law. And the error lies in our lurking suspicions that, for such trials to purify us, we must feel them fully in their tryingness—that is, we must face and fathom them directly and completely. It ignores the experience of God's saints across the ages, that, precisely in proportion as we can get away from direct occupation with our troubles to the thought and love of God, to the presence of Him Who permits all this, in the same proportion do and will these trials purify our souls.\*

Friedrich Von Hügel, 1852–1925. Austrian theologian, author.  
*The Life of Prayer.*

### Necessity for Habitual Prayer

It is not with prayer as with other arts or habits; a student by cessation from study doth not presently lose nor so much as diminish the knowledge that he had before, but a soul that is not in actual prayer, or at least in an immediate disposition and an habitual desire of prayer, sinks presently into nature and loses much of that strength that she had formerly. There are not always occasions to exercise particular virtues, as temperance, patience, chastity, *etc.*, because temptations do not always assault us; but we may always pray, and always we have need so to do, for a soul, except she be in prayer, or that the virtue of prayer be alive in her, is in a state of distraction and

disunion from God, and, consequently, exposed to all manner of enemies, being withal deprived of the only means to resist them, so that the dangers and miseries of an unrecollected life are inexplicable.

Augustin Baker, 1575-1641. English Benedictine Father.  
*Holy Wisdom.*

### Necessity of a Worthy View of God

Supreme worship, the recognition that here is Someone Who heads and surpasses all values which we can attribute, Who, as we say vernacularly, "beggars description," is what the soul tries *involuntarily* to give to God. It is precisely what the individual consciousness feels *spontaneously* moved to give to the Supreme Consciousness. For, in those words "involuntarily" and "spontaneously" lies the clue to the real nature of worship. It is not and cannot be something exacted as a duty. This being so, it is clear that praise, as it appears in most traditional worship, has been hopelessly "overrepresented" in our religious services. Of those who go to church, how many feel themselves ever even faintly astounded at the wonder and beauty of God? Indeed we may say that so long as God is regarded with either suspicion or an easy familiarity, as long as we think of Him as Someone to be avoided or to get things out of, so long He cannot be worshiped, he cannot be marveled at with that mixture of profound awe and overwhelming self-forgetful delight which is the true catharsis and deliverance of the soul who is so raised and cleansed.

Praise, true worship, is a result of having a worthy view of God. The idea of God which has drawn out exultant joy from the soul is one which always rises above any anthropomorphic notion of retaliatory punishment. God is conceived as the True, the Good, and the Beautiful. Truth itself has power to awaken an authentic element of worship. Truth is defined as "correspondence"—this fits exactly with that—the law of the structure of my mind, the way my mind works, is the complement of the law governing the structure of the universe and the way it moves. Kepler's was an authentic act of worship when he knelt down in delighted wonder and praise on recognizing the simple orderliness of the planets' movements. We can feel the same delighted wonder when we witness supreme goodness. Acts of noble



generosity and invincible compassion awake in us a delight which is almost pain. We realize, with a relief which has in it some agony, how near we had been to despair, to death, and now, at the sight of this moral splendor, something in us vibrates in answer to its grandeur. And all of us who witness the deed—to say nothing of the beneficiaries of the specific act—partake of the redemptive-creative process.

But because with our Hebrew background and medieval middle distance, because to the Jew God was Justice and the Law, and to the Christian He was Sacrifice, we have neglected His third attribute, Beauty. So it may well be that in our reaction to beauty it is that we shall best come to understand the nature of worship and praise. For in our response to beauty there is no adulteration of adulation, flattery, carneying or cringing. When we see supreme beauty, either in nature or in art, we do not—we cannot—ask, of what use is it? What could it do for me? or, How much does it demand of me? As Manet said, "We stand moved," we are arrested, rapt, altered. In our unguarded self-forgetfulness we "give ourselves away." The consciousness which catches sight of beauty, which is caught up by loveliness, is instantly and purely brought into an act of worship.

God, then, as Truth, Goodness and Beauty, exerts on the soul this supreme attraction; and the spontaneous reaction to that attraction is worship. Praise is the response of likeness, the desire to be that which is admired. He who praises is the echo of God. Worship, then, is inevitable: contemplation leads to it: all sustained contemplation is a form of worship. For contemplation might be defined as that creative glance whereby the creature, becoming one with the Creator, achieves the constant interpretation of the apparent, temporal manifold into the Eternal One. God is the Composer, man is the executant.\*-\*\*

Gerald Heard, 1889-. English author, religious philosopher.  
*A Preface to Prayer.*

### Necessity for Perseverance

Be like the pearl oyster. There is a pretty Indian fable to the effect that if it rains when the star Svâti is in the ascendant, and a drop of

rain falls into an oyster, that drop becomes a pearl. The oysters know this, so they come to the surface when that star shines, and wait to catch the precious raindrop. When a drop falls into them, quickly the oysters close their shells and dive down to the bottom of the sea, there to patiently develop the drop into the pearl. We should be like that. First, hear, then understand, and then, leaving all distractions, shut your minds to outside influences, and devote yourselves to developing the truth within you. There is the danger of frittering away our energies by taking up an idea only for its novelty, and then giving it up for another that is newer. Take one thing up and do it, and see the end of it, and before you have seen the end, do not give it up. Those that only take a nibble here and a nibble there will never attain anything. They may titillate their nerves for a moment, but there it will end. They will be slaves in the hands of Nature, and will never get beyond the senses.

Those who really want to be *Yogis* must give up once for all, this nibbling at things. Take up one idea. Make that one idea your life; think of it; dream of it; live on that idea. Let the brain, muscles, nerves, every part of your body be full of that idea, and just leave every other idea alone. This is the way to success, and this is the way great spiritual giants are produced. Others are mere talking machines. If we really wanted to be blessed, and make others blessed, we must go deeper. The first step is not to disturb the mind, not to associate with persons whose ideas are disturbing. But those who take up just a bit of it and a little of everything else make no progress. It is of no use to simply take a course of lessons. To those who are full of *Tamas*, ignorant and dull,—those whose minds never get fixed on any idea, who only crave for something to amuse them—religion and philosophy are simply subjects of entertainment. These are the unpersevering. They hear a talk, think it very nice, and then go home and forget all about it. To succeed, you must have tremendous perseverance.\*

Swami Vivekananda, 1863-1902. Hindu mystic, seer.  
Raja—Yoga.



## CHAPTER SIX

### *Psychotherapy*

Psychology on the one hand and religion on the other use two means of approach to a common subject-matter. . . .

We need to realise that psychology leads us sooner or later to religious experience, while religion can only be brought home to the individual through essential psychological facts.

MICHAEL FORDHAM

The specific value of psychotherapy is in the revelation of those motives and impulses operating outside the field of consciousness which hold one back from true self knowledge.

FRITZ KUNKEL

## CHAPTER SIX

### *Psychotherapy*<sup>1</sup>

Not until one determines to restrict his task to the elimination of his egocentricity, and no longer tries to force an increase of courage and vitality, does the process of self-education get started. The distribution of the parts in the task is something like this: The light is obscured; it is not my problem to light the light (for it is already burning), but my problem is to clear away the obstacles that are obstructing the light. I cannot create light, but I can remove the shade. If a man wished to light the light himself, he would be more vain than ever. If he would wait until the light penetrated the shade by itself, he would be more timid than ever; he would be trying to *escape his responsibilities*. The objective is the untiring work at the removal of the shade and the unerring confidence in the presence of the light.\*

Fritz Kunkel, M.D., 1889-. German psychotherapist, author.  
*God Helps Those.*

#### The Relation of Psychotherapy and Religion

It is in the aiding of people to find meaning for their lives that religion and depth-psychology are in partnership. The field of meaning in life is essentially the religious area, but the technique of discovering why persons fail to find meaning—why they suffer hindrances, complexes, irrational fears—is the modern contribution of depth-psychology.

Many modern persons have been unable to quench their thirst for meaning in the stream of organized religion. Numerous reasons could be given for this—the stagnation that results from any large

<sup>1</sup> See Self-Knowledge page 69 and see Appendix page 467.

organization, the preaching of dry forms in which the vitality has run dry, the great upheavals in our Western culture of the last century. Whatever the reason, multitudes of modern intelligent people have been unable to find the guidance they wished in conventional religion. They have been told so oppressively often to believe in life and love their neighbors, that the words ring with the cant of mere verbal repetition.

At the threshold of the present century, a new endeavor to understand the human personality sprang up as an answer to a great need. Beginning with Sigmund Freud, this "psychoanalysis" was an attempt to be scientific about the human soul. We cannot achieve health or happiness, Freud pointed out, by the dishonest means of repressing all tendencies that our Victorian moralism finds unpalatable, and we are deceiving ourselves if we think that our arrogant "egos" standing at the thresholds of our minds can arbitrarily decide the great issues of life as the whim strikes them. The new understanding of human motives worked out in Vienna constitutes probably the outstanding discovery of the twentieth century.

The practical application of the knowledge which depth-psychology has discovered was developed through various contributions by Dr. C. G. Jung, who terms his subject "analytical psychology," Alfred Adler, who calls his work "individual psychology," Fritz Kunkel, Otto Rank, and others. The fact that so many of Freud's disciples have dissented from the master, rather than a mutiny of the ranks, was like the independent searching for gold of a number of prospectors—since there was so much gold to be found.

In the past twenty years it has become recognized that most psychological problems are intertwined with religious, and that religious problems have in most cases a very clear psychological aspect. . . . Dr. Jung expresses in vivid and perhaps extreme fashion what psychologists of all sorts are beginning to observe: "Among all my patients in the second half of life—that is to say over thirty-five—there has not been one whose problem in the last resort was not that of finding a religious outlook on life. It is safe to say that every one of them fell ill because he had lost that which the living religions of every age have given to their followers, and none of them has been

really healed who did not regain his religious outlook.”<sup>2</sup> Dr. Jung goes on to caution us that this has nothing to do with the dogmas of a particular church; it is rather, as this chapter has sought to indicate, the reaching out of the human soul for basic meaning by which it can live.

The psychoanalyst, or consulting psychologist, or whatever he may call himself, is concerned with helping the individual overcome fears and rationalizations and inhibitions so that he can move ahead with success. The neurotic man who refuses to meet people and who holds that all women are demons must first understand the detours in his background that have led him to the impasse—here the sheer technique of analysis comes into its own. But then, having been helped back on the road, he must believe in the worth of love and friendship in order that he may move down the road with courage. . . . So psychotherapy, the technique, points inevitably toward religion, the goal and meaning.

Dr. Adler holds in his last book that we should view life *sub specie aeternitatis* and at the time of his death he was engaged in collaborating with clergymen in work on pastoral psychology. “The best conception hitherto gained,” he writes, “for the elevation of humanity is the idea of God.”<sup>3</sup>

“It is doubtless true,” writes Dr. Menninger, “that religion has been the world’s psychiatrist throughout the centuries.”<sup>4</sup> One can be coldly scientific in segments of the technique of analysis; but the closer the treatment comes to completion, the more the therapist must take into consideration aspects of life which are by no means coldly scientific, such as faith, hope, and love. “The patient needs a world view,” Dr. Otto Rank aptly puts it, “and will always need it, because man always needs belief, and this is so much more, the more increasing self-consciousness brings him to doubt.”<sup>5</sup> \*\_\*\*

Rollo May, contemporary American psychologist.  
*Springs of Creative Living.*

<sup>2</sup> *Modern Man in Search of a Soul.*

<sup>3</sup> *Beyond Good and Evil*, p. 208.

<sup>4</sup> *Man against Himself*, p. 449.

<sup>5</sup> *Will Therapy*, p. 135.

# Medicine, Psychotherapy and Religion

In my opinion, medicine requires that we should discriminate at least 5 "Norms" of Health, *viz.*, Infancy, Childhood, Adolescence, Maturity and Middle and Old Age. Indeed, the development of modern medicine is taking this direction in the development of specialisation within its ranks.

I am not concerned here with the physical and mental norms of health, but I must make one fundamental and important contrast between the developmental history of the body and of the finite mind on the one hand and the spirit—which I hold to be non-finite mind—on the other. The growth-curve of the body rises by gradations from infancy until maturity; growth then remains stationary for a while and then, as bodily and mental decay begins to set in, the body-curve declines with increasing rapidity during middle life and old age. This decline is a healthy, normal state of affairs: death is no more pathological than birth, although premature death is pathological.

The growth-line of the immortal spirit is very different from this. The spirit has emerged from the depths of the normal infant soul before the age of five. Then it develops more or less synchronously with the growth of the body and the finite mind—(although the spiritual "climacterics" seem to me to precede the "climacterics" of the body by an appreciable period). But after maturity, the growth-line of the spirit normally begins to diverge from the now-descending growth-curve of the body. As the one begins to decline, the other normally continues to rise and to develop. Increasing wisdom and ripening judgment are measures of this continued spiritual growth. At last, as old age approaches, we can begin to observe how the "free spirit" starts to loosen and detach itself from its bondage to the flesh, until at last the body returns to the earth, and the spirit to God who gave it. Such I hold to be the normal relationship of the healthy spirit to the healthy, although declining, bodily and mental powers.

How can clinical medicine be practised as it should be practised unless we possess a clear insight into these "Norms" of spiritual



hygiene? I used to be puzzled because there were so many different and apparently irreconcilable "systems" of psychology. It seems to me now that the rival schools are not so much rivals as persons talking about different things, or perhaps, different stages of the growth of the same things. My experience has suggested to me that if a mother wants to understand the mind of her infant and to help its healthy development, the concept of the "conditioned reflex" and the "psychology" of behaviour, will help her; at or before the age of five, her child will begin to respond to the Individual Psychology of Adler; during youth and adolescence (and during the long period of "arrested adolescence" so often seen among modern people) the Freudian approach proves helpful. In the mature mind, Jung's system enters into its own. It speaks of the actual problems of the post-mature man and woman: it speaks their language, describes their feelings and experiences. Finally, I believe that the religious psychology of Kierkegaard holds the key that unlocks closed doors, especially for the middle-aged and the old. Perhaps Kierkegaard's psychology is the psychology for doctors, psychologists and clergymen. It seems to me therefore that what is now needed is a comprehensive system of normal psychology that will embrace the positive values of all these systems and will relate them correctly to the "five ages of man." If possible, such a system should be related also to the phylogenetic and anatomical facts that are known about the development of the brain and nervous system. Such a comprehensive system would be a valuable contribution to clinical hygiene.\*

Howard C. Collier, M.D., contemporary English physician.  
*The Place of Worship in Modern Medicine.*<sup>6</sup>

### Psychoanalysis as a Technique

Feeling and knowing constitute the elemental qualities of consciousness and when these two are well harmonized in a mind, the will, or dynamic expressive aspect of the personality, is effective and one-directional. Such a personality is happy. But through inept human response to conflict, feeling and intellect tend to become dis-

<sup>6</sup> Lecture 28—The Guild of Pastoral Psychology—1944, London.

sociated or separated in individual minds. The will is then split against itself and loses rapport with outer reality, which is represented in consciousness by the intellectual element. One of the first and most vital concerns of man is the maintenance of integration between feeling and intellect. It is a need fully as imperative to human happiness as the need for food, and to meet this need is the true psychological function of religion, as I believe the term should be used. The theological structures built up in the process are incidental. There is a secondary function of religion, which is the prevention of cruelty in the world. In the long run religion and the applicational aspects of psychology seem to constitute a common human effort, which is probably an expression of the elemental orientational motive in human consciousness.

It is the loss of the sense of feeling for things somewhere along the way, that has come to constitute the vital tragedy of modern life. Such a loss takes the whole principle of cohesiveness—the sense of unity—out of a mind, and leaves only diffusive, little fragmentary constellations of value. The mind that cannot *feel* what it *knows* becomes like a body with no skeleton. When there is no order or principle to the arrangement of the mental bones, the concept of character fades and vanishes. The integrity of such a personality can be maintained only by going all the way back to the most elemental instinctive values and rebuilding on them. In order to reestablish rapport with feeling, the individual must revert to the instinctive foundations of his consciousness and start over again, possibly under guidance of a psychoanalyst. Psychoanalysis is then indeed nothing more mysterious than a highly specialized technique for dealing radically with desperate religious problems.\*

William Sheldon, M.D., 1899-. American psychologist, educator.  
*Psychology and the Promethean Will.*

### Psychotherapy as a Catharsis

To cherish secrets and to restrain emotions are psychic misdemeanours for which nature finally visits us with sickness—that is, when we do these things in private. But when they are done in communion with others they satisfy nature and may even count as

useful virtues. It is only restraint practised in and for oneself that is unwholesome. It is as if man had an inalienable right to behold all that is dark, imperfect, stupid and guilty in his fellow beings—for such of course are the things that we keep private to protect ourselves. It seems to be a sin in the eyes of nature to hide our insufficiencies—just as much as to live entirely on our inferior side. There appears to be a conscience in mankind which severely punishes the man who does not somehow defend and assert himself and instead confess himself fallible and human. Until he can do this, an impenetrable wall shuts him out from the living experience of feeling himself a man among men. Here we find a key to the great significance of true, unstereotyped confession—a significance known in all the initiation and mystery cults of the ancient world as is shown by a saying from the Greek mysteries: “Give up what thou hast, and then thou wilt receive.”

We may well take this saying as a motto for the first stage in psychotherapeutic treatment. It is a fact that the beginnings of psychoanalysis were fundamentally nothing else than the scientific rediscovery of an ancient truth; even the name catharsis (or cleansing), which was given to the earliest method of treatment, comes from the Greek initiation rites. The early method of catharsis consisted in putting the initiate, with or without hypnotic aid, in touch with the hinterland of his mind—that is to say, into that state which the Eastern yoga systems describe as meditation or contemplation. In contrast to the meditation found in yoga practice, the psychoanalytic aim is to observe the shadowy presentations—whether in the form of images or of feelings—that are spontaneously evolved in the unconscious psyche and appear without his bidding to the man who looks within. In this way we find once more things that we have repressed or forgotten. Painful though it may be, this is in itself a gain—for what is inferior or even worthless belongs to me as my shadow and gives me substance and mass. How can I be substantial if I fail to cast a shadow? I must have a dark side also if I am to be whole; and inasmuch as I become conscious of my shadow I also remember that I am a human being like any other. In any case, when I keep it to myself, this rediscovery of that which makes me whole restores the

condition which preceded the neurosis or the splitting off of the complex. In keeping the matter private I have only attained a partial cure—for I still continue in my state of isolation. It is only with the help of confession that I am able to throw myself into the arms of humanity freed at last from the burden of moral exile. The goal of treatment by catharsis is full confession—no merely intellectual acknowledgment of the facts, but their confirmation by the heart and the actual release of the suppressed emotion.

Carl G. Jung, M.D., 1875-. Swiss psychologist, founder of System of Analytic Psychology.  
*Modern Man in Search of A Soul.*

### The Role of "Helper"

Seek a helper. It may seem paradoxical to think of self-education as involving the need of outside help. Yet the fact is, as we have noted, that a helper is sometimes necessary and the most practical thing to do is to seek one. After all, it must be obvious, that even with the aid of the helper much depends upon one's own efforts at self-education.

Some few persons have such a vivid sense of the reality of God that they may find in communion with Him the helper *par excellence*. For most of us, however, the helper must be the human being whose voice we can hear with our ears and whose presence we can sense by touch and sight. This person should be one who is not connected with our pressure. No one can be thought of by an ego-centric person as the source of any serious distress involved in pressure and at the same time be accepted as the helper. Much the same situation is involved here as in the case of criticism. One factor in the suffering under pressure is the feeling, conscious or unconscious, that one has been attacked. This feeling is due to the fact the Ego seems to be the Self, and, therefore, pressure exerted on the Ego seems to be a threat to our very existence, and an unkind, inconsiderate, inimical act insofar as we feel that anyone is responsible for it. There is, therefore, a resistance to the pressure and a consequent negative reaction to the person. He is felt to be the Black Giant who certainly cannot be trusted as a helper.

This psychology of resistance in all serious cases makes it neces-

sary to seek help from one who is not connected with the pressure. In minor, more or less incidental matters, it may be that one who points out our weakness or gives us some slight degree of hurt may be accepted as the helper, but even in such a case, there are dangerous possibilities.

They are especially significant within the family or between friends. For the natural and inevitable resistance to changing our Ego in any way may develop into antipathy to anyone who indicates that we ought to do so. This, the helper must do. Thus deep resentments and even hatred may spring up between husband and wife or friend and friend if one tries to be the helper for the other. Even though this attitude may be only temporary, as it should be and is, if the crisis turns out well, it is better that no such negative feelings be stirred up among members of the family or friends. As a practical matter it is, therefore, desirable to seek the helper among those not too closely bound to one by family or friendship ties, though in some cases the helper may be found among close relatives and friends.

The helper need not be a psychologist though often such a person is better qualified than others are. Any person of well-developed We-feeling often can serve one most helpfully even though not formally schooled in psychological principles. In our language we would speak of them as comparatively objective persons. Seek such a person.

Sometimes the helper may be a good book which interprets a person to himself somewhat as the helper must, and points out life values clearly and convincingly. This is one reason for the pre-eminence of the Bible. Its power to speak truth to the human heart, to interpret one to himself, to present life's highest values challengingly is enough in itself to make it The Great Book. Try finding in its pages something of the counsel the helper must give.

Then turn to the pages of biography for the story of well-lived lives, for illustrations of mistakes overcome and lives transformed by objective purposes. This need not be the biography of some famous person, helpful as it may sometimes be. Sometimes it is even more helpful to find in the lives of plain people, like ourselves unknown to fame, illustrations of the possibilities of creative living—

of growth into finer and fuller personalities. Even a sound book of fiction may have much the same value in interpreting to us life's values and our own reactions.

Finally, turn for help to the creative philosophers and psychologists who have left the record of their insight into truth and human nature and its needs on the pages of old books or even current magazines. Here, too, one may find the truth he needs—the deeper insight into himself and life's values which are so necessary to him.

After saying all this, it is necessary to add a word of caution. Much that is written in the name of psychology and philosophy is so inaccurate in its facts or unsound in its presentation that it is merely trash. It is, therefore, important to read only material that has stood the test of criticism<sup>7</sup> by those who are qualified to evaluate it.\*

Fritz Kunkel, M.D., German psychotherapist, and Roy E. Dickerson, American author.  
*How Character Develops.*

## The Role of Dream Analysis

"For the good that I would, I do not; but the evil which I would not, that I do." (St. Paul.) This is one of the earliest expressions of that doublemindedness which harasses the path of all who consciously attempt to follow the religious Way. Man is not only motivated by those factors of which he is aware, but is more often propelled into action by irrational, and yet potent impulses and motives operating outside the field of consciousness. It seemed to Sigmund Freud, the father of psychotherapy, that there were virtually autonomous systems working against the rest of the psyche, and causing various kinds of personality splits. An important question then is how can this contradictory doubleness of behavior be eliminated? We can look to psychotherapy as an aid in apprehending these unconscious factors, in understanding their content, in setting free the energy contained in them, and in integrating them into the total personality.

The use of dreams came to be for Freud what he called the "via regia" to the unconscious. For him, of course, dream analysis was based upon the theoretical assumptions he made about the

<sup>7</sup> See Reading List in back of book.

psychic structure, and involved primarily his notions of sexuality. In the development of their own points of view some of Freud's followers departed radically from him. The outstanding of these are C. G. Jung, Fritz Kunkel, Alfred Adler, and Otto Rank. They followed Freud in use of dreams as revelation of material not accessible to consciousness in any other way. But in the symbolism of the dream, the way of interpretation, and the use of the dream in relation to the rest of the personality, they differ widely from him. The discussion which follows is oriented unreservedly toward the point of view of Jung and Kunkel.

One of the major implications of the religious Way is the achievement of self-knowledge, the ability to discriminate between the apparent-self and the real self—thus to recognize those elements within the personality structure that block the needed movement from the periphery of consciousness to the Center, which is of God. The special value of the understanding and analysis of dreams is in the revelation obtained thereby of those things that hold one back from true self-knowledge,—*i.e.*, the complexes, inhibitions, fears which imprison part of the libido (life energy), splitting the personality. These elements lie in the unconscious, apparently non-existent, but actually dynamic and often destructive, and often going counter to that which is consciously desired. They are made available to the conscious mind through dreams.

The dream images in the unconscious are diverse, arising as they do from different sources and different levels. Generally the distinction is made by Jung between the material from the personal unconscious, and the material from the collective unconscious. Elements in the personal unconscious are the result of personal experience, the roots of which lie in long-forgotten childhood experiences, or of experiences repressed, either because they are contrary to the accepted development of a person or because they are unpleasant or even unthinkable. Those elements coming from deeper levels constitute the collective unconscious, that domain of inherent inner images arising out of the psyche, as part of its very essence, and not dependent on the outer or personal experiences at all. These images form the basis of mythology, and are the common sub-stratum

of experience for all men. Just as the elements of the personal unconscious prove to be obstacles to the total freeing and integrating of the self, so these deeper images may be influential on behavior. They give rise to moods, fantasies, uncontrollable emotions, irrational desires (as seen from the rational standpoint). Once the nature of the unconscious is understood, much that was formerly unclear and unknown becomes clear.

In order to utilize this technique of dream analysis it is advisable to work with a specialist in the field. A skilled and trustworthy analyst or psychotherapist trained in the Jungian, Kunkelian or Rank points of view would be cognizant of the limitations as well as the contribution which the psychotherapeutic procedure can make to progression on the religious Way. With the help of an analyst progress in clarification is relatively certain. Also it is sometimes true that after some guidance enough understanding can be obtained to permit one to proceed alone for a time. It is doubtful, however, whether any trustworthy insight into the interpretation of dreams can be obtained unless one begins with an expert. Indeed the majority of therapists would say that a person can do nothing of value alone in this area and that to try may definitely work harm. They contend that an unskilled person, working alone, cannot understand the symbols in dreams, many of which are hidden and disguised because of their deeper meanings. In dream analysis, as well as in all other phases of psychotherapeutic procedure, resistance to the dream content may occur because what is revealed is often the dark, repressed side which one would rather not acknowledge as part of himself. Any inner resistance makes for personal bias and would hinder a true interpretation of dreams, if attempted without skilled help. A wrong interpretation is likely to produce a helpless feeling with a consequent paralyzing effect. However, it must be noted that there are instances on record, both ancient and contemporary, where persons have by themselves gained significant insights through dreams relating to particular problems and their solution. Much exploring remains to be done before any final opinion can be formed on this point.

In summary, then, dream analysis in the hands of a specialist can



be of vital importance in its revelation of those unknown factors, which if left hidden may hinder, but if revealed and understood will contribute to progression on the religious Way. In one sense, dreams may be said to be the negative side of the process, the exposing of the barriers. Yet they also have their positive phase, for they possess creative, dynamic power, which is loosened and freed when the dream is truly understood and its power assimilated. Thus dreams are the symbols of these forces, which are negative if not understood and brought to consciousness, and positive if they are.

Many persons who have worked through analysis in search of the real self can testify that what occurs is similar to the religious experience of conversion. For what is finally touched, if the process goes deeply enough, is the Self, which is God within. When this happens, the basic roots of the person are established within himself as a part of that larger universal framework of which he is a part. He is truly himself, because he is a part of the larger whole. Let it be said that understanding a few dreams does not lead to this, nor does any given period of analysis do so, in and by itself. It is achieved only by those who continue to work throughout their lives, and often through great suffering, to liberate the libido within, and to understand with the heart the deeper unknown parts of Self.

E.B.H., S.M.

Written for this anthology.

### The Symbol in Dream-Analysis

In Jungian dream-analysis the *symbol* plays a central role. The psychic images, in the dream as in all their other manifestations, are at once reflection and essence of the dynamics of the psyche. Just as, in the case of a waterfall, the waterfall is at once reflection and essence of force itself. They are the real energy-transformers in psychic events. They have at the same time expressive and impressive character, expressing on the one hand internal psychic happenings pictorially, and on the other hand influencing—after having been transformed into images—through their meaningful content these same happenings, thus furthering the flow of the psychological processes. For example, the symbol of the withered Tree of Life,

which was meant to convey the idea of an over-intellectualized existence that had lost its natural instinctive basis, would on the one hand express this meaning pictorially before the very eyes of the dreamer, and on the other hand, by thus presenting itself to him, impress him and thereby influence his psychic dynamism in a certain direction. One can continually observe in the course of an analysis how the various pictorial motives determine and lead into one another. In the beginning they still appear in the guise of personal experiences; they bear the characteristics of childhood or other remembrances. As the analysis penetrates to deeper levels, however, they exhibit the outlines of the archetypes ever more clearly, the field becomes dominated ever more definitely by the symbol alone. Symbols can stand for the most varied contents. Natural events can be portrayed symbolically just as well as internal psychological processes. The symbol of "rebirth" stands always, for example, for the fundamental concept of spiritual transformation, whether it occurs as a primitive initiation rite, as a baptism in the early Christian sense, or in the corresponding dream-picture of a present-day individual. Only the way in which this rebirth is attained differs according to the historical and individual situation in consciousness. Just for this reason it is necessary to evaluate and interpret every symbol on the one hand, collectively, on the other, individually, if one will do justice to its actual meaning in any given case. The personal content and the psychological situation of the individual must always remain decisive.

The content of a symbol can never be fully expressed rationally. It comes out of that "between-world of subtle reality which can be adequately expressed through the symbol alone."<sup>8</sup> An allegory is a sign for something, a synonymous expression for a known content; the symbol, however, always implies in addition something inexpressible by rational means. When "Plato, for example, sums up the whole epistemological problem in the parable of the cave, or when Christ presents his concept of the Kingdom of God in parables, these are true and genuine symbols—namely, attempts to express something for which as yet no verbal concept exists." The German

<sup>8</sup> *Contributions to Analytical Psychology*, C. G. Jung, pp. 231-232.

word for symbol is *Sinnbild*, which compound excellently conveys the implication that its content is derived from and belongs to both spheres: as *Sinn* (meaning, sense) it is attributed to consciousness, as *Bild* (picture, image) to the unconscious, to the irrational realm. In this capacity, too, the symbol is best able to give an account of the processes of the totality of the psyche and to influence as well as to express the most complicated and contradictory psychological conditions.\*

Jolan Jacobi, contemporary German writer.  
*The Psychology of Jung*. Trans. K. W. Bash.

### The Dream, Its Compensatory Function

The particular truth which personal dreams bring out is directly applicable to the dreamer himself. An apparently grotesque and trivial dream may have a deep importance in showing what the dreamer's immediate difficulty actually is.

For the dream has a compensatory and balancing quality. If the whole conscious attention is concentrated upon one aspect of a problem, the excluded and conflicting aspect becomes active in the unconscious, and the dream, portraying what is going on in the unconscious, reveals the other side which we need to remember in order to evaluate ourselves properly and to see the complete picture. It says, "This, too, is true." It is as though when the conscious is concentrated upon one aspect the unconscious said, "But this is the way things appear down here—you forget about this."

The dream, therefore, gives us a true picture, but often its truth is only comparative, the truth about one aspect which needs to be brought to our attention. Even when the dream startles us by its vivid, pertinent comment we cannot rely on this as the voice of infallible wisdom. We must connect it with our conscious attitude and our outer situation at the time. For we are full of contradictory elements; we can love and hate, fear and trust, desire and reject, and we must remember that both sides are present when we are in a tight place. Only by a comparison of the "affect" of the dream—that is, the degree of emotion aroused by it—with our own conscious attitude can we see that other aspect, and then choose for ourselves the side we

will accept, always remembering the other side with which we must reckon. So the dream is continually reminding us of the part which our conscious is forgetting. It does not speak with any absolute authority; it simply gives a true picture of *a* situation which exists in the unconscious. It speaks truth; but not, as some persons believe, *the* truth. It shows the other side.

The unconscious may with infinite patience repeat a lesson over and over, trying with new images, new pictures, to show the truth. To express a relationship between unconscious images and conscious life is not the same as asserting that the unconscious is purposeful and itself acts with consciousness. The unconscious simply paints the picture, this picture, that picture, as the sea may cast up treasures on any shore; what use we make of these things is entirely our own affair.

In each case the event, whether dream or outer happening, must be accepted as an experience. It is as true with dreams as with life events that the importance of the happening itself is secondary to the importance of what we do with it. The dream does indicate that something has happened in the unconscious, that an event has actually taken place. If we will accept this inner event, experience it, make it part of our consciously lived life, then it becomes a potent factor, it produces change; we go from there to a new grasp, a deeper reality.\*

Frances G. Wickes, 1882—. American psychotherapist.  
*The Inner World of Man.*

### The Activity of the "Shadow"<sup>9</sup> as Revealed by Dreams

Sometimes when one feels that the obstacles of life, even when faced with courage, are insurmountable, one may discover that part of the difficulty is caused by the unsuspected activity of the Shadow.

A result of ignoring the personal Shadow is graphically illustrated by a man's dream. At the time, he was involved in a situation which called for more conscious responsibility and frankness than he was willing to give. A relationship in which he had looked for unalloyed happiness developed unexpected difficulties. He had intuitions

<sup>9</sup> The repressed side of the personality, the inferior side, the "undifferentiated function" which one must learn to recognize and with which one must come to deal. (Editors)

of the unpleasant elements at work. The more he tried to ignore these, the more his energies seemed to go from him. Doubt and distrust crept in, and he put the blame for this upon others. He feared to face the situation frankly, desiring to hold his infantile phantasy of perfection.

Then he tried to dismiss his intuitions as disloyal. He tried to reason things out consciously and to argue to himself that it was all unimportant, but he only became confused as to what faults were real and what were projections. He thrust the problem down out of consciousness. But though his attempt was to repress only the negative side, he lost all spontaneity of feeling. Then the dynamic energy of the unconscious seemed to go from him—not only had his feeling gone out, but the creative quality which had been present in his work was no longer at his disposal. At this point, the unconscious came to his aid by painting a dream picture:

“I am on a ship which has become stranded in a strange waste land. I know that we have submerged this country in order to drown out the inhabitants, whom we feared. But now we are attacked by a greater enemy; we are prisoners. Then I realize that if we had not drowned out the inhabitants we might have got help from them, whereas now we are delivered over, helpless, to some unseen but omnipotent tyrant from whom there is no escape.”

His own interpretation was, “I have been trying to pretend that all sorts of things which I knew intuitively were wrong in this business either were better not talked about or else were the fault of others involved and that, therefore, I could do nothing about them and had best ignore them. But this has left me high and dry, delivered over to the enemy who, in some strange way, has drained me of my energy both in feeling and in power to work. I feel absolutely unable to get back any enthusiasm for life.”

Here the Shadow elements which he tried to drown were the negative distrustful elements in himself which were roused when he was faced with the responsibilities involved in the working out of a difficult reality. In becoming conscious of these, in letting the waters of the unconscious cover them, he projected the whole thing upon

other people involved and felt it all was due to the influence of *their* shadows. He feared to test out the truth of his doubts lest he should discover the situation to have no value for himself and he would lose even the illusion of happiness. He would not frankly face the disaster which might result from acknowledging the truth. First he projected all the difficulties upon others, and then he tried to repress these projections as being disloyal. He refused to become aware of the inner voices which were contradicting his conscious decision. So the whole problem was pushed back into the unconscious, where it acted like an ever-increasing magnetic force continually drawing down his energy.

In the end, it made the unconscious assume the proportions of a great inundation which drowned all his spontaneous energy and finally left him helpless, delivered over to one of those greater shadows of the collective unconscious which in the dream appeared as the inescapable tyrant. For, whenever he had pushed down any of his fears, he had really been feeding the Shadow until it had grown to proportions too great for his personal ego-consciousness to meet. It had taken from him the dynamic and creative elements of the unconscious which before fed his creative life.

For if one ignores the personal Shadow, one may be delivered over to the greater enemy. In such a typical human situation as this, for example, a failure to meet the problem may leave one at the mercy of the archetype—here the unseen invincible tyrant. If the archetype succeeds in swallowing the ego, the individual values are disintegrated and one becomes possessed by the unconscious and bereft of energy.

This man was acting in accordance with a generally accepted social standard that the negative and disturbing aspects of a situation should be passed over in a well-bred silence; that unpleasant things are best left out of a discussion; that resentments and anger should be hidden; in fact, that all the realities of the situation should be concealed if they interfere with harmonious adjustment. But realities dwindle when one fears anything which might disturb surface calm, whether these realities are in the outer situation or the inner. Then the difficulties may be projected. The devil is at work in the other

fellow. The shadows of others fall across the path and they must be avoided. The outer life narrows, the inner life becomes more shallow. But down below, the Shadow has a good supper.\*

Frances G. Wickes, 1882-. American psychotherapist.  
*The Inner World of Man.*

### The Phantasy and the Transformation of Personality

The scientific credo of our time has developed a superstitious phobia about phantasy. But that is real which works. The phantasies of the unconscious work—this cannot be gainsaid. Our famous scientific reality does not protect us in the least from the so-called unreality of the unconscious. Something works behind the veil of fantastic images, whether we give to this something either a good name or a bad. It is something real, and for this reason its vital manifestations must be taken seriously. But first the tendency to concretization must be overcome. In practice, this means that the phantasies should not be taken literally as soon as one approaches the question of interpretation. But while we are involved in the actual experience, the phantasies cannot be taken literally enough. Only when we come to the task of understanding them; then we must never mistake the semblance (*i.e.*, the phantasy-image) for the effective process underlying it. The semblance is not the thing itself, but only an expression of it.

The two opposing "realities," the world of the conscious and the world of the unconscious, do not quarrel for preeminence, but together constitute a reciprocal relativity. That the reality of the unconscious is highly relative will surely excite no vigorous denial, but that the reality of the conscious world could be called into question will be less easily tolerated. And yet both "realities" are psychic experience, psychic semblances emerging from unknowable, mysterious backgrounds. To a critical reflection nothing is left of an absolute reality.

Of essence and absolute being we know nothing. Our experience consists of various effects, from "without" by way of the senses, and from "within" in the form of phantasies.

A sustained conscious attitude that not only makes conscious, but also participates actively in the various events of these phantasy con-

structions (which would otherwise remain quite unconscious) has very definite consequences, and I myself have witnessed these cases not once or twice, but innumerable times. The first effect is that the range of consciousness is increased by the inclusion of a great number and variety of unconscious contents. This is followed by a gradual diminution of the dominating influence of the unconscious. The third and most important effect is a very considerable change in personality.

This change in personality is naturally not an alteration of the original hereditary disposition, but rather a transformation of the general attitude. Those sharp cleavages and antagonisms between the conscious and the unconscious, which are so abundantly evident in the endless conflicts of neurotic natures, depend almost invariably on a pronounced bias of the conscious attitude, by which absolute precedence is given to one or two functions;<sup>10</sup> while other functions are kept unduly repressed in the background. Through the actual experience of the phantasies and the assimilation of them by consciousness, the unconscious and relatively inferior functions become organized in the conscious hierarchy. Naturally, this is a process which cannot take place without a far-reaching effect on the conscious attitude.

I will for the moment refrain from a discussion of the nature of this change in personality, since at present I only want to emphasize the fact that an essential change does take place. I have called it the transcendent function, and it obtains by virtue of a fundamental coming to terms with the unconscious. There is a remarkable capacity for transformation existing in the human soul, expressed in the transcendent function.\*-\*\*

Carl G. Jung, M.D., 1875-. Swiss psychotherapist.  
*Two Essays on Analytical Psychology*. Trans. H. G. and C. F. Baynes.

## Dangers of Psychotherapy

A peculiar and, for the religious situation, important significance is attached in the present to the art of healing. It must be recalled that with the elimination of the priestly confessional and the loss of its real values the physician stepped upon the scene as a substitute.

<sup>10</sup> Feeling, thinking, intuition and sensation.



Yet he was a substitute who could not supply what should have been supplied, a healing process proceeding out of man's central function, that is, out of his religious relations. First of all the separation of body and soul, then the mechanization of the body, then the conception of the psychic as a product of the physical machine—these logical consequences of a rationalistic, atomistic conception of nature, which had been deprived of life and of inwardness, made the healing art more and more a mechanical and technical activity. The separate organs were treated as though they were separate parts of a machine which could be isolated; furthermore, the body was treated, and only the body. Even the science of psychical healing came to be in fact a science of physical healing or of the healing of separate organs. It is evident that according to this conception the relation of physician and patient could only be an external, objective and contractual relationship, not one of real community supported by love. Such a relationship corresponds to the fundamental lack of community-love in the spirit of capitalist society. In spite of all principles, it is true, authority upon the one hand and trust upon the other always played an important role and revealed their great significance, particularly in the treatment of psychic disorders. But it was only when the psycho-analytic method became effective after 1900 that more important consequences were realized. This method restores independence to the soul. The depths of the unconscious are explored independently of bodily and organic processes. Naturally such a procedure cannot be used unless the physician can enter sympathetically into the mind of the patient and this requires again that the patient have a personal Eros-attitude toward the physician (the attitude will oscillate between love and hate, and has nothing to do with eroticism, must in fact exclude this). Thus an important analogy to the old confessional relationship has been created. In the one, as in the other, decisive significance attaches to the soul's misery, which is almost always connected with guilt-complexes, to the relief brought by the recognition, verbal expression and the realization of hidden connections and, finally, to the determination to reconstruct the soul. Yet there is a profound difference between the two methods. In the confessional all this takes place in the presence of God. The mind is

directed first of all to the eternal and only in the second place toward itself. The things confession is concerned with belong to the very heart of personality, to its freedom and responsibility. The danger of psycho-analysis is that it will deal with these same things from the point of view of natural occurrences and that it will constantly direct the attention of the patient to himself and his temporal existence. Thus the soul's center of gravity may be transferred from the center—from the point of personal responsibility in the presence of the Unconditioned—to the impersonal, unconscious, purely natural sphere. This is the source of the frequently destructive effects of psycho-analysis and the indication that in this instance also the self-sufficient finitude of the psychic has not been actually broken through. Only a priestly man can be a complete psychiatrist. For with him the relation to the patient and the inner activities of the patient have been lifted out of the realm of the subjectivity of the finite into the inclusive life of the eternal.

Paul Tillich, 1886-. American theologian, philosopher.  
*The Religious Situation.*

The psychological doctor who presumes to meddle with the dynamics of an educated human being, without having a coherent view of that universe in which the educated human being is an integral part—a universe in which human "values" are objectively grounded—is a charlatan: first, because it is impossible that a man who is not himself truly integrated can show the way to self-integration to another, and without such a world-view he cannot himself be integrated; and, secondly, because there is no possibility of integrating his patient unless he can put before him such a coherent world-view. To tinker with souls without knowing what you are doing, without knowing or caring to know whether you have the right to do what you are doing at all, is an offence. . . .

It is impossible that psychology should make itself the equivalent of religion, unless it first sets itself to understand what religion is. That is the most important, and most urgent task before modern psychology. Not that it is a task for psychology alone; it is equally incumbent upon any mind which can rise to the conception of a necessary continuity in human evolution. Anyone who wishes to under-

stand human history must understand religion; and since no one can really understand himself except he understands human history, the effort to understand religion is incumbent upon all who seek self-knowledge. But psychology is especially concerned. Half-consciously it has drifted or been pushed into the position of religion: it undertakes most of the duties, and assumes most of the responsibilities, which were for many centuries undertaken and assumed by religion. It must either rise consciously to the full height of the responsibility it has unconsciously assumed, or be definitely relegated to the realm of quackery and pseudo-science.

It would be hard for me to decide which is the greater; the contempt which I feel for most of what passes for modern psychology, or the confidence which I feel in the potentialities of modern psychology if its responsibilities are truly accepted.\*

John Middleton Murry, 1889-. English author, literary critic.  
*God.*

### SOME SELF-EDUCATION PROCEDURES

#### The Handling of Phantasy Material

The art of letting things happen, action in non-action, letting go of oneself, as taught by Meister Eckhart, became a key to me with which I was able to open the door to the "Way." The key is this: we must be able to let things happen in the psyche. For us, this becomes a real art of which few people know anything. Consciousness is forever interfering, helping, correcting, and negating, and never leaving the simple growth of the psychic processes in peace. It would be a simple enough thing to do, if only simplicity were not the most difficult of all things. It consists solely in watching objectively the development of any fragment of fantasy. Nothing could be simpler than this, and yet right here the difficulties begin. Apparently no fantasy-fragment is at hand—yes there is one, but it is too stupid! Thousands of good excuses are brought against it: one cannot concentrate on it; it is too boring; what could come out of it? It is "nothing but, etc." The conscious raises prolific objections; in fact, it often seems bent upon blotting out the spontaneous fantasy-activity despite the intention.

If one is successful in overcoming the initial difficulties, criticism is likely to start afterwards and attempt to interpret the fantasy, to classify, to aestheticize, or to depreciate it. The temptation to do this is almost irresistible. After a complete and faithful observation, free rein can be given to the impatience of the conscious; in fact it must be given, else obstructing resistances develop. But each time the fantasy-material is to be produced, the activity of the conscious must again be put aside.

In most cases the results of these efforts are not very encouraging at first. It is chiefly a matter of typical fantasy-material which admits of no clear statement as to whence it comes or whither it is going. Moreover, the way of getting at the fantasies is individually different. For many people, it is easiest to write them; others visualize them, and others again draw and paint them with or without visualization. In cases of a high degree of inflexibility in the conscious, oftentimes the hands alone can fantasy; they model or draw figures that are quite foreign to the conscious.

These exercises must be continued until the cramp in the conscious is released, or, in other words, until one can let things happen; which was the immediate goal of the exercise. In this way, a new attitude is created, an attitude which accepts the irrational and the unbelievable, simply because it is what is happening. This attitude would be poison for a person who has already been overwhelmed by things that just happen, but it is of the highest value for one who, with an exclusively conscious critique, chooses from the things that happen only those appropriate to his consciousness, and thus gets gradually drawn away from the stream of life into a stagnant backwater.

At this point, the way travelled by the two above-mentioned types seems to separate. Both have learned to accept what comes to them. One man will chiefly take what comes to him from without, and the other what comes from within, and, as determined by the law of life, the one will have to take from without something he never could accept from without, and the other will accept from within, things that always would have been excluded before.

This reversal of one's being means an enlargement, heightening, and enrichment of the personality when the previous values are ad-

hered to along with the change, provided, of course, they are not mere illusions. If the values are not retained, the man goes over to the other side, and passes from fitness to unfitness, from adaptedness to the lack of it, from sense to nonsense, and from reason even to mental disease. Everything good is costly, and the development of the personality is one of the most costly of all things. It is a question of ye-saying to oneself, of taking the self as the most serious of tasks, keeping conscious of everything done, and keeping it constantly before one's eyes in all its dubious aspects—truly a task that touches us to the core.

The Chinese can fall back upon the authority of his entire culture. If he starts on the long way, he does what is recognized as being the best of all the things he could do. But the Westerner who seriously wishes to start upon this way has all authority against him in intellectual, moral, and religious fields. The step to higher consciousness leads away from all shelter and safety. The person must give himself to the new way completely, for it is only by means of his integrity that he can go farther, and only his integrity can guarantee that his way does not turn out to be an absurd adventure.\*-\*\*

Carl G. Jung, M.D., 1875-. Swiss psychologist, founder of the System of Analytic Psychology.  
*The Secret of the Golden Flower.* Trans. C. F. Baynes.

Active Phantasying consists in letting the mind loose, allowing whatever will to come into consciousness. The difference between this and idle day-dreaming is a question of valuation or attitude. The very fact that meaning is attached to the imagery, and that it is recorded and valued, seems to constellate the autonomous activity in a peculiar way. Instead of wayward ephemeral fancies that blow down the wind like thistledown, the images that arise under the influence of value and attention are pregnant and relevant in a high degree. It is not unlike the experience of men who, for years perhaps, have had only the lightest and most trifling relations with women; suddenly, for no discoverable reason, a woman steps out of the condition of ephemeral irrelevance and becomes commandingly relevant. Such a man, we say, has been seized by the love-problem. In much the same way one can be seized by the psyche, the spontaneous, un-

willed activity of the mind suddenly assuming a peculiar significance. What makes the woman or the fantasy suddenly relevant? In neither case is it mere accident; indeed, in the psyche sphere there can be no such thing as accident; when reason is in control, we are able to weigh all the factors for or against a certain decision; but in the irrational realm, the event goes of itself without conscious direction, and often with astonishing certainty of aim. But whose aim? Unless we wish to introduce some extra-psychic cause in deference to time-honored tradition, we have to accept the concept of the self as embracing both irrational and rational, unconscious and conscious elements. Only with this conception is it possible to comprehend a subjective aim more far-sighted and more commanding than the deliberate-aiming consciousness. Without this central conception it is, I believe, fundamentally impossible to reach the heart of a dream, or to give vital value to such irrational products as we shall presently discuss.

Active fantasy-production may follow many different routes, according to individual preference. With some subjects the fantasy springs directly out of a dream, and there is an immediate inclination to paint or in some way <sup>11</sup> elaborate the dream-image. Modelling clay or plasticine, painting or drawing, carrying on the dream-scene in waking fantasy, conversing with personification of the unconscious or independent entities, written accounts, poems, dialogues, even dancing and posturing—in fact, any method at all which gives concreteness, independence, plastic vitality to the psychic contents I include under this term as a rule. Those products have little or no aesthetic value; in short, the ideal condition for active fantasizing is that of the child, only it must be combined with the purposiveness of maturity.\*

H. Godwin Baynes, M.D. The late English Jungian analyst.  
*Mythology of the Soul.*

## Painting of Dream Symbols

A true symbol can never be fully explained. We can make its rational component comprehensible to consciousness; its irrational

<sup>11</sup> See *The New Art Education* by Ralph M. Pearson.

component we can grasp only with our feelings. Therefore Jung urges his patients so emphatically not only to set down their "inward pictures" (dreams) in speech or writing but also to reproduce them in the form of their original appearance, in which not only the content of the picture but also its colours and their distribution all have a particular individual significance. Only thus can one quite do justice to their meaning for the patient and utilize their form as well as their content as a highly important factor in the psychological process of realization.

With such pictures it is "naturally not a matter of art, but of something more than and different from mere art, namely of a vital effect upon the patient himself,"<sup>12</sup> or whoever produced the pictures. Therefore, too, it does not matter at all whether such a picture is good or bad in the sense of an artistic evaluation. For it can even occur that a painter or sketcher draws such pictures with a primitive, unskilled, and childlike hand, artistically far poorer than one who has never used pencil and brush but whose inward pictures are so lively and intense that he can reproduce them perfectly. Such drawings and paintings "are dynamic fantasies; they work within the man who makes them. . . . Moreover the material objectification of such a picture enforces a prolonged contemplation of it in all its parts, so that it can thereby unfold its full effect. And what works in the patient is he himself, but no longer in the sense of the previous misunderstanding, in which he took his personal ego for his Self, but in a new sense, strange to him up to now, in which his ego appears as object of that which works within him. Mere painting is not enough. It requires above and beyond that an intellectual and emotional comprehension of the pictures, by means of which they become integrated not only rationally but also morally with consciousness. Then they must still be subjected to a synthetic interpretation. We find ourselves, however, in absolutely new territory, in which broad experience is needed above all, because we have to do here with a vital process of the psyche outside of consciousness, which we can observe only indirectly. And we have as yet no notion to

<sup>12</sup> Carl G. Jung.

what depths our insight reaches here.”<sup>13</sup> Whoever has once himself experienced in distress of soul the liberating effect of a mood thus brought to expression or an inward picture thus captured and held fast, which it seemed impossible to clothe in words, knows what boundless relief it affords. Persons who had never used brush or pencil have thus suddenly become in the course of an analysis accomplished portrayers of the verbally indescribable contents of their psyche and have so been permitted to partake in a certain sense of the same ecstatic experience as the artist who brings forth forms, and fixes an image out of the depths of his soul. Although such symbols and archetypes are most often apprehended in the form of images, it is sometimes given a poet, drawing from the same source, to attain in words to a certain approximation to the unutterable, as it was Coleridge when he dreamt “Kubla Khan.” Precisely this fact demonstrates the transcendental character of the symbol and shows that it is a core of meaning bound to no sense modality, much less a mere hallucination. Its fixation means concretization; gives forms to what is inexpressible and vague; and enables us to recognize this in its true nature, to reach an understanding of it, and, bringing it into consciousness, to integrate it.\*

Jolan Jacobi, contemporary German writer.  
*The Psychology of Jung*, Trans. K. W. Bash.

### Confessional Meditation<sup>14</sup>

If you repress what you harbor, you will be stifled by your own unlived life. If you express the repressed tendencies, you may destroy and kill. You must find another way to “make terms with your opponent, so long as you and he are on the way to court” (Matt. 5:25, Moffatt). The way out, indeed the only way out, as far as we know, is the way of confession. But the word confession must be understood, and the method must be used in the right way, according to the structure of the human mind and the special problems of our time. Otherwise, the result will be the opposite of what it should be.

<sup>13</sup> Carl G. Jung.

<sup>14</sup> The practice of Confessional Meditation should not be attempted without further direction such as is found in the final chapters of *In Search of Maturity* by Fritz Kunkel.



Originally there were two people involved, the confessing initiate and the priest, the father confessor; or, since the ministry has lost the knowledge and the power of the confessional way, the psychologist. But the latter is often as poorly equipped for this dangerous work as is the minister.

Imagine the confessional process in all its crudity and ruthlessness. It is a powerful and dangerous discharge of high voltage; and if you are not an expert in this field you had better stay away—or defend yourself by assuming the role of a judge. If you judge, you turn confession into new repression. Where there is judgment, there is no truth. And absolution is judgment, too. If some one confesses in order to be absolved he is unable to confess the “hidden sins,” namely the darkness of his unconscious mind.

The superficial deeds which he remembers can be easily told and are easily plucked, but these are only the poisonous flowers blossoming above the earth. The roots remain in the unconscious, and they will thrive again and again—new flowers, new sins to be confessed daily. And both the sinner and the absolver live in an unconscious agreement never to touch the poisonous roots, because the same explosion, the same revolution would upset the whole outer and inner lives of father confessor and parishioner alike. “Keep off!! High Voltage!!” That is one of the reasons why two thousand years of confessional practice have failed to discover the unconscious. The result of this wrong practice is that scarcely anything can be more boring and more useless psychologically than the usual routine of confession.

We have to revitalize, indeed to recreate, the meaning of the old and colorful word, if we can use it at all. And we try to do so by stressing two aspects of its meaning: one being known, but too much neglected so far, the other being quite new and, as far as we can see, included only vaguely in some old descriptions.

The first aspect is that the nearer mankind draws to real Christianity the more the Christian can and should confess to the One who was always supposed to be represented by, or present in, the Father Confessor, namely God. A trustworthy friend, a father confessor, if possible an expert in depth-psychology, should be available in case of emergency. But the main part of the task has to be solved

by the individual alone by himself in confessional meditation; and that means "in the presence of God." Try to pour out before Him whatever comes to your mind. Be not embarrassed by His presence. Do not refrain from strong words—say "swine" if you mean swine: God knows what you say and what you do not say anyhow. He knows your conscious and your unconscious mind equally. Therefore His presence will help you to discover your "secret sins" and unearth your "buried talents."

Here we reach the second point: our confession has to bring to light the unknown, the unconscious darkness, and the undeveloped creativity of our deeper layers. Confession then becomes research, investigation, discovery. We discover our individual as well as collective drives, too much and too little power, emotional drought and emotional floods, destructive and constructive urges, our animal nature and our vegetal nature. If we can spread out before Him all the hidden roots of our virtues and vices, if we are honest and courageous enough to release before Him the high voltage of our unconscious hatred and love, we may discover that all our power is in the last analysis His power, and that our darkness turns into light because He is both darkness and light.

Expression of what we find within ourselves, honest and reckless expression before the face of the Eternal, assuming responsibility for what we are, even if we are unaware of it, and asking God to help us to master the wild horses, or to revive the skeletons of horses which we dig out during the long hours of our confessions—this is the psychological method of religious self-education. It is a way of bringing to consciousness our unconscious contents, and of establishing control over our hidden powers. It is the way to mature responsibility. It is the old way of the Psalmist: "Yet who can detect his lapses? Absolve me from my faults unknown! And hold thy servant back from wilful sins, from giving way to them" (Psalm 19:12, 13, Moffatt).

Not in the presence of a minister or a psychologist, but in the presence of God, things change completely. If you hate your brother, and you pour out all your hatred, remembering at the same time, as much as you can, the presence of God—and your hatred does not

change, then you are not sufficiently aware either of the presence of God or of your hatred, and probably of neither. Be more honest, give vent to your emotions. You hate your brother: imagine his presence, before God tell him how you feel, kick him, scratch him. You are ten years old now—get up from your chair, don't pretend to be a wise old Buddha, pace the floor, yell, scream, punch the furniture, express yourself. Rant and rage until you are exhausted, or until you laugh at yourself.

You hate your brother: God is there, tell Him the truth, be as honest as those old Hebrews: "Routed, dishonoured, be they who delight in harm to me!" (Psalm 40:14, Moffatt). Pray God He should punish your brother, torture him, help you to defeat him. Try to be one with God, the old God of vengeance. He will help you, if not in killing your enemy, then otherwise. Look: during all your rage, listening to your furious prayer, God was there, His presence encompassed you like the calm, creative smile of a father who knows that his child will spend his fury and then discover the truth and find the right way. Certainly you will find the right way, but only when you have spent your force, honestly and thoroughly, in rage and fury or complaint and despair. It will take weeks or months; you may have to travel the long way through the whole Old Testament, not just through a few Psalms of hatred and vengeance. And finally you will meet the God of the inner storms: "smoke fumed from his nostrils, and scorching fire from his lips, that kindled blazing coals, as down he came on the bending sky, the storm-cloud at his feet" (Psalm 18:8, 9, Moffatt). It is a nightmare more real than anything you have ever seen in the outer world. But it is not yet real enough. The highest reality emerges out of the fire in complete calm. We may realize it for a moment beyond space and time: the center itself. And at last "What is old has gone, the new has come" (II Cor. 5:17, Moffatt). The new is "God's peace that surpasses all our dreams." (Phil. 4:7, Moffatt.)

Thus we combine the old practice of "the presence of God," well known in the tradition of meditation and prayer, with the new practice of depth-psychology, well known in modern literature. The result is "confessional meditation."

Much unconscious, unexpected material will come to light: facts, tendencies, emotions, capacities, and power. It may take time, weeks and perhaps months, but it will happen. Forgotten scenes will be recalled, people and relations will appear in a different light. More important, of course, than the accumulation of material is its new evaluation and its application to our future. Grudge will change into compassion, and hatred into love. Destructive tendencies will give way to newly discovered creative capacities. Our un-lived life, thus released from its prison, wants to be lived. We are dimly aware, during this time, of the primitiveness and immaturity of our new desires and ideas; yet the same regression which enabled us to unearth the unconscious power now makes it difficult to refrain from its immediate use. No mistake, however, would be worse than this. Confessional meditation without continence, fasting, voluntary privation, is doomed to failure. Express your hatred or love, your greed or envy, before the face of God; but do not express them to the people whom you hate or love. This is the best way to discover more or deeper hatred or love, and to draw nearer to the real center.

Our repressed drives, when they come to consciousness, are primitive, undifferentiated and powerful, like young hippopotami. Not to satisfy them is a heroic task, presupposing some training in the old and almost forgotten art of fasting. Therefore, when you set out on the road of self-education learn how to fast—not only with regard to eating too much (any good dietician can help you to learn that) but also with regard to some of your other bad habits. We not only eat and drink and smoke too much: we also talk too much, read too much, write too much; we are too busy satisfying our petty needs. If you like to smoke, stop it, and you will meet with “the beasts in the desert.” And when you have the first great dream, and, stunned by its appalling colors, would like to tell your friends or husband or wife about it—stop! Fast! Refrain from gossip! If you betray the secrets of the soul no further secret will be entrusted to you.

Conscious sacrifice is required, instead of unconscious repression, expressing all the anguish of unsatisfied vital needs before God, but not before our fellow-men. The child-like imperative “you must not . . .” is replaced by the mature insight “I will not . . .” Thus we

may learn to leave "brothers or sisters or father or mother or wife or children or lands or houses" . . . (Matt. 19:29, Moffatt). This conscious sacrifice is what is meant by fasting and plucking out our eye. It is an integral part of confessional meditation.

But the long and winding road of self-education cannot be travelled in seclusion and solitude. It has to be a part of our normal activity. We have to live in the world, and its demands, satisfactions and disappointments are an integral contribution to our psychological research. We should refrain—at least during periods of crisis—from important decisions and from strong emotional reactions towards the outer world. But we should study this world and study our reactions towards it, and even sometimes try, in the sense of an experiment, to do something against our habit-patterns or beyond our usual self-control.

Without the verification in outer life all our inner progress remains questionable. And without the inner experience of new understanding, power and creativity, all our outer improvements would remain a shallow masquerade. The pendulum of religious self-education has to swing back and forth between introvert and extravert experiences, confessional meditation and positive training: this is the best way to avoid the one-sidedness and self-deceptions which always threaten our spiritual development.\*

Fritz Kunkel, M.D., 1889-. German psychotherapist, author.  
*In Search of Maturity.*

### Positive Training

Do something new. The way out of your shell involves enlarging your experience in the direction of greater usefulness and larger productivity. Your Ego includes your ideas about what you cannot do as well as your feelings about your value or worth. These set up limits beyond which you hesitate to venture. Nevertheless the Self seeks expressions of its creative capacities. So again and again you may feel "I don't think I could do that but I could try." We may speak of this as the temptation to productivity, representing the inner urge to growth, the prompting of the Self toward increasing productivity.

It is important to understand the inner meaning of the feeling,

"I cannot," which one often has. Of course, there are absolute limits to what one can do. Obviously the lack of wings and the possession of only two hands instead of four impose certain limitations concerning which we must say "I cannot." Apart from incapacities of this type the meaning of the feeling "I cannot" is usually "I must not because I am afraid of what might happen if I did."

Growth in character and the consequent deeper satisfactions are dependent again and again upon discovering this masked fear and facing it. Quite the opposite reaction also needs to be understood in this connection. It is the feeling, "I must." It is the sometimes terrifying feeling that one experiences when he feels impelled to do something that seems virtually impossible yet somehow necessary to one's very existence. . . . Here, too, back of the "I must" is the -100, the fearful thing which one is seeking to escape, this time not by refusing to try the new task but by assuming what may be an impossible one.

Look back of your feeling "I must" for the possible *minus 100* in your life. Do so especially when you feel unhappily urged on. But the "I must" may be, and is at times, the wholesome urge to greater creativity. . . . In such cases there is a deep joy in the impulsion to go on. This is objective living which is by no means free from hardship but always essentially satisfying and even joyous. The egocentric "I must" is darkly dyed with fear and unhappiness.

In all sound efforts to do something new, it is important to remember the principle of the small steps. When you look ahead to the new experience that you need to widen your world and take you beyond your former limits, do not think of some quick and easy journey to new realms, for that is the egocentric wish for quick triumph. It tends to defeat your own ends, especially in those situations in which your reaction is "I cannot." If, feeling thus, you try to reach your goal by one giant step, you will, of course, fail, and then you will say to yourself and others, "I was right. I thought I could not and now I know it. I tried and I failed as I thought I would." \*



## CHAPTER SEVEN

### *Fellowship*

The first, easiest and most obvious assistance toward an individual's private efforts is the simple association with others making the same attempt.

ANONYMOUS

The corporate life of worship checks religious egotism, breaks down devotional barriers and in general confers all the supporting and disciplinary benefits of family life.

EVELYN UNDERHILL

All these intellectual attitudes (against religion) would have short shrift if Christianity had remained what it was—a communion; if Christianity had remained what it was—a religion of the heart.

CHARLES PÉGUÉ

Ecclesiastical institutions can either work havoc with religion or give it support and opportunity.

HARRY EMERSON FOSDICK



## CHAPTER SEVEN

### *Fellowship*

#### INTIMATE FELLOWSHIP

Fellowship too (as well as prayer) is a lesson in receptivity. Its discipline of silence is not less rigorous because it is incidental to the business and enjoyments of daily living. Without such silence it would relapse into mere noisy sociability. There is a seeking out of the best in others, of that which is most ultimate in them, and exposing oneself to it, to learn from it and be made over by it, which brings friendship very close to the mood of prayer. It runs also the same risk of romantic subjectivism. It is all too easy to use one's friends as a pleasant retreat from the facts of one's own failure or of the world's iniquity, build up with them little gardens of Epicure and wall out the dirt and distress of the real world outside.

But the distinctive thing about fellowship is its lesson of self-subordination. Confronted with the problem of self-assertiveness, prayer takes it out by the horns and simply bids the self be stilled and quiescent, while it seeks directly the great reality of God. Fellowship cannot take quite so radical a way. My self is precisely that which I must bring to my friends, with which I must approach them, and through which I must present whatever contribution I have to make. I cannot suppress it. I must find the place within the relationship which it can legitimately fit, and let it grow into it. Any friendship—between two or between a hundred—entails a new emergent unity, where each of the constituent selves is far more in its functional oneness with the rest than it ever was in its apartness.

That greater self demanded by the relation is the self which I can and must try to be; it is a definite possibility which invites growth, demands readjustment, has power of inspiration and criticism. And

I find that greater self just in so far as I am willing and able to lose myself—the isolated, unrelated self—in the organic unity of the prospective togetherness. In that process of losing, to find my self, I get the most effective working correction and expansion of the content of my idea of God.

Take the marriage bond, for instance. To enter it is to find whole new realms of understanding, of loyalty, of forgiveness, of patience, of appreciation, of trust. One's earlier notion of the good grows with the harvest of this new experience; it is corrected, enlarged, enriched. It is the same good, the same God, whom one still serves and celebrates, but it covers now a new dimension of experience and vibrates with new meanings. Every relationship brings the same enrichment. If one be only sensitive to the needs of each new situation, if one be willing to cut loose from one's old moorings and meet each new association with all the eagerness and humility of faith, one will live to follow the Unknown God in an ever deepening acquaintance, a steady process of discovery and growth.

Gregory Vlastos, 1909-. Canadian Professor of Philosophy.  
*The Religious Way.*

#### GROUP FELLOWSHIP

No man can live this religious life alone. He must have the fellowship of others who are trying to live in this way. This is so because the human personality above all things is a social entity. It is created by association and shaped by association. Interchange of thought and feeling with other persons is the very breath of life of personality. As the organism must breathe to live, so the human personality must communicate to live.

The most potent group in which to foster the distinctively religious way of living is small in number. It should range from two or three or four up to twelve or fifteen, although the last number is too large except in rare cases. Jesus Christ chose twelve and that seems to have been too many by one. The number must be few enough to permit personalities to interact freely and know one another deeply, at least in respect to the nature of their ruling loyalty. One of the purposes of such a fellowship is to make inhibitions to dissolve away,

the dark areas of personality to be illuminated, and the individuals to become translucent to one another.

Our civilization is one in which people, as a usual thing, do not know one another beyond superficial levels. Consequently we are constrained, concealed, unconfessed; at best suave and smooth and efficient, with an oily ease in getting about and dealing with people. But the depths of personality are never exposed. Human personality cannot grow and flower in such dark crypts of social concealment. It must have the sunshine and rain of understanding and sympathy. Psychic madness, social revolution, and international conflict rise higher and higher as long as this personal isolation continues with its competitive attitude toward all comers.

In forming a fellowship to save personality from these evils the individuals should be selected with great care. A single wrong choice will ruin it. If it is found that there is some one who cannot interact fittingly, the group should disband and another be formed at some later time. Individuals selected should be ready to practice the method we have described. This exclusiveness is not selfish, for the main purpose of such a group is to release power to transform personalities and change the social order in the interests of greater community among all.

It is important to note that such groups often arise spontaneously. Many people are already members of such a group without knowing it. Such fellowships grow up like wild native plants. All we need do is to learn the disciplines required for fostering their growth that they may be more luxuriant and productive. However, we may be reaching a stage in our civilization where they must be consciously fostered, else they will not grow.

Members of the group should strive for most complete openness toward one another in relation to what is most important in their lives and in relation to the difficulties in their respective personalities which interfere with their ruling devotions. They should work out together a body of convictions they can share concerning what is most worthwhile. Deep communion and most complete openness between the members will make for spontaneity and freedom in

dealing with all personalities and situations and provide for richer growth of all the connections of value.

Occasionally each member of a group should seek out among the members some friend whose love and ruthless honesty and insight he can trust. He should expose himself to the criticism of that other, for only the penetrating gaze of such a friend who shares devotion in this peculiar way of life can reveal to one the defects and obstacles which interfere with growth. However, not all persons are equipped to pass judgment upon another in this way, even when they are most sincere and loving. They do not know enough about life and personality. Hence there should be some criteria by which to determine who is able to render this service and who is not. On the other hand, it should be noted that even a mistaken judgment about oneself made in all sincerity by another may be very illuminating if one can take it objectively and discover the error in it. The discovering of the error in the judgment about oneself made by another, will often reveal truth about oneself that could not otherwise be detected.

The group should worship together, although the practice may not go by that name and should assume the form best fitted to their needs. It may be Quaker silence, or singing together, or reading together great prose or poetry or biography. Such practice helps to illumine the direction and meaning of their lives, unite them in their controlling loyalty, purge them of inhibitions, fixations, conflicts, and disturbing attachments. It widens their horizons, purifies their motives, quickens their devotion.

Such a group as we have described is a source of spiritual power. It is out of such power-groups that all the great world-transforming religious movements have arisen. The early Christian groups, the Franciscan and Jesuit groups, the early Quaker and Methodist groups, are examples.

In a time like ours the only way that a new and transforming religious movement can be started is through creative fellowships such as we have tried to describe. He who lives in the peculiarly religious way must have the support of such a group. The devitalizing, competitive, atomistic social order is all around him. It will

suffocate or crush or desiccate the devoted life within him unless he has the support and nourishment of such a cell of spiritual renewal and power.\*

Henry Nelson Wieman, 1884-. American philosopher, theologian, educator.  
*The Growth of Religion*<sup>1</sup> (Part II)

God can show Himself as He really is only to real men. And that means not simply to men who are individually good, but to men who are united together in a body, loving one another, helping one another, showing Him to one another. For that is what God meant humanity to be like; like players in one band, or organs in one body.

Consequently, the one really adequate instrument for learning about God is the whole Christian community, waiting for Him *together*. Christian brotherhood is, so to speak, the technical equipment for this science—the laboratory outfit.

C. S. Lewis, 1898-. Contemporary English professor, author.  
*Beyond Personality*.

#### EXPERIMENTS IN COMMUNITY

All effective communities are founded upon the principle of unlimited liability. In small groups composed of members personally acquainted with one another, unlimited liability provides a liberal education in responsibility, loyalty and consideration. It was upon the principle of unlimited liability that Raiffeisen based his system of co-operative agricultural banking, a system which worked successfully even among a population so illiterate, so desperately poverty-stricken as that of the barren Westerwald district of Prussia in the later forties of last century. . . .

Individual members should possess nothing and everything—nothing as individuals, everything as joint owners of communally held property and communally produced income. Property and income should not be so large as to become ends in themselves, nor so small that the entire energies of the community have to be directed to procuring to-morrow's dinner.

<sup>1</sup> *The Growth of Religion*—by Walter M. Horton and H. N. Wieman.

We come next to the problem of discipline. History shows that it is possible for associations of devoted individuals to survive under disciplinary systems as radically different from one another as those, respectively, of the Society of Jesus (Loyola) and of the Society of Friends. Between the Higher Militarism of Loyola and the complete democracy of a Quaker committee, in which resolutions are not even put to the vote but discussed until at last there emerges a general "sense of the meeting," lies the constitutional monarchy of Benedictine monasticism. All three types, as history has demonstrated, are capable of surviving. Our choice between the various types will be determined partly by the nature of the tasks to be performed, but mainly by the nature of our conception of what human individuals and societies ought to be.

At all times and in all places communities have been formed for the purpose of making it possible for their members to live more nearly in accord with the currently accepted religious ideals than could be done "in the world." Such communities have always devoted a considerable proportion of their time and energy to study, to the performance of ceremonial acts of devotion and, in some cases at any rate, to the practice of "spiritual exercises."

Many communities have been content to seek salvation only for their own members and have considered that they did enough for the "world" by praying for it and providing it with the example of piety and purposeful living. Most Hindu and many Buddhist communities belong to this type. In some countries, however, Buddhist monks conceive it their duty to teach, and schools, both for children and adults, are attached to the monasteries. In the West the majority of Christian communities have always regarded the performance of some kind of practical work as an indispensable part of their functions. Much has been written on the civilizing influence of the monasteries in their practical, non-religious capacity. The early Benedictines revived agricultural life after the collapse of the Roman Empire. For many centuries education and the dissemination of knowledge through written books was mainly in the hands of the Benedictines. Poor relief and medical aid were also supplied by the

monasteries, and in most countries, almost up to the present day, there were no nurses except those who had been trained in a community of nuns. During the last two centuries most of the non-religious work performed by the religious communities has come to be done either by the state or by secular organizations in the way of ordinary business. Up till that time, however, neither the central authority nor the private business man was willing or able to undertake these jobs. We may risk a generalization and say that at any given moment of history it is the function of associations of devoted individuals to undertake tasks which clear-sighted people perceive to be necessary, but which nobody else is willing to perform.

In the light of this brief account of the salient characteristics of past communities we can see what future communities ought to be and do. We see that they should be composed of carefully selected individuals, united in a common belief and by fidelity to a shared ideal. We see that property and income should be held in common and that every member should assume unlimited liability for all other members. We see that disciplinary arrangements may be of various kinds, but that the most educative form of organization is the democratic. We see that it is advisable for communities to undertake practical work in addition to study, devotion and spiritual exercises; and that this practical work should be a kind which other social agencies, public or private, are either unable or unwilling to perform.

All of us desire a better state of society. But society cannot become better before two great tasks are performed. Unless peace can be firmly established and the prevailing obsession with money and power profoundly modified, there is no hope of any desirable change being made. Governments are not willing to undertake these tasks; indeed, in many countries they actively persecute those who even express the opinion that such tasks are worth performing. Private individuals are not prepared to undertake them in the ordinary way of business. If the work is to be done at all—and it is clear that, unless it is done, the state of the world is likely to become progressively worse—it must be done by associations of devoted individuals.\*-\*\*

## CORPORATE WORSHIP

Central as is the relationship between the separate individual and God, each man needs an experience of life in the great family of God if he is to grow to understand the real nature of that love and the real character of his response to that love, to say nothing of growing to understand and to live creatively with his fellows.

For the past fifteen years I have lived among students and intellectual people both in this country and abroad. And I have seen the pain and the blocking of inner growth that has come to people who have known the religious life, for the want of fellowship and of active participation in the corporate worship and family life of some religious group.

Critical as this generation is, and may be justified in being, of the existing forms of religious fellowship, it can no longer be content with the emphasis of men such as William James, who interpreted religion as an individual affair that had little to do with its group expressions, or even with Henri Bergson, for whom the corporate side of religion can never be other than a static element. This Olympian aloofness of "sitting like God, holding no form of creed but contemplating all" and feeling above active participation in corporate worship has flatly failed to help its defenders to grow in the religious life.

The role that actual participation in corporate religious worship plays in nurturing the life of us halting ones has too long been obscured.<sup>2</sup> Augustine's regular attendance on the church celebrations and the sermons of Bishop Ambrose in Milan played no small part in preparing him for that scene in the garden where he consciously yielded to the Christian way. Only in vital action, whether it be symbolic or direct, does thought ripen into truth, and the modern mind would do well not to confuse religion with a state of consciousness. "Thou art man," *The Imitation of Christ* gently reminds us, "and not God; Thou art flesh and no angel." And Pascal saw that this flesh must be disciplined not alone by thoughts but by acts of love and by corporate acts of worship. "For we must not misunder-

<sup>2</sup> See *Worship* by Evelyn Underhill, Harper & Bros., 1937.



stand ourselves; we are as much automatic as intellectual; and hence it comes that the instrument by which conviction is attained is not (rationally) demonstrated alone." We become what we do.

It is almost impossible to avoid a self-centered religion when one has no active regular share in the corporate worship of a larger religious fellowship. This is particularly true of those who are not engaged in manual work. There is the subtle temptation to become one of those who mistake being "agin" the group, being otherwise-minded, for following the dictates of conscience. Eccentricity, the sense of martyrdom, and an almost total absence of that precious element of "creatureliness," of humility in one's religious life as one of the great family of fellow creatures offering up their lives before the great Father—these frequently accompany this reluctance to share in corporate worship. Friedrich von Hügel used to tell of the sense of common need and of common love that came to him as he prayed through his rosary or listened to the mass while kneeling next to some Irish washerwoman. For this woman and millions of others, whatever their place in man's petty order of rank, would that very day perform the same act of love and devotion before a Father in whose loving regard each was of equal worth.

It is this vivid sense of creatureliness and the felt attitude of the creature towards the creator that many have declared to be the central experience of worship or devotion and the very secret source of the religious refreshment at the base of their lives. For in this sense of creatureliness, the springs of the only enduring center of equality between men are forever being renewed. Here is the heart of a social gospel that is eternal. Here each is visited with a sense that he, in his need, is one and only one among other needy ones; that he is one among the many who have come to offer up their adoration and aspiration; that he is responsible for all and can never wrench loose from that responsibility. Howard Brinton has expressed the effect of this approach to the center in the fellowship of worship by the figure of the spokes of a wheel. The nearer the spokes of the wheel are to the center, the nearer they are to each other.

Corporate worship, however, does much more than to induce creatureliness and to strengthen the bonds of the divine family. The

regular participation in corporate worship nurtures the tender insight of private prayer and helps to give it a stalk, a stem, a root, and soil in which to grow. Without its strengthening power of believing in your conviction, you may be overcome by the general attitude of the world in which you live or by the same attitude that is being pressed upon you from within by the vast residue of fear-carasses that the mind and habits are still laden with and that have not yet been cleared away. Not only in the tender beginning, but at every point in the life, we need this fellowship of corporate worship. For again and again, dry times and doubt and conflict level the fragile house of our faith and compel us to rebuild it on deeper foundations. At times the fellowship seems the only cord that holds us.

We need corporate encouragement to recall and be re-dedicated to that deep citizenship to which our lives stand pledged. To scorn such reminders and to claim all days as sabbaths and all places as equally holy may mean that one has reached a high sense of spiritual freedom. But it may also mean that one is approaching indifference. This corporate ceremonial communion in any Christian group that is more than occasional in its character carries a sense of historical continuity with a great spiritual tradition. You do not begin this quest nor will it end with you. It has been lived in the world of space and time by others who have gone before. Their lives have irrefutably proved and tested it and lifted it above the realm of speculative ideals and theories. In such corporate worship you become a working member of that great community and you enter the vast company of souls whose lives are opened Godward. Your life takes on a new perspective in this great communion of the church invisible.

Douglas V. Steere, 1901-. American author, Professor of Philosophy.  
*Prayer and Worship.*

Distinguished men of letters, essayists, novelists, and poets, have recently asserted their conviction that the only thing which can save our sagging culture is a revival of religious faith, but many of these men make no contact whatever with the particular organizations in their own communities which are dedicated to the nourishment of the very faith they declare necessary for our salvation. There are

countless people who would resent being considered irreligious but who reject the practice of group religion. "I have my own religion," has become a cliché. Some prefer to say they believe in Christianity, but not in Churchianity. In short, they believe in religion, but not in the church. They are keenly aware of the weaknesses of the church as they have known it and they propose the experiment of churchless religion.

Any candid observer will agree that most of the popular criticisms of the church are justified. It has hypocrites in it, and it is weak when it ought to be strong. But the urgent question is the question of a better alternative when the nature of our present crisis is such that our option is a forced option. The only live alternatives to the church are the pseudo religions of totalitarianism or *vague religiosity*. Since we have already seen reason to reject one of these, the other, *i.e.*, vague religiosity, is really the only alternative to the church that our present culture offers. Loyal identification with the church may have difficulties, but the alternative position may have more. . . .

Instead of being baffled by any difficulties that we may feel about church membership we need to ask ourselves quite seriously where else we may turn. What organized institution is there, apart from the church, that has as its major purpose the fostering of Justice, Mercy, and Truth and the Freedom that they jointly make possible.<sup>3</sup> Bad and divided as the church may be, it is the only organization really working at the job of affecting men's lives in the deep way in which they must be affected if what we prize is to survive. . . .<sup>4</sup>

If faith is to be effective in undergirding civilized society, it must be given some concrete embodiment. . . . Life is not raised to new levels by the mere fact that we have been intellectually convinced by the cosmological argument. Our predicament is too great and too serious for our salvation to come in so academic a manner. What is needed is something that can set men's souls on fire. . . . What, in historical experience, has most often been able to do this? It is that hypocritical, bickering organization that we call the church. Without

<sup>3</sup> See *Christianity* by Edwyn Bevan, Henry Holt & Company.

<sup>4</sup> Carl G. Jung has made some recent psychological studies on Christian ritual that are very illuminating and should help the skeptical mind in adequately evaluating corporate practices.

it we might long ago have been submerged. If our civilization is to be saved, we must have it or something like it, for man is the kind of creature who needs it.\*

D. Elton Trueblood, American contemporary philosopher.  
*The Predicament of Modern Man.*

### Therapeutic Value of Religious Fellowship

No matter in what sense the concept of the group mind be construed, a group sentiment centered in Christ can only be developed in and through corporate worship. If a Christ-spirit could be developed in many social units, most of the extrinsic causes of illness on the mass-scale—poverty, unemployment, war, famine and pestilence—would soon be abolished also. If we reflect upon the strictly medical consequences of such a change of heart in nations, we shall realise something of the measure of the importance that should be given to the practice of corporate worship.

Recent advances in medical knowledge in the fields of nutrition, chemotherapy and hormone therapy promise greatly to diminish the mass-incidence of disease the world over. As the gross, physical causes of illness are abolished, the psychogenic and spiritual causes will become relatively more prominent and important. Medical research must then move out into new fields, one of which will be the field we are discussing.

My own experience convinces me that religious group psychotherapy in right hands and under proper conditions has a great contribution to make to neurotic healing. Worship has a double function to perform for these patients: firstly, it gives the patient some insight into his own personality faults; in this way worship is psycho-diagnostic: secondly, worship makes available the power, the ability, the means by which these faults, in measure at least, can be corrected; in this way worship is therapeutic.

The healing effect of worship is greatly assisted by the warm fellowship that invariably springs up between the members of a worshipping group. I have been interested to observe the gradual and progressive spiritual evolution and healing of some of my patients who have been persuaded to join such groups.

In many cases, however, expert psychological treatment is a necessary preliminary. Sometimes that treatment seems to fail because it is not carried on beyond the critical point at which insight is reached and true healing commences. The analyst "dissolves" a sentiment or analyses a complex: if he does not restore the functional efficiency of the analyzed mental organisation, he may leave the patient worse than he found him, like the "house swept and garnished." In so far as the analyst proceeds to synthesis, he is a spiritual healer: if he be a spiritual healer, why does he not make use of the most powerful means of psycho-synthesis, namely, worship? Again, why do we cling to the notion that the healing relationship between doctor or psychologist and patient is essentially or solely a person-to-person relationship? How can a solitary person heal a socially-caused or a socially-conditioned illness? Nearly all neuroses and psychoses manifest themselves as faults in human relationships. Only a social, a group-to-person relationship, can heal such faults. To tell the neurotic to "go and make friends" is silly: that constitutes his problem. We must provide for him a group of friends, who will accept him with all his faults and will help him to resolve his difficulties by understanding him, by encouragement and by example. I believe that these needs can only be provided by a worshipping group and by the life of fellowship and friendship that surrounds it. It seems to me, therefore, that the Church can become, if it will, the group physician of the future.

Much has been written, especially by Freudians, about "transference" and the difficulties that occasionally arise in connection with it. The resolution of the "transference" should always be its sublimation—or so I think. Every psychotherapist should be able to point, as John the Baptist pointed to Jesus, to One who is greater than the psychologist. During worship a transference is established between the worshipper and Christ. During worship child-dependence is replaced by mature competence and by co-operation with others in the fellowship. Until this has been achieved, treatment has not been completed, even if it has been ended.\*

Howard E. Collier, M.D., contemporary English physician.  
*The Place of Worship in Modern Medicine.*<sup>5</sup>

<sup>5</sup> Lecture published by Guild of Pastoral Psychology, London.

## CHAPTER EIGHT

### *Action*

Enlarging insight depends on expansion due to exercise; vision on action, on acting up to the limit of what has been glimpsed.

ANONYMOUS

You must lay aside with your former habits your old self which is going to ruin. . . . You must adopt a new attitude of mind, and put on the new self which has been created in likeness to God.

SAINT PAUL <sup>1</sup>

We must alter our lives in order to alter our hearts, for it is impossible to live one way and pray another.

WILLIAM LAW

<sup>1</sup> Trans. E. J. Goodspeed.

## CHAPTER EIGHT

### *Action*<sup>2</sup>

#### Worship and Work

Commitment does not stop with contemplation. It seeks issue in work. For the God discovered thus is a God at work, reconciling the world to Himself. And those who worship in spirit and truth find themselves called to a ministry of reconciliation. A world unfinished and broken is to be made whole. Worship sends us out to work. But work in turn, through frustration or consummation, may continually tend again toward worship, wherein illumination and renewal are to be found. Such, in part, is man's way toward God.\*

Robert Lowry Calhoun, 1896-. American theologian, educator.  
*God and the Common Life.*

#### Doing as the Completion of Knowing

Knowledge is the beginning of practice; doing is the completion of knowing. Men of the present, however, make knowledge and action two different things and go not forth to practice, because they hold that one must first have knowledge before one is able to practice. Each one says, "I proceed to investigate and discuss knowledge; I wait until knowledge is perfect and then go forth to practice it." Those who to the very end of life fail to practice also fail to understand. This is not a small error, nor one that came in a day. By saying that knowledge and practice are a unit, I am herewith offering a remedy for the disease.\*

Wang-Yang-Ming, 1472-1529. Chinese philosopher.  
*Works of Wang-Yang-Ming*, Trans. Henke.

The method of investigation by which we test our religious insights requires that we become clearly and deeply conscious of what

<sup>2</sup> See Chapter XI—Influence and Action.

we are doing and what mankind is doing for or against the process of integration which is at work in the world. It consists in bringing the whole of human life so far as possible under the searchlight of observation with a view to seeing how well adjusted it is, and how it can be better adjusted, to the value-making process of the world. In religious experience one gets a new impulse toward some new way of living; in religious method one observes the working of that impulse and of all other impulses and habits to discover whether they lead to richer integrations. Another function of religious method is to bring to practical fruition the new possibilities for good which are opened by the way of life, discovered through religious experience.

This phase might be called the practical and constructive. It is the endeavor to reconstruct customs, institutions, personal attitudes and physical conditions in such a way that they will foster the most inclusive and intimate mutual support between individuals and groups of men, and between men and the rest of the world. It is the tremendous effort to remake this world into a home for men and to remake men so that they can live in it like brothers. Great work awaits the doing; but men have not the courage for it, they have not the energy and poise and insight and passion for it, unless religion supplies them. Historically religion has provided this equipment of personality for great achievement and can do it again if the right methods of religious living are known and practiced.\*

Henry Nelson Wieman, 1884-. American philosopher, theologian.  
*Methods of Private Religious Living.*

### Prayer as Preparation for "Action"

Prayer is not escape from reality and from action; it is the source of strength and insight for action. It is the only preparation for sound action.

Prayer is not the pleading to be saved suffering; it is the pleading that one will be spared no suffering which is necessary to achieve the end one desires: unity with God and co-consciousness with all men.

Prayer expresses itself fundamentally in the two great Christian attitudes toward life: gratitude and contrition. Gratitude springs from a sacramental view which sees the earth and the creatures of



it as the whole creation of God and stands in awe and wonder before the majesty of God's handiwork. Contrition springs from man's recognition of his failure to act on that fact, recognition of his constant effort to make himself God and the center of life, instead of giving central place to God, Author of all creation.

Out of this dialectic springs a synthesis which is the unity of the self in resolution so to act that this creation of God's may be made more pleasing in the sight of God; that man may be made again in the image of God.

There is danger that prayers such as "Grant us brotherhood" may become substitutes for positive action toward creation of brotherhood in the world. It is a trick of the human spirit to turn to abstract worship of something which man will not pay the price to achieve—so vicariously he enjoys the fruits of it in an idealistic worship of something of which the realities of the world make a mockery.

Kneeling alone in a dark garden in an ultimate crisis of his life, Jesus said, "Father, may this cup pass from me." But that was not the end of his prayer. Had he—as we so often do—proceeded to rationalize the ways in which an answer might come, the course of human history might have been different. Instead, he carried that prayer—a legitimate cry of the human spirit—on to the absolutely essential conclusion, "Nevertheless not as I will but as thou wilt." And his action, following that prayer, has changed the pattern of human history.

Rose Terlin, contemporary American editor, writer.  
*Prayer and Christian Living.*

### The Relation Between Action and Insight

It is not easy for man so to change himself. As we have seen, it is one of the most tragic facts about ourselves that we have always imagined that it was easy, but of no great profit, to change one's own nature, and hard, but immensely valuable, to change outer nature. Detailed examination of the problem is now showing us the reverse to be the truth. Our construction of fact (what we call the outer universe) and ourselves we see are tied together in an intense interlock. We can change the world we see, but only in proportion as we

have the self-control and courage to let go of the present current construction. For it is not possible, without mental disaster, for anyone to see with equal clearness two mutually exclusive worlds at once. There can never be for a living creature more than one full reality at one time.

We must remember how much even the best of us cling to the present picture of things. This world made by greed and fear suits most people so well that to suggest that it is brutal and in the end will prove disastrous is to awake even more fear and resentment. They will endure agonies rather than leave it. However much they complain, in all who are still ruled by fear and greed there is no real wish for any other sort of world.

The third ethic can therefore have one aim and one only: to set men free of fear and greed. And, because of the reciprocity of ethics and cosmology, vision and action, the consequence of living up to this ethic can be nothing less than the emergence into our sight of an objective world in which greed and fear are steadily diminishing elements.

This is the fundamental discovery of the third cosmology and its fundamental difference from the only other two cosmologies which have preceded it. Here is a cosmological-ethical revolution: man makes the universe; he has made its nightmare, arbitrary quality (of polytheism), its inaccessible righteousness (of monotheism), its blind, inhuman necessitarianism (of mechanism). Each of these cosmologies has been a part picture of an aspect of his nature. He has only been able to see in outer nature what confirms and answers to his inner nature. The invisible replies and materializes in the form in which it is summoned and imagined.

But man can only remake the present crumbling picture of the universe into one which will not be a pure chaos but an answer to his higher emergent, super-individual nature, if he will behave continually in such a super-individual way. The growth of the cosmology waits on the growth in the ethic; enlarging insight depends on the expansion due to exercise; vision on action, on acting up to the limit of what has been glimpsed.

Therefore man does not and cannot wait on an external God so

that that God may remake the universe in order that, when this has been safely accomplished, man may get on with his noble behaviour, his idealistic activity, his saintly conduct. Man is more than God's vice-regent. He is the creative power's vice-creator, for he may make any universe up to the standard of which he is prepared to live. Absolute freedom from the individual self approaches absolute creative power. For as man dares act (this is the fact of creative faith), his apprehension-construction grows and he sees not subjectively but objectively a new reality. For he brings into being that which he has so dared to desire. His desire (equal to the creative desire of animal need which created out of energy-radiation another world of common sense and appetite) creates out of that same energy-radiation another world, a nobler world, but a world as firm as the world of common sense, because constructed and cemented by a desire as strong. The one fundamental objective fact is that the energy-radiation will sustain and substantiate any construction creative desire calls upon it to support and fulfil.

The Kingdom of God is not imminent but immanent; it is not "among you," about suddenly to break like a thunderstorm, but "within you," ready to be expressed the moment you understand your latent, common nature and how you must and can transcend your individuality, your egotism, which makes the world the obstacle it proves to-day to be to you.\*

Gerald Heard, 1889-. English author, religious philosopher.  
*The Third Morality.*

The Christian life is a journey. Jesus said, "They who do the will of my Father shall know. . . ." And St. Gregory, "Whosoever would understand what he hears, must hasten to put into practice what he has heard. . . ."

Therefore do not wait for great strength before setting out, for immobility will weaken you further. Do not wait to see very clearly before starting: one has to walk toward the light. Have you strength enough to take this first step? Courage enough to accomplish this little tiny act of fidelity or of reparation, the necessity of which is apparent to you? Take this step! Perform this act! You will be aston-

ished to feel that the effort accomplished, instead of having exhausted your strength, has doubled it, and that you already see more clearly what you have to do next.\*

Philippe Vernier, 1909-. French Protestant minister.  
*With the Master*, Trans. Edith L. Pierce.

### Action of the Unskilled Person Versus the Expert

We ought to learn how to keep a free mind in all we do, but it is rare that an untrained person can do this, so that neither circumstances nor jobs bother him. It requires great diligence. Expert attention is necessary. To be aware of God at all times and to be enlightened by him equally under all circumstances, there are two special requirements. First: be spiritually quite private, guarding the mind carefully against irrelevant ideas, so as to keep them out and not deal in them, giving them no place in your life. The second has to do with the mind's own inventions, whether spontaneous in the mind or representing some object, or whatever their nature. Do not be dissipated in such ideas lest you become lost in the crowd of them. For these two requirements, for this goal, one must focus all his mental powers and train his mind, for he will need to have his wits about him.

You may say; "But when a person has a job to do, he must give attention to it and thus concentrate on external things, for it takes an idea to make a job possible." And that is quite true, but the reference of ideas to things does not belong to the objective world as far as the spiritual (subjective?) man is concerned, for all things are to him simply channels of the divine and spiritual.

And this viewpoint is possible only through discipline and the training of the intellect to the ways of God, and, doing this, a man will become, in time, divine within. The mind does not get as close to anything as God does, nor is it so germane to things, nor do they require its presence (as they require God). Thus, there is no need for the mind to turn elsewhere (than to God).

It would be fatal for an undisciplined and unskilled person to try to do what an expert may do, and, what is more, he would get nowhere by trying. Only when he has been thoroughly weaned away

from things and things are alien to him—only then may a man do as he pleases with things, free to take them or leave them with impunity.\*

Meister Johannes Eckhart, 1260-1327. German scholar and mystic.  
*Meister Eckhart*, Trans. R. Blakney.

### Warning Against Premature "Good Works"

The first thing we have to remember is that, when theologians speak of the active life as contrasted with that of contemplation, they do not refer to what contemporary, non-theological writers call by the same name. To us, "life of action" means the sort of life led by movie heroes, business executives, war correspondents, cabinet ministers and the like. To the theologians, all these are merely worldly lives, lived more or less unregenerately by people who have done little or nothing to get rid of their Old Adams. What they call active life, is the life of good works. . . .

The practical mystics have critically examined the whole idea of action and have laid down, in regard to it, a set of rules for the guidance of those desiring to follow the mystical path towards the beatific vision. One of the best formulations of the traditional mystical doctrine in regard to action was made by . . . Louis Lallemant. Lallemant was a Jesuit, who, in spite of the prevailing anti-mystical tendencies of his order, was permitted to teach a very advanced (but entirely orthodox) kind of spirituality to the men entrusted to his care.

Whenever we undertake any action, Father Lallemant insists, we must model ourselves upon God himself, who creates and sustains the world without in any way modifying his essential existence. But we cannot do this unless we learn to practise formal contemplation and a constant awareness of God's presence. Both are difficult, especially the latter which is possible only to those very far advanced along the way of perfection. So far as beginners are concerned, even the doing of good works may distract the soul from God. Action is not safe, except for proficients in the art of mental prayer. "If we have gone far in orison," says Lallemant, "we shall give much to action; if we are but middlingly advanced in the inward life, we

shall give ourselves only moderately to outward life; if we have only a very little inwardness, we shall give nothing at all to what is external unless our vow of obedience commands the contrary." To the reasons already given for this injunction we may add others of a strictly utilitarian nature. It is a matter of experience and observation that actions undertaken by ordinary unregenerate people, sunk in their selfhood and without spiritual insight, seldom do much good. A generation before Lallemand, St. John of the Cross had put the whole matter in a single question and answer. Those who rush headlong into good works without having acquired through contemplation the power to act well—what do they accomplish? "*Poco mas que nada, y a veces nada, y aun a veces dano.*" (Little more than nothing, and sometimes nothing at all, and sometimes even worse than nothing.) One reason for hell being paved with good intentions has already been mentioned, and to this, the impossibility of foreseeing the consequences of actions, we must now add another, the intrinsically unsatisfactory nature of actions performed by the ordinary run of average unregenerate men and women. . . . External activity causes no interruption in the orison of the proficient; on the contrary it is a means for bringing them nearer to reality. Those for whom it is not such a means should as far as possible refrain from action. Once again Father Lallemand justifies himself by the appeal to experience and a purely utilitarian consideration of consequences. In all that concerns the saving of souls and the improving of the quality of people's thoughts and feelings and behavior, "a man of orison will accomplish more in one year than another man in all his life." \*

Aldous Leonard Huxley, 1894-. English writer, literary critic.  
*Grey Eminence.*

Creative personalities when they are taking the mystic path which is their highest spiritual level, pass first out of action into ecstasy and then out of ecstasy into action on a new and higher plane. In using such language we describe the creative movement in terms of the personality's psychic experience. In terms of his external relations with the society to which he belongs we shall be describing

the same duality of movement if we call it withdrawal and return. The withdrawal makes it possible for the personality to realize powers within himself which might have remained dormant if he had not been released for the time being from his social toils and trammels . . . but a transfiguration in solitude can have no purpose, and perhaps even no meaning, except as a prelude to the return of the transfigured personality into the social milieu out of which he had originally come: a native environment from which the human social animal cannot permanently estrange himself without repudiating his humanity and becoming, in Aristotle's phrase, "either a beast or a god." The return is the essence of the whole movement as well as its final cause.\*\_\*\*

Arnold J. Toynbee, contemporary English historian.  
*A Study of History.*

Seen with the eyes of the social historian, the three years' activity as a social revolutionary is the life of Jesus in its impact upon human history. What makes it unique is the scope of the vision it embodies, and his profound insight into the conditions demanded for its accomplishment. The teaching of Jesus is not something separable from his life; it is the expression of the understanding which grew out of his life. Theory and practice are there completely unified. The one interprets and expounds the other. It is the fusion of insight and action that makes the life of Jesus the religious life *par excellence*, though it is far from being the kind of life that nowadays would be so described.

John MacMurray, 1891-. Scotch Professor of Philosophy.  
*Creative Society.*

#### ACTION AS A TECHNIQUE

Not *Karma*, mere action, but *Karma Yoga*, union with God through action, is the essence of the teaching of the *Gita*. . . .

Not sacrifice for humanity, but service to humanity as a sacrifice unto God, whose image we learn to see in man, is the true ideal. Not political activities undertaken with a selfish motive, but duties performed as worship of God; not merely family life and the perform-

ance of the ordinary domestic duties, but a life of non-attachment in the midst of these duties, combined with the knowledge of the nature of one's immutable, eternal Self,—this is the real message of the *Bhagavad Gita*. In short, temporal life and spiritual values stand in a relation of harmony—one divine life, as the *Gita* tells us.\*

Swami Prabhavananda, 1893—. Monk of Ramakrishna Mission.  
*Vedic Religion and Philosophy.*

To work alone thou hast the right, but never to the fruits thereof. Be thou neither actuated by the fruits of action, nor be thou attached to inaction.

O Dhananjaya, abandoning attachment and regarding success and failure alike, be steadfast in Yoga and perform thy duties. Evenmindedness is called Yoga.

O Dhananjaya, work (with desire for results) is far inferior to work with understanding. Therefore seek refuge in the Yoga of understanding. Wretched indeed are those who work for results.

Being possessed with this understanding, one frees one's self even in this life from good and evil. Therefore engage thyself in this Yoga. Skillfulness in action is called Yoga.

The wise, possessed with knowledge, abandoning the fruits of their actions, become freed from the fetters of birth and reach that state which is beyond all evil.

*The Bhagavad-Gita*, Trans. Swami-Paramananda.

To discover the Kingdom of God exclusively within oneself is easier than to discover it, not only there, but also in the outer world of minds and things and living creatures. It is easier because the heights within reveal themselves to those who are ready to exclude from their purview all that lies without. And though this exclusion may be a painful and mortificatory process, the fact remains that it is less arduous than the process of inclusion, by which we come to know the fulness as well as the heights of spiritual life. Where there is exclusive concentration on the heights within, temptations and distractions are avoided and there is a general denial and suppression. But when the hope is to know God inclusively—to realize the



divine Ground in the world as well as in the soul, temptations and distractions must not be avoided, but submitted to and used as opportunities for advance; there must be no suppression of outward-turning activities, but a transformation of them so that they become sacramental. Mortification becomes more searching and more subtle; there is need of unsleeping awareness and, on the levels of thought, feeling and conduct, the constant exercise of something like an artist's tact and taste.

Aldous Huxley, 1894-. English writer, literary critic.  
*The Perennial Philosophy*

It is well to remember that even in the holiest undertakings, what God requires of us is earnest willing labour, and the use of such means as we can command; but He does not require success of us: that depends solely upon Himself, and sometimes in very love for us He refuses to crown our best intentions with success.

Jean Nicolas Grou, 1731-1803. French Catholic priest.

### Beginning Steps in We-Activity

Expose yourself to situations in which you are stirred by genuine understanding and sympathy, in which you feel a desire to cooperate with and help another regardless of material or other reward than your inner We-feeling satisfaction. Learn from first-hand observation something of the life of those less-favourably situated than you are. Seek an opportunity for some volunteer service to the sick, the needy, the oppressed. Visit some shut-in and read aloud awhile or otherwise share his load. Find a way to understand better the unhappiness of someone oppressed by racial prejudice or social injustice. Look for the shy person to whom you can be friendly. Give a lift to your tired fellow-worker. Let your imagination lead you into some We-feeling response to those far away—perhaps the starving men in Europe, in Asia or the flood victim in your own country. These are but a fraction of the possibilities which may be discovered.

In all cases focus your thinking upon the sense of We-feeling experienced in your deed. Do not be dismayed by discovering a certain amount of egocentricity in any act. Avoid that which gives you

chiefly a feeling of pride, or superiority or the pleasure of talking about your generosity or so-called unselfishness. Such reactions are not We-feeling, but only egocentric,  $\pm 100$  emotions. Do whatever stirs the chords of genuine We-feeling. Seek to set them vibrating more and more until they become the dominating or sole satisfactions in your experience.\*-\*\*

Fritz Kunkel, M.D., 1889-, and Roy E. Dickerson, 1886-.  
*How Character Develops.*

### True Work Defined

You should work like a *master* and not as a *slave*; work incessantly, but do not do slave's work. Do you not see how everybody works? Nobody can be altogether at rest; ninety-nine percent of mankind work like slaves, and the result is misery; it is all selfish work. Work through freedom! Work through love! The word "love" is very difficult to understand; love never comes until there is freedom. There is no true love possible in the slave. If you buy a slave and tie him down in chains and make him work for you, he will work like a drudge, but there will be no love in him. So when we ourselves work for the things of the world as slaves, there can be no love in us, and our work is not true work. This is true of work done for relatives and friends, and is true of work done for our own selves. Selfish work is slave's work; and here is a test. Every act of love brings happiness; there is no act of love which does not bring peace and blessedness as its reaction. Real existence, real knowledge, and real love are eternally connected with one another, the three in one: where one of them is, the others also must be; they are the three aspects of the One without a second—the Existence-Knowledge-Bliss. When that existence becomes relative, we see it as the world; that knowledge becomes in its turn modified into the knowledge of the things of the world; and that bliss forms the foundation of all true love known to the heart of man.

Swami Vivekananda, 1863-1902. Hindu mystic, seer.  
*Karma-Yoga.*

Can we be believed?—and once more this amounts to the same—we have known workmen who really wanted to work. No one

thought of anything but work. We have known workmen who in the morning thought of nothing but work. They got up in the morning (and at what an hour), and they sang at the idea that they were off to work. At eleven o'clock they sang on going off to eat their soup. Work for them was joy itself and the deep root of their being. And the reason of their being. There was an incredible honor in work, the most beautiful of all the honors, the most Christian, perhaps the only one which stands of itself. That is why I say, for example, that a free-thinker of those days was more Christian than a devout person of our day. Because nowadays a devout person is perforce a bourgeois. And today, everyone is bourgeois.

We have known an honor of work exactly similar to that which in the Middle Ages ruled hand and heart. The same honor had been preserved, intact underneath. We have known this care carried to perfection, a perfect whole, perfect to the last infinitesimal detail. We have known this devotion to *l'ouvrage bien faite*, to the good job, carried and maintained to its most exacting claims. During all my childhood I saw chairs being caned exactly in the same spirit, with the same hand and heart as those with which this same people fashioned its cathedrals.

Those bygone workmen did not serve, they worked. They had an absolute honor, which is honor proper. A chair rung had to be well made. That was an understood thing. That was the first thing. It wasn't that the chair rung had to be well made for the salary or on account of the salary. It wasn't that it was well made for the boss, nor for connoisseurs, nor for the boss' clients. It had to be well made itself, in itself, for itself, in its very self. A tradition coming, springing from deep within the race; a history, an absolute, an honor, demanded that this chair rung be well made. Every part of the chair which could not be seen was just as perfectly made as the parts which could be seen. This was the self-same principle of cathedrals.

There was no question of being seen or of not being seen. It was the innate being of work which needed to be well done.

All the honors converged towards that honor. A decency and a delicacy of speech. A respect for home. A sense of respects, of all the respects, of respect itself. A constant ceremony, as it were. Besides,

home was still very often identified with the work-room, and the honor of home and the honor of the work-room were the same honor. It was the honor of the same place. It was the honor of the same hearth. What has become of all this? Everything was a rhythm and a rite and a ceremony from the moment of rising in the early morning. Everything was an event; a sacred event. Everything was a tradition, a lesson; everything was bequeathed, everything was a most saintly habit. Everything was an inner elevation and a prayer. All day long, sleep and wake, work and short rest, bed and board, soup and beef, house and garden, door and street, courtyard and thresh-old, and the plates on the table.

Laughing, they used to say, and that to annoy the priests, that *to work is to pray* and little did they know how true that was.

So much of their work was a prayer, and the work-room an oratory.\*

Charles Péguy, 1873-1913. French writer.  
*Charles Péguy*, Trans. A. and J. Green.

## The "Cause"

There are some individuals who have achieved a remarkable objectivity, whose personal influence is widely and constructively felt, but who have not been known as "religious" persons. How does one explain them? What can one learn from them?

Eugene Debs, Rayna Proehme, Michael Borodin, and many others achieved a degree of freedom of spirit through devotion to a high cause. This fact challenges one to a clear evaluation of "dedication to a cause" as it relates to the development of the mature individual.

Within the Cause, most worthy ones, there are elements of value. It is probably true that the degree to which a person yields himself in devotion to these elements, to that degree will his own selfish motives be modified, at least temporarily. If the devotion is sustained over a long period, more permanent changes in character are likely to occur, for sustained devotion requires inner discipline. That there have been men and women who have yielded to such discipline is well evidenced by their lives, and in some cases by their own writings. Of the latter someone has written: "It is a strange fact that certain

men, who have spent long periods of their lives in lonely prison cells, men who are not Christians,<sup>3</sup> nevertheless have written some of the profound truths which also are found in Christianity. I think of the letters of Rosa Luxemburg and of Eugene Debs and of the autobiography of Angelo Herndon. . . .

"When offered the opportunity to run away rather than risk return to the Georgia chain-gang and to possible death, Angelo Herndon said, 'I cannot run away. There is too much at stake. If I run away and you run away, and every one else who loves freedom and truth runs away, who will be left to fight the good battle? I am not afraid. Death itself is not the greatest tragedy that could happen to a man. Rather, the greatest tragedy is to live placidly and safely and to keep silent in the face of injustice and oppression.' Those words—amazing ones for this boy of nineteen—indicate the kind of insight which comes to people who spend long hours alone and who are committed to a high cause."

However, there are grave dangers in the Cause as a way of growth, for the degree to which a cause is partial and limited, and therefore un-universal, and blocking to the good of the whole, to that degree will the devotee also tend to be limited and lacking in wholeness. Also should the activity, in service of the cause, be based on the policy that the end justifies the means, a distortion in the character of the participant as well as in the end served is bound to occur.

One, therefore, needs to be warned against any Cause as a sufficient-in-itself method for character development. One certainly needs to be reminded that the beginner on the religious Way has little or no insight that would contribute vitally to any major cause. He had best limit his activity to areas commensurate with his stage of progress. It is important also to be aware that most ordinary, uninspired activity may in itself become an escape device.

In spite of these warnings the role of action in bringing man to his highest fulfillment must not be underestimated. Without action up to the height of insight there can be no growth of insight. God

<sup>3</sup> One is immediately reminded of Jawaharlal Nehru and Mohandas K. Ghandi whose years of imprisonment have been turned into benefit for all of India.

may become very real in "action," and action and meditation have been found to be both complimentary and indispensable to one another.

Anonymous contemporary.  
Written for this anthology.

### Roots of Effective Activity

At the present time, and especially amongst us in Russia, the Church and State deceit presents the chief obstacle to the establishment of or even the approach to the Christian life, but one cannot say that the strife with these deceits represents the chief business of a Christian. The business of a Christian, by the means of which he attains all his purposes, including the one which at present in Russia stands before him, is everywhere and always one: to increase one's fire and let it give light to men. But directing all one's attention, all one's efforts, to some one particular object, as for instance the life of manual labor, propaganda, or, as in this case, strife with this or that deceit, is always a mistake, like that of a man who, during an inundation, instead of directing the water through the chief outlet or repairing the dike which resists the water, should construct dams in his own street, overlooking the fact that the water will come in from other directions.

Another comparison. One has to protect houses from the possibility of a fire being communicated to all. One can cut green branches and stick them into the earth between the houses. And this may appear to be effective for a day or two. One can also plant small trees, and when they take root and grow up, this will be effective permanently.

It is necessary that our activity should have roots. And these roots are in our submissiveness to the will of God, in our personal life being dedicated to perfecting oneself and increasing love.

My physical health continues to be bad, but spiritually I feel very well, and I can work and do work as well as I am able, more seriously in view of the approaching end.\*

Lyof N. Tolstoi, 1828-1910. Russian novelist, moral philosopher.  
*Letters*, Trans. Aline Delano.

## Discrimination in "Doing Good to Others"

One may be so preoccupied with the desire to be of use to society that one loses the opportunity to do what one was best fitted to perform. If we fail thus in effectiveness it is because we have not been free to be honest with ourselves. We have been distracted by that too urgent and insistent demand to note the social consequences, immediate or remote, of our enterprises. We have been nagged into diminishing the scope of our effort from the breadth of its original disinterestedness to suit some narrow utilitarian requirement.

The work of doing good to others over its whole range from the simplest alleviation of human misery to the missionary ambition of saving souls, is notoriously a difficult and, for the most part, a thankless task. The reasons for this are many, but some of them spring from the essential nature of the relationship involved between the doer and the recipient of good. It is with these that we are concerned.

"If I knew for a certainty," wrote Thoreau, "that a man was coming to my house with the conscious design of doing me good, I should run for my life as from that dry and parching wind of the African deserts called the simoom, which fills the mouth and nose and ears and eyes with dust till you are suffocated, for fear I should get some of his good done to me,—some of its virus mingled with my blood."

We may say that the successful reformers are those who are seeking not so much to "make people good" as to share an enthusiasm. The change they may work in others is a by-product of some disinterested devotion. I am justified in attacking my neighbour's meanness or duplicity only in so far as I am manifestly inspired by a love of generosity and integrity. My efforts can then be interpreted as an attempt to recall him to his ideal and mine. I do not plan his voyage, I merely propose to correct his compass. I am like the man in Plato's Allegory of the Cave who knew that his chief task was to turn the prisoners round so that they could face in the direction of the sun. The sun would do the rest.\*

Who are you who go about to save them that are lost?

Are you saved yourself?

Do you not know that who would save his own life must lose it?

Are you then one of the "lost"?

Be sure, very sure, that each one of these can teach you as much as, probably more than, you can teach them.

Have you then sat humbly at their feet, and waited on their lips that they should be the first to speak—and been reverent before these children—whom you so little understand?

Have you dropped into the bottomless pit from between yourself and them all hallucination of superiority, all flatulence of knowledge, every shred of abhorrence and loathing?

Is it equal, is it free as the wind between you?

Could you be happy receiving favors from one of the most despised of these?

Could you be yourself one of the lost?

Arise, then, and become a savior.

Edward Carpenter, 1844–1929. English author, poet.  
*Towards Democracy.*





## PART THREE

### *The Outcomes*

God does not work in all hearts alike but according to the preparation and sensitivity he finds in each.

MEISTER ECKHART

Endowments vary, but the Spirit is the same, and forms of service vary . . . but God who produces them all in us all is the same. Each one is given his spiritual illumination for the common good.

SAINT PAUL

# *Contents*

## PART THREE

### *THE OUTCOMES*

	PAGE
INTRODUCTION	371
CHAPTER	
IX. INWARD RENEWAL	373
X. OUTWARD CREATIVITY	397
Between Individuals	398
In Love and Friendship	399
In Marriage	402
XI. OUTWARD CREATIVITY (Continued)	407
Between Individuals and Society	408
In Attitude	408
In Influence and Action	428
Within the Beloved Community	449
APPENDIX: The Object of Devotion	465
Some Modern Ideas of God	469
Some Generalized Mystic Ideas of God	489

## PART THREE

### *The Outcomes*

This section presents descriptions of some of the outcomes experienced by those who progress through various stages along the Way. The purpose of these descriptions is to make vivid the second half of the paradoxical statement, "He who will lose his life shall preserve it." They give content to the "Life" that is to be preserved.

It is hoped that for some readers the material may open new areas of possibility even though the furthestest ranges of experience are only briefly described. These far reaches of the spirit seem for the most part to be inexpressible, or if expressed are beyond the understanding of all except the very few. What is more, they are likely to be misunderstood. This is the common fate of such sublime writings as *The Practice of the Presence of God* and others, which by their very simplicity of style and inspiring testimony concerning the ease and supreme joy of Union with God mislead the beginner into thinking that such attainment is easy. These precious outpourings of the religious genius must always be viewed in the light of what has gone on before in the experience of the writer. For instance, in *The Practice of the Presence of God*, Brother Lawrence writes indirectly of himself: "He is now so accustomed to the Divine Presence that from it he receives continual succor upon all occasions. . . . Judge from this what contentment and satisfaction he enjoys, feeling within him so great a treasure; no longer is he in earnest search after it, but he has it open before him." More directly he says: "As for what passes in me at present, I cannot express it. I have no pain nor any doubt as to my state, because I have no will but that of God, which I endeavor to carry out in all things and to which I am so submissive that I would not take up a straw from the ground against His order . . ." Yet he also wrote: "For the first ten years I suffered much; the apprehension that I was not devoted to God . . . my past sins always present to my mind . . . During

all this time I fell often, yet as often rose again. It seemed to me that all creation, reason, and God Himself were against me."

The reader is urged to keep in mind these necessary years of apprenticeship as he reads through this section, for there has been little attempt to differentiate between the outcomes commonly effected early in the religious life and those usually occurring in the later phases.

Further the reader is warned not to anticipate any particular "set" of outcomes for himself or for any other person. This is of highest importance, for any striving for particular results blocks progression and causes needless discouragement. Many factors enter in to determine the particular emphasis which the transformation will take in each person. Biological endowment, temperamental equipment, and the degree of early psychic conditionings influence the rate of progress and determine the particular characteristics manifest for each person as he progresses.

The only tenable hope, therefore, one who has started on the Way can have concerning outcomes, is a sure faith that with an increase of devotion, a gradual release from unconscious hamperings, and a persistence in training, there will come a re-orientation around the new Center—a re-orientation that assures a gradual discovery of the new, the maturing, the "real" self, and a gradual leave-taking of the old, the immature, the "false" self. Every step of the way to fulfillment offers its own highest reward—that of a deepening sense of coming ever closer to the end for which one was created. Having left behind his strangulated self, man achieves the kind of awareness wherein he finds himself at one with all mankind, and possessed of an indwelling love which spontaneously ministers unto them.

It is hoped that the words of men and women who have in varying degrees gone this way before will serve as an irresistibly compelling factor to the reader to make "the choice" that "is always ours" if he has not already done so; and to follow through as fast and as far as endowment, effort, and "Grace" will permit, so that he, too, will eventually find the full treasure open before him.

## CHAPTER NINE

### *Inward Renewal*

The living water wells up from the depths and flows gaily through the new-born man.

J. MIDDLETON MURRY

Self realization has ceased to be looked upon as self fortification.

HENRY BURTON SHARMAN

There are things—

“Which no eye ever saw and no ear ever heard,  
And never occurred to the human mind,

Which God has provided for those who love Him.”

I CORINTHIANS <sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Trans. E. J. Goodspeed.

## CHAPTER NINE

### *Inward Renewal*

#### THE GOLDEN AGE IS IN MY HEART TODAY

Who are you, any one, who can remain unmoved when the Light  
breaks upon you?  
Who can say it does not concern him?  
Who can say it is just as well not to see as to see?  
Who can ever be the same child or woman or man again after the  
Day has broken?  
Who can admit there is anything else in the world, after this has  
come to the world?  
I brushed all obstructions from my doorsill and stepped into the road;  
And though so many cried to me, I did not turn back;  
And though I was very sorrowful having to leave so many friends  
behind, I did not turn back;  
And though the ground was rough and I was overtaken by fierce  
storms, I did not turn back;  
For when the soul is once started on the soul's journey, it can never  
turn back. . . .  
Can you now go on with your old life as if nothing had happened?  
The whole universe has happened;  
All your forgotten kinship to the people has happened;  
All the terrible thirst for justice has happened;  
And all sad things have happened in gladness at last;  
And all things out of place have happened at last;  
And all old enmity has happened in friendship at last;  
The golden age is in my heart today.

Author unknown.

Slowly on You, too, the meanings: the light-sparkles on water, tufts of weed in winter—the least things—dandelion and groundsel.

Have you seen the wild bees' nest in the field, the cells, the grubs, the transparent white baby-bees, turning brown, hairy, the young bees beginning to fly, raking the moss down over the disturbed cells? the parasites?

Have you seen the face of your brother or sister? have you seen the little robin hopping and peering under the bushes? have you seen the sun rise, or set? I do not know—I do not think that I have.

When your unquiet brain has ceased to spin its cobwebs over the calm and miraculous beauty of the world:

When the Air and the Sunlight shall have penetrated your body through: and the Earth and Sea have become part of it:

When at last, like a sheath long concealing the swelling green shoot, the love of learning and the regard for elaborate art, wit, manners, dress, or any thing rare or costly whatever, shall drop clean off from you;

When your Body—for to this it must inevitably return—is become shining and transparent before you in every part (however deformed);

Then (O Blessed One!) these things also transparent, possibly shall surrender themselves—the least thing shall speak to you words of deliverance.

Edward Carpenter, 1844–1929. English author, poet.  
*Towards Democracy.*

Let us be glad, and rejoice forever. Singleness of heart is come; pureness of heart is come; joy and gladness is come. The glorious God is exalting himself; Truth hath been talked of, but now it is possessed. Christ hath been talked of; but now He is come and possessed. The glory hath been talked of; but now it is possessed, and the glory of man is defacing. The Son of God hath been talked of; but now He is come, and hath given us an understanding.

George Fox, 1624–1691. English, founder of the Society of Friends (Quakers).  
*Autobiography.*



## FROM THE WILDERNESS

He who was a river into the wilderness  
Is now come back from misery to bless  
The hounding spirit.  
He who was rich and now so seeming poor  
Owns an inheritance which was not his before—  
Even his self.

This was the gift from the dark hour which thrust  
Him forth to solitude;  
Which laid him in a grave while yet the dust  
Was under him; while yet the blood  
Water'd the withering march 'twixt sense and sand.

He knew the hour of nothingness when the hand  
Is empty, and empty is the heart;  
And the intelligence, with its keen dart  
Of reasonable speech, slays its own pride.

'Twas thus he died;  
Suffering his solitary hour beyond the world of men:  
And it was thus, alone, he found the flower  
Of his own self;  
Which yet had been only a flower of stone  
Had he not brought it back into the world again.

William Soutar, 1898-1943. Scotch poet.

Foodless am I, and shelterless,  
No home have I,  
For me no children's prattle riseth at the eventide:

Yet am I rich beyond compute,  
All love I have, all joy:

For I have God,  
His grace I know, his love:

Come pain,  
Come all adversity,  
With thee, my God, enthroned within,  
No ill can overtake me:

Let transience pass,  
A dream it came,  
A dream it goes again:

For me abideth Permanence,  
Immortal Joy,  
In inward touch of soul with thee, my God.

Tukaram.

*Songs from Prison*, Trans. from Sanskrit by Gandhi—into English by Hoyland.

I am like a child who awakes  
At the light, so safe and so sure,  
Free from night's fears when dawn breaks,  
In Thee I am ever secure.  
There are times when doubts over me steal  
But I know Thou art there and awake.  
Thou art—and art—and I feel  
No surging of aeons can shake

Thee—Life is a ring, I have found—  
I am child, boy, man, more—I learn  
The circle is rich, the full round  
Complete in its perfect return.

I thank Thee, Thou deep force that falls  
Imperceptibly on me, to grace  
My working day on the hard lands,  
To smooth it—as back of dim walls  
And like a far-off Holy Face  
Thy radiance shines on my dark hands.

Rainer Maria Rilke, 1875–1926. German poet.  
*The Book of Hours*, Trans. Jessie Lemont.

I waited patiently for Jehovah;  
And he inclined unto me, and heard my cry.  
He brought me up also out of a horrible pit, out of the miry clay;  
And he set my feet upon a rock, and established my goings.  
And he hath put a new song in my mouth, even praise unto our God:  
Many shall see it and fear,  
And shall trust in Jehovah.  
Blessed is the man that maketh Jehovah his trust,  
And respecteth not the proud, nor such as turn aside to lies.  
Many, O Jehovah my God, are the wonderful works which thou  
    hast done,  
And thy thoughts which are to us-ward:  
They cannot be set in order unto thee;  
If I would declare and speak of them,  
They are more than can be numbered.  
Sacrifice and offering thou hast no delight in;  
Mine ears hast thou opened:  
Burnt-offering and sin-offering hast thou not required.  
Then said I, Lo, I am come;  
In the roll of the book it is written of me:  
I delight to do thy will, O my God:  
Yea, thy law is within my heart.

*From the 40th Psalm, Old Testament.*

I never lose heart. Though my outer nature is wasting away, my inner is being renewed every day.

*Saint Paul, first century Christian Apostle.  
New Testament, Trans. E. J. Goodspeed.*

When threatened with total blindness Toyohiko Kagawa was compelled to lie for months with bandaged eyes in a darkened room.

"It's inconvenient, isn't it?" "What?" "Your blindness." "Yes, but it is inconvenient for people not to have wings, isn't it? If, however, they invent airplanes, these take the place of wings.

"The same is true regarding the external eyes. If they go blind it is simply a matter of inventing internal sight. My God is light itself.

Even though every outward thing is shrouded in darkness in the inner chamber of my soul, God's Eternal light shines on.

"Health is gone! Sight is gone! But as I lie forsaken in this dark room God still gives light. Pains that pierce the very fires of Hell itself sweep over me. Yet, even in the melting fires of Hell, God's mercy, for which all of earth's manifold treasures would be an utterly inadequate exchange, still enfolds me.

"To me all things are vocal. Oh, wonder words of love! The bedding, the tears, the spittle, the perspiration, the vapor of the compress on my eyes, the ceiling, the matted floor, the voice of the chirping sparrow without, all are vocal. God and every inanimate thing speak to me. Thus even in the dark I feel no sense of loneliness.

"Simply because I am doomed to dwell in the dark is no excuse for allowing my soul to devote itself to self-centered musings.

"In the darkness I meet God face to face. Here lies the reason for this long blindness. This is the purpose back of this wearisome confinement. I am being born, born of God. God has some great expectation regarding me.

"With the thought of comforting me, a friend remarked, 'Because so many things are waiting to be done you must find this long illness tedious.' I, however, was compelled to confess that I was not conscious of any sense of ennui. I realize that a lot of work is waiting. But work is not the purpose of my life. I am given life that I may live.

"It is impossible for me to stupidly moon away this present precious moment in boredom by idly thinking of tomorrow. My life is focused in this one moment. My present task is here and now to fellowship with God on this bed of pain.

"I am not thinking of tomorrow or the next day, or even of this day's sunset hour. I am concerned only with being, this present moment, without any sense of tedium, with God. And for me constantly praising God for the joy of the moments lived with Him there is no such thing as tediousness." \*

When one takes God as He is, divine, having the reality of God within him, God sheds light on everything. He will be like one athirst with a real thirst; he cannot help drinking even though he thinks of other things. Wherever he is, with whomsoever he may be, what ever his purpose or thoughts or occupation—the idea of the Drink will not depart as long as the thirst endures; and the greater the thirst the more lively, deep-seated, present, and steady the idea of the Drink will be. Or suppose one loves something with all that is in him, so that nothing else can move him or give pleasure, and he cares for that alone, looking for nothing more; then wherever he is or with whomsoever he may be, whatever he tries or does, that Something he loves will not be extinguished from his mind. He will see it everywhere, and the stronger his love grows for it the more vivid it will be. A person like this never thinks of resting because he is never tired.\*

Meister Johannes Eckhart, 1260–1327. German scholar, mystic.  
*Meister Eckhart*, Trans. R. Blakney.

Two people who lived their lives deeply and consciously often come to my mind, and I am struck both by their dissimilarity and by their inherent likeness. One was a great physician and scientist, the other a washerwoman in a frontier town. The dissimilarity lay in circumstances and outer opportunity, in gifts and natural ability. The similarity lay in their attitude towards experience; in their ability to live deeply in whatever came to them, and to see the true drama of life as something not produced by circumstance or Fate, but by the inner relation to events. In each of them one felt as the dominant quality, a life wisdom which, while drawn from the daily experience, yet penetrated deeper to a level where the inner being of the spirit was revealed and the moment became a part of a greater reality. In each the judgment of an act was tempered by a form of charity which, always acknowledging its own limitations, was willing to give to others an understanding that helped to cast out fear, so that bewildered people could see themselves more clearly and, through this understanding, accept themselves.

One of these two people, operating in the world of science, con-

tributed not only to the healing of individual lives, but also to the greater knowledge of mankind; the other, operating in a small pioneer town, contributed new courage and understanding to the lives of many. In both were present an almost fierce integrity and self-scrutiny, which, turned upon their own acts, gave them clarity of vision in judging the acts of others. In thinking of them, I have often remembered the parable of the talents and the judgment of "Well done, thou good and faithful servant"—a judgment as right for the possessor of two talents as for the one to whom ten had been given.

To each of these people the word "individual" can be applied, for the individual is one who, from the chaos of inner confusion and the assault of outer reality, separates that undefinable nucleus which makes him a unique being. This individual self may be very simple or infinitely complex—the essential quality is the acceptance of its own reality and its own true relation to life. Such people remind us of trees whose roots are deep in the earth, their life is a process of growth, their nature a maturing of some central germ, they are deeply themselves. They are also more than themselves because they are rooted in universal form. We may find them in any walk of life, for their reality is not dependent upon outer circumstances but upon the fact that in some way they have always maintained their connection with themselves, and in the various experiences of life have accepted their own responsibility and have looked for the meaning behind each personal experience.

Perhaps we could best describe these people by saying that they do not accept life ready-made, as does the ordinary person. Whether their thoughts are brilliant or simple, they are their own; whether their taste is crude or subtle it expresses something that they wish to express. Whatever they create in life, whether it be a philosophical theory, a work of art, or a human relation, it is their own creation, not something which they have taken over from outside. It is perhaps this creative quality in them which makes them stand apart.\*

To have learned through enthusiasms and sorrow what things there are within and without the self that make for more life or less, for fruitfulness or sterility; to hold to the one and eschew the other; to seek, to persuade, and reveal, and convince; to be ready to readjust one's values at the summons of a new truth that is known and felt; to be unwearied in learning to discriminate more sharply between the false and the true, the trivial and the significant, in life and in men and in works; to be prepared to take a risk for the finer and the better things,—that is perhaps all we can do. Yet somehow as I write, the words "perhaps all we can do" seem a very meager phrase. The endeavor to be true to experience strikes me at this moment as the most precious privilege of all. To have found a loyalty from which one cannot escape, which one must forever acknowledge. No, one cannot ask for more.\*

John Middleton Murry, 1889—. English author, critic.  
*To An Unknown God.*

Thus says the Lord:

"Cursed is the man who trusts in man,  
And makes flesh his arm of strength,  
His mind being turned from the Lord!  
He shall be like a scrub in the desert,  
Unable to see the coming of good;  
He shall dwell in the scorched lands of the wilderness,  
In an uninhabited salt land.

Blessed is the man who trusts in the Lord,  
To whom the Lord is his confidence!  
He shall be like a tree planted by waters,  
That sends out its roots to the stream;  
And is not afraid when heat comes,  
For its leaves remain green;  
Nor is anxious in a year of drought,  
For it ceases not to bear fruit."

From the Book of Jeremiah, around sixth century, B.C.  
*Old Testament*, Trans. Alex. R. Gordon.

## THE SNOW-BLIND

As men who once have seen  
White sun on snow, white fire on ice,  
And in a wide noon, shadowless,  
Gone blind with light,  
So these men walk who once have seen  
God without veils—the mind's  
Momentary and blinding birth of sight.  
To them henceforth we are but shape and shadow;  
Fog-forms, hands moving in the mist,  
Our houses dark, our halls are winding tunnels,  
Our little triumphs less than little straws  
Balanced above a sparrow's nest.  
And from that hour we call them dangerous men and  
Strange,  
Bigoted, fierce, loud croakers of a dream,  
Anarchists, atheists, we say  
Who walk, eyes stretched as blind men walk  
But ask no man the way.

Josephine Johnson, 1910—. American novelist, poet.  
*Year's End.*

John Woolman, a member of the Philadelphia Yearly Meeting of Ministers, was deeply revered—a Friend of “great weight.” Among other things he was known for his consistency in refusing to benefit from the slave system. One of the measures he found necessary was to wear bleached clothing since the import of dye was involved in the slave trade.

In 1740, impelled by a special “concern,” he undertook a month-long sea voyage to England. It was made unusually difficult because he felt obliged to travel steerage in order to maintain his integrity regarding special privilege. His report of the conditions in steerage did much to awaken the Colonies regarding the heretofore almost unknown misery of the sailors of that day. This uncomfortable and hazardous journey to England was matched by an equally trying experience which occurred soon after his arrival. It is related by Janet Whitney as follows. (Editors)



The London Yearly Meeting of Ministers and Elders was the most august body in Quakerdom. (John Woolman of course was a member of the equivalent body in Philadelphia, and a very important member.)

The ministers and elders had been in session about half an hour. There they sat, rank after rank of respectable men. . . . Parliament itself perhaps could hardly offer a more solidly well-to-do group. They conformed sufficiently to the fashion to avoid being conspicuous, and would pass in any company.

Into this dim and dignified assembly there suddenly entered a most extraordinary apparition. "His dress was as follows—a white hat, a coarse raw linen shirt, without anything about the neck, his coat, waistcoat and breeches of white coarse woollen cloth with wool buttons on, his coat without cuffs, white yarn stockings, and shoes of uncured leather with bands instead of buckles, so that he was all white."

A slight stir of horror went over the meeting as this figure advanced confidently to the Clerk's table and laid down his certificate. . . . Well, one never did quite know what was coming from America. But this was the worst ever seen yet. . . . They dreaded to have him go about the country with a minute and have him pointed at by other people as a "Quaker." After a brief, hostile pause, Dr. John Fothergill rose and expressed, in his cold and careful phrases, the feeling of the meeting. He suggested that perhaps the stranger Friend might feel that his dedication of himself to this apprehended service was accepted, without further labor, and that he might now feel free to return to his home.

The stunning humiliation of that blow sank home in a silence that could be felt. Such a sharp public rejection of any visitor, unheard, was without precedent. The man in white started, as if unable to believe his ears, and then sat with his face covered. Those near him were aware that tears were wrung from him in the agony of that discomfiture.

Practised in silence, the meeting waited. Most of the London Friends expected one of two things—either an unseemly outburst from this wild man, or slinking departure. . . . The silence pro-

longed, while Woolman sought deep within himself, first for control, then for wisdom.

At last he rose, and removed his hat. Then, speaking . . . with pain, but with assured dignity . . . he said with the utmost brevity that he could not feel himself released from his prospect of labor in England, but he could not travel in the ministry without the unity of Friends. While that unity was withheld he did not feel easy to accept hospitality, or be of any cost to them. He had the good fortune to be acquainted with a mechanical trade, and while the impediment to his services continued, he hoped Friends would be kindly willing to employ him in such business as he was capable of, that he might not be chargeable to any.

He sat down, and in spite of themselves they were impressed. They were unable to proceed with business. . . . The silence continued unbroken, but the quality of it was different for that greatest enemy of love, scorn, was no longer present. And as they sat in quiet John Woolman was subtly aware of the difference.

That long silence shaped itself into an invitation. A smaller man might have refused that opportunity out of pique and wounded feelings. A weaker man might have refused it from a self-conscious feeling that to speak now would seem to give a demonstration in support of his credentials. But Woolman had lived in the world for fifty-two years, and such feelings, if he had ever had them, he had long outgrown. Although his reception had shocked him profoundly, he was now bowing his heart to accept it as a discipline of some sort—a lesson in humility or what not—from a higher Hand than theirs. . . . The stranger again rose to his feet, removed his hat, and with his brow serene and lifted, he threw away the personal difficulty that had been between himself and them and spoke to them as to Burlington or New Haven or Philadelphia, in the love of God and the “pure life of truth.”

When he had ceased, they sat still awhile more; and then Dr. Fothergill rose and begged John Woolman’s pardon in a voice that was husky, and urged the meeting’s endorsement of his minute, which was unanimously accorded.

The diary of Elihu Robinson reads: “*5th day*. Our Frd Jno

Woolman from Jersey made some pertinent remarks in this Meeting as in many others, and tho ye Singularity of his Appearance might in some Meetings Draw ye Attention of ye Youth and soon cause a change of Countenance in some, Yet ye Simplicity, Solidity and Clearness of many of his remarks made all these vanish as Mists at ye Sun's rising—he made sevl beautiful remks in this Meetng with respt to ye benifit of true Silence and how Incense ascended on ye oppening of ye Seal and there was Silence in heaven for ye space of half an hour." \*—\*\*<sup>2</sup>

Janet Whitney, contemporary English writer.  
*John Woolman: American Quaker.*

Men of stamina, knowing the way of life,  
 Steadily keep to it;  
 Unstable men, knowing the way of life,  
 Keep to it or not according to occasion;  
 Stupid men, knowing the way of life  
 And having once laughed at it, laugh again the louder.  
 If you need to be sure which way is right, you can tell by their  
     laughing at it.  
 They fling the old charges:  
 'A wick without oil,'  
 'For every step forward a step or two back.'  
 To such laughers a level road looks steep,  
 Top seems bottom,  
 'White appears black,'  
 'Enough is a lack,'  
 Endurance is a weakness,  
 Simplicity a faded flower.  
 But eternity is his who goes straight round the circle,  
 Foundation is his who can feel beyond touch,  
 Harmony is his who can hear beyond sound,  
 Pattern is his who can see beyond shape:  
 Life is his who can tell beyond words  
 Fulfillment of the unfulfilled.

Laotzu, born about 604 B.C., Chinese philosopher.  
*The Way of Life*, Trans. Witter Bynner.

<sup>2</sup> See author's text, pages 392-96 for a full account of this incident.

(To the Russian Ministers of the Interior and of Justice—April 20, 1896.)

Dear Sir: I address you as man to man, with feelings of respect and good-will, in which feelings I beg you also to accept my letter. The matter about which I write concerns the persecutions endured at the hands of the officials of your Department by those persons who possess certain writings of mine which are prohibited in Russia, and lend them to others who desire to read them. As far as I know, many different persons have been subjected to such persecutions. These measures are in the highest degree unjust because they are not directed against the person from whom emanates the activity which the Government regards as evil.

In the present case, I am this person. I wrote and circulated those books which the Government regards as pernicious, and still continue to write and circulate in books and letters and conversations similar ideas to those expressed in the books.

The essence of these ideas is that the unmistakable law of God has been revealed to men; that this law stands higher than all the human laws; and that, in accordance with this law, we should not be in enmity with or coerce each other, but, on the contrary, should help each other—should act with others as we would wish others to act with us.

I express the same thoughts to you now, also, indicating the acts of cruelty and violence contrary to the law of God which are perpetrated by officials of your Department.

If the Government wishes at all costs to punish and suppress that which it regards as evil, then the least irrational and the least unjust course it could take would be to direct all measures of punishment, intimidation, and suppression against that which the Government regards as the source of the evil, *i.e.*, against me; the more so as I declare beforehand that I will, unceasingly, until my death, continue to do that which the Government regards as evil, and which I regard as my sacred duty before God.

And please do not think that in asking you to direct against me the measures used against some of my acquaintances I imagine that their application to me would create any kind of difficulty to the Government—that my popularity or my social position protects me

from police raids, cross-examinations, exile, imprisonment, and other severer acts of violence. I not only do not think so, but am persuaded that if the Government were to act vigorously with me, to exile me, imprison me, or apply a yet more extreme measure, this would not create any particular difficulty; and that public opinion would not only not be revolted, but the majority would completely approve of such action and say that it should have been done long ago.

God is, my witness that in writing this letter I am not surrendering to a desire for bravado, or to show off in some way, but am prompted by a moral demand, which consists in relieving innocent people of responsibility for actions committed by me.

With the feeling of true good-will, I remain, Yours respectfully.\*

Lyof N. Tolstoi, 1828-1910. Russian novelist, moral philosopher.  
*Complete Works*, Trans. by Aline Delano.

(From the Tower of London, where William Penn was imprisoned.)

All is well. Thou mayest tell my father, who I know will ask thee, these words: that my prison shall be my grave before I will budge a jot; for I owe my conscience to no mortal man; I have no need to fear, God will make amends for all. They are miserably mistaken in me; I value not their threats and resolutions; for they shall know I can weary out their malice and peevishness; and in me they shall behold a resolution above fear; conscience above cruelty; and a baffle put to all their designs by the spirit of patience, the companion of all the tribulated flock of the blessed Jesus, who is the author and finisher of the faith that overcomes the world, yea, death and hell, too: neither great nor good things were ever attained without loss and hardships. He that would reap and not labour, must faint with the wind, and perish in disappointments; but an hair of my head shall not fall, without the providence of my Father that is over all.

William Penn, 1644-1718. English Quaker.  
From *Inward Light*—1941.

In those days there visited him in the same palace a certain physician of Arezzo, by name Good John, who was very Familiar with blessed Francis. And blessed Francis questioned him saying,

"What thinkest thou, Bembenignate, of this my infirmity of dropsey?" And the physician said to him, "Brother, it shall be well with thee, by the grace of God." And blessed Francis said again, "Tell me the truth; what do you think? Fear not, since by the grace of the Holy Spirit, I am so made with my Lord, that I am equally content with death as with life." Then the physician said to him openly, "Father, according to our medicine-craft thine infirmity is incurable, and I believe that either in the end of September or on the fourth of the Nones of October, thou wilt die." Then blessed Francis, lying on his bed, spread his hands out to the Lord with very great devotion and reverence, and said with great joy of mind and body, "Welcome, my Sister Death." \*

Saint Francis, 1182-1226. Italian monk, preacher.  
*The Mirror of Perfection*, Trans. R. Steele.

If one lives for a long time immersed in God's grace there stretches across one's inner soul a calm which nothing can destroy. When, guarded by five officers of the law, I was thrown into prison pending trial, when marching with a mob of 15,000 people along a street seething with riot, when threatened with daggers in the hands of desperadoes, the jewel of peace, hidden away in my soul, was in no wise disturbed. When in an automobile crash the city tram rumbled on over me, that inner peace was still maintained. Even when a chronic eye disease threatened to rob me of my sight I experienced no swells on the calm sea of my soul.

Polished like a mirror, this calm reflects in itself every passing circumstance of life, but its occurrence leaves no turbidity on the surface. Criticism, abuse, ridicule, slander, all these simply serve as polishing powder in the process of further burnishing the mirror-like calm in my heart.

Even I myself stand amazed at this calm! This tranquillity within is so composed and sustained that it borders on the absurd. Neither the earth's quaking nor the alarm of fire nor blizzard nor avalanche can shake it. I have seen too much that is abominable and witnessed too much of sorrow. The result is that even cruelty cannot ruffle this calm.

One thing and one thing only can break up this tranquillity of soul. That is deep emotion issuing from love-stirred tears. This calm, which neither wickedness nor danger can disturb, is mightily moved when I behold pure love attempting to redeem the world.\*

Kagawa, 1888-. Japanese social reformer, labor leader, Christian minister.

As quoted in *Kagawa* by William Axling.

### The True Man

What is meant by "The True Man"? The True men of old did not reject (the views of) the few; they did not seek to accomplish (their ends) like heroes (before others); they did not lay plans to attain those ends. Being such, though they might make mistakes, they had no occasion for repentance; though they might succeed, they had no self-complacency. Being such, they could ascend the loftiest heights without fear; they could pass through water into fire without being burnt; so it was that by their knowledge they ascended to and reached the Tao. The True men of old did not dream when they had slept, had no anxiety when they awoke, and did not care that their food should be pleasant. Their breathing came deep and silently. The breathing of the true man comes (evenly) from his heels, while men generally breathe (only) from their throats. When men are defeated in argument, their words come from their gullets as if they were vomiting. Where lusts and desires are deep, the springs of the Heavenly are shallow. The True men of old knew nothing of the love of life or the hatred of death. Entrance into life occasioned them no joy; the exit from it awakened no resistance.

Laotzu, Born about 604 B.C. Chinese philosopher, founder of Taoism.

*Texts of Taoism*, Trans. J. Legge.

If we had not the history to confirm the fact, it would be almost impossible to believe that a priest like Abbe Vianney—so austere, so humble, so surrounded by the veneration of all who were witnesses of his extraordinary holiness—could fall a victim to hatred and calumny. But he was to pass through this supreme ordeal which God reserves for the final purification of His servants.

Even good priests wrote to M. Vianney in insolent and abusive

terms. "A man who knows so little theology as you ought never to sit in the confessional!" was the opening sentence of one of these letters. And the Cure of Ars, who was forced to leave unanswered hundreds of letters full of reverent entreaty, found time to answer this rude missive, and to thank the writer. "Oh, how I ought to love you, my dear and much respected brother!" he exclaims; "you are one of the few who know me thoroughly. Help me, therefore, to obtain the favor I have been so long seeking—namely, to be replaced in my position here, which I am indeed unworthy to occupy on account of my ignorance; and that I may be free to withdraw into a corner and weep over my sins."

Once a friend exclaimed to him, indignantly: "Such calumnies could only be invented by the most perverted of men!" But the holy man answered gently: "Oh, no, they are not perverted; they are not wicked at all; it is simply that they found me out and know me better than others!" But when his friend retorted, "M. le Cure, how could they reproach you with having led a bad life?" the servant of God replied with a sigh: "Alas! my life has always been bad. I led in those days the kind of life I am leading now. I was always good for nothing." And so it was all through the trial: to unreasonable hate and devilish rancor he opposed the meekness and charity of an angel.

In after years a brother priest, who had been witness of the persecution he had undergone, asked M. Vianney if it had not troubled the peace of his soul. "What!" cried the servant of God, while a heavenly smile shone upon his face, "the cross trouble the peace of my soul! Why, it is the cross that gives peace to the world! It is the cross that must bring it into our hearts. All our misery comes from our not loving it."

The Cure of Ars was spared, it is true, in this crisis that trial which adds such unutterable anguish to every other pain: he was not deprived of the sense of divine consolation. Another person, in alluding to this time of trial, asked him if he remembered having ever been so unhappy under any other affliction. He replied: "I was not unhappy under it at all. I was never so happy in my life."

During the eight years that slander and hate were let loose upon



him the conversions and extraordinary spiritual graces obtained at Ars increased beyond all calculation.\*

Kathleen O'Meara, American writer.  
*Cure of Ars.*

We live happily indeed, not hating those who hate us! among men who hate us we dwell free from hatred! We live happily indeed, free from ailments among the ailing! among men who are ailing let us dwell free from ailments!

We live happily indeed, free from greed among the greedy! among men who are greedy let us dwell free from greed!

We live happily indeed, though we call nothing our own! We shall be like the bright gods, feeding on happiness!

Victory breeds hatred, for the conquered is unhappy. He who has given up both victory and defeat, he, the contented, is happy.

Attributed to Gautama Buddha. 600 B.C.  
*The Dhammapada*, Trans. F. Max Müller.

I am going to say to you that a human being can live without complaint in an ice-house built for seals at a temperature of fifty-five degrees below zero, and you are going to doubt my word. Yet what I say is true. Father Henry lived in a hole dug out by the Eskimos in the side of a hill as a place in which to store sealmeat in summer. The earth of this hill is frozen a hundred feet down, and it is so cold that you can hardly hold your bare hand to its surface.

An Eskimo would not have lived in this hole. An igloo is a thousand times warmer, especially one built out on the sea over the water warm beneath the coat of ice. I asked Father Henry why he lived thus. He said merely that it was more convenient, and pushed me ahead of him into his cavern.

If I were to describe the interior, draw it for you inch by inch, I should still be unable to convey the reality to you. From the door to the couch opposite measured four and one half feet. Two people could not stand comfortably here, and when Father Henry said Mass I used to kneel on the couch.

The couch was a rickety wooden surface supported in the middle

by a strut, over which two caribou hides had been spread. On these three planks forming a slightly tilted surface, Father Henry slept.

No white man has anything to boast of in the Arctic, but Father Henry no longer had the little with which he had started. Whatever he had possessed on first coming out here was to him part of a forgotten past, and he referred to it as "all those things." It had helped in the beginning, but now "all that" was superfluous.

(He) lacked every object known to the civilization of the white man. "Those things make no sense here,"—and with that phrase he disposed of the subject. When I unpacked my gifts for him, rejoicing in advance over the delight they would give him, he stood by shaking his head. He took them and put them to one side, saying absentmindedly, "Very kind, very kind." His thanks were an acknowledgment of the intention: the gifts themselves had no meaning for him, no value.

When he heard confession from one of the natives, his box was the outer passage and the scene took place under the vitreous eyes of the frozen seal. In this virtual darkness, at fifty degrees below, the two men would kneel and murmur together.\*

I had been with him several days when I began to see that something was on his mind.

"Come," I said, "What is it? You have something on your mind." It must really have been preying on him for he made no attempt to evade me.

"Ah, well," he said, "You see for yourself how it is. Here you are, a layman, enduring these privations, travelling "tough"—another locution of the North—"depriving yourself of your only cheese for me. Well, if you do these things, what should I, a religious, be doing?" I stared at him. A religious, indeed! What a distance that one word suddenly placed between him and me! This man was animated and kept alive by something other than the power of nature. Life had in a sense withdrawn from him, and a thing more subtle, mysterious, had taken its place. He was doubly superior to me, by his humility and by his mystical essence as priest. "I am of the most humble extraction," he had said to me. He was a Norman

peasant, and it came to me suddenly that if he had chosen to live in this seal-hole instead of an igloo, his choice had been motivated in part by the peasant instinct to build his own sort of farmstead, even here in the Arctic. He was a direct, simple, naked soul dressed only in the seamless garment of his Christianity.

By grace of that garment, his flesh was as if it were not. When I said, for example, "It is not warm this morning," he would answer mechanically, "No, it is not warm"; but he did not feel the cold. "Cold" was to him merely a word; and if he stopped up the door, or livened up the lamp, it was for my sake he did it. He had nothing to do with "those things," and this struggle was not his struggle: he was somewhere else, living another life, fighting with other weapons. He was right and I was wrong in those moments when I rebelled against his existence and insisted rashly that he "could not live like this." I was stupid not to see, then, that he truly had no need of anything. He lived, he sustained himself, by prayer. Had he been dependent only upon human strength he would have lived in despair, been driven mad. But he called upon other forces, and they preserved him. Incredible as it will seem to the incredulous, when the blizzard was too intense to be borne, he prayed, and the wind dropped. When, one day, he was about to die of hunger—he and the single Eskimo who accompanied him—he prayed; and that night there were two seal in their net. It was childish of me to attempt to win him back to reality: he could not live with reality.

I, the "scientist," was non-existent beside this peasant mystic. He towered over me. My resources were as nothing compared to his, which were inexhaustible. His mystical vestment was shelter enough against hunger, against cold, against every assault of the physical world from which he lived apart. Once again I had been taught that the spirit was immune and irresistible, and matter corruptible and weak. There is something more than cannon in war, and something more than grub and shelter in the existence of this conqueror of the Arctic. If, seeing what I have seen, a man still refused to believe this, he would do better to stay at home, for he had proved himself no traveller.\*

When the soul uses the body as an instrument of perception, that is to say, when it uses the sense of sight or hearing or some other sense, she is dragged by the body into the region of the changeable, and wanders and is confused; the world spins round her, and she is like a drunkard, when she touches change. But when she contemplates in herself and by herself, then she passes into the other world, the region of purity, and eternity, and immortality, and unchangeableness, which are her kindred, and with them she ever lives, when she is by herself and is not let or hindered; then she ceases from her erring ways, and being in communion with the unchanging is unchanging. And this state of the soul is called wisdom.

Plato, 427-345 B.C. Greek philosopher.  
*The Phaedo*, Trans. R. Livingstone.



## CHAPTER TEN

### *Outward Creativity*

Wherever the spirit of the Lord is, there is freedom.

SAINT PAUL

Only those who are their absolute true selves in the world can fulfill their own nature; only those who fulfill their own nature can fulfill the nature of others; only those who fulfill the nature of others can fulfill the nature of things; those who fulfill the nature of things are worthy to help Mother Nature in growing and sustaining life; and those who are worthy to help Mother Nature in growing and sustaining life are the equals of Heaven and Earth.

ASCRIBED TO TSESZE <sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Trans. Ku Hungming and Lin Yutang.

## CHAPTER TEN

### *Outward Creativity*

#### BETWEEN INDIVIDUALS

#### IN PERSONAL RELATIONSHIPS

#### Love and Freedom

The night was luminous. They could see from the hill road the earth, wrinkled with hill and hollow, lying like a vast sleeping creature. The lakes in the hollows glowed like dim moonstones. Paul and his companion did not speak. They who were closer to each other than any in the world beside were yet free, and could take lonely journeys in soul sure that they would not lose the way back to each other. They stood for a while at the crest of the hill road. It was there the Avatars had met and gone on their radiant journey together. In that pause of quietness Paul became aware that the years had changed him, that he had come to be within that life which as a boy he had seen nodding at him through the transparency of air or earth. For many years he had peered through the veil but he himself, except for moments which were so transient that he was hardly aware of them until they were gone, had been outside the heavenly circle. Now something was living and breathing in him, interpenetrating consciousness, a life which was an extension of the life that breathed through those dense infinitudes. He could not now conceive of himself apart from that great unity. He knew he was, however humbly, one of the heavenly household. In that new exaltation the lights above, the earth below, were but motions of a life that was endless. He almost felt the will that impelled the earth on which he stood on its eternal round. Through earth itself as through a dusky veil the lustre of its vitality glowed. It shimmered with

ethereal colour. Space about him was dense with innumerable life. He felt an inexpressible yearning to be molten into that, into all life. He thought of that great adventure he and his friends were beginning, and what transfigurations in life and nature it would mean. What climbing of endless terraces of being! He knew out of what anguish of body and soul, through what dark martyrdoms, come the resurrection and the life, but he thought of these in peace. At last he came back to earth and to his companion. She was still brooding as he had been, her face lifted up to the skies, intent on the same depths. She was unconscious of the one by her side, and at that moment he loved her more in forgetting than in remembering him.

George William Russell, 1867-1935. British poet.  
*The Avatars.*

A simple heart will love all that is most precious on earth, husband or wife, parent or child, brother or friend in God, without marring its singleness: external things will have no attraction save inasmuch as they lead souls to Him; all exaggeration, unreality, affectation and falsehood must pass away from such an one, as the dews dry up before the sunshine. The single motive is to please God, and hence arises total indifference as to what others will say and think, so that words and actions are perfectly simple and natural, as in His Sight only. Such Christian simplicity is the very perfection of the interior life—God, His Will and pleasure its sole object.\*

Jean Nicholas Grou, 1731-1803. French Catholic priest.  
*The Hidden Life.*

### Personal Versus Purposeful Relationships

There are two very different ways in which we can enter into relations with our fellows. We can, in the first place, associate with others in order to achieve some purpose that we all share. Out of this there springs a life of social cooperation through which we can provide for our common needs, and achieve common ends. We may define this social life in terms of purposes. That is its great characteristic. There is in this field always a reason beyond the mere association for associating and cooperating in that particular way. Because of this we cannot enter into this form of relationship with



the whole of ourselves as complete persons, because the purpose is always only one of our purposes. There are others which cannot be achieved by that particular association. We cannot, therefore, live a personal life on the basis of such relationships. The whole complex of activities which are generated in this way is what we mean usually by society or by social life. But there is a second way in which we can enter into relationships with one another. We may associate purely for the purpose of expressing our whole selves to one another in mutuality and fellowship. It is difficult to find a word to express this kind of relationship which will convey its full meaning, not because there are no words, but because they have all been specialized and degraded by misuse. Friendship, fellowship, communion, love, are all in one way or another liable to convey a false or partial meaning. But what is common to them all is the idea of a relationship between us which has no purpose beyond itself; in which we associate because it is natural for human beings to share their experience, to understand one another, to find joy and satisfaction in living together; in expressing and revealing themselves to one another. If one asks why people form friendships or love one another, the question is simply unanswerable. We can only say, because it is the nature of persons to do so. They can only be themselves in that way. It is this field of human relations which constitutes what we call the personal life, and that is the right name for it. Because that is the only way in which we can live as persons at all, the only form of human life in which we can be our whole selves or our essential selves without self-suppression and self-mutilation. . . .

If two people are associated merely for what they can get out of one another it obviously is not a friendship. Two people are friends because they love one another. That is all you can say about it. If the relationship had any other reason for it we should say that one or the other of them was pretending friendship from an ulterior motive. This means in effect that friendship is a type of relationship into which people enter as persons with the whole of themselves. This is the characteristic of personal relationships. They have no ulterior motive. They are not based on particular interests. They do not serve partial and limited ends. Their value lies entirely in themselves

and for the same reason transcends all other values. And that is because they are relations of persons as persons. They are the means of living a personal life. . . .

When two people become friends they establish between themselves a relation of equality. There is and can be no functional subservience of one to the other. One cannot be the superior and the other the inferior. If the relation is one of inequality, then it is just not a personal relationship. But once a personal relationship is established the differences between the persons concerned are the stuff out of which the texture of their fellowship is woven. And provided the equal relationship is maintained, it is precisely the differences that enrich the relationship. The greater the fundamental differences between two persons are the more difficult it is to establish a fully personal relation between them, but also the more worth while the relation will be if it can be established and maintained. All great things are difficult, and this is the greatest of all.\*

John MacMurray, 1891-. Scotch Professor of Philosophy.  
*Reason and Emotion.*

### Stages of Love

Love, like God, we tend to make in our own image; and only after a long education does it seem possible for most people to be able to say without cant, "God is love." They can have no clear idea what that means at the beginning. We know now that mother-love, long romanticized as pure love, can be as selfish and savage as sensual sex love and do as much damage to its object. Probably in learning the loss of the self, which is the final achievement of that sympathy which is the understanding of the heart and that understanding which is the sympathy of the mind, we all go through the four great divisions of mankind. There is the stage where we are healthy animals and our goal is that of the Romantic Movement, the passionate love of the one lover whose presence eclipses all the rest of the world and whose absence robs life of meaning; the stage when we are reflective workers and craftsmen and look for a mate with whom to share our joy in working and appreciating fine work; the stage when we become predominantly aware of the community and strive in a life of service to find our goal in a psychophysical Utopia,

and to find in a common comradeship of "devotion to the beloved community" a true communion; and the stage when we become aware that we are "transitional creatures," that the end and meaning of our existence is to emerge into a state of consciousness which will transcend and sublimate individuality.

Anonymous.

But of deep love is the desire to give  
 More than the living touch of warmth and fire,  
 More than shy comfort of the little flesh and hands;  
 It is the need to give  
 Down to the last dark kernel of the heart,  
 Down to the final gift of mind;  
 It is a need to give you that release which comes  
 Only of understanding, and to know  
 Trust without whimpering doubt and fear.

Josephine Johnson, 1910-. American novelist, poet.  
 From the poem *September*.

#### IN MARRIAGE

To love means to decide independently to live with an equal partner, and to subordinate oneself to the formation of a new subject, a "we." This depends neither upon thinking nor upon feeling, but upon the resolution of two subjects to accept life's most difficult task, the creation of a double subject, a "we," with complete disregard for egocentricity, all prejudices, training formulas, and drives. He who has enough courage so to love finds in living with his partner the strongest positive experience imaginable—the appearance of super-personal purposes. He exchanges that part of his egocentricity which he renounces for a part of the great clarification which awaits all of us. And life reveals to him part of its meaning.

Fritz Kunkel, M.D., 1889-. German psychotherapist, author.  
*Let's Be Normal.*

A mutual sexual attraction is no proper basis for a human relationship between a man and a woman.<sup>2</sup> It is an organic thing, not

<sup>2</sup> See *Creation Continues* by Fritz Kunkel, M.D., pp. 73-79 and *The Way of All Women* by Esther Harding, M.D.

personal. What, then, is a proper basis? Love is, between any two persons. Love may or may not include sexual attraction. It may express itself in sexual desire. But sexual desire is not love. Desire is quite compatible with personal hatred, or contempt, or indifference, because it treats its object not as a person but as a means to its own satisfaction. That is the truth in the statement that doing what we want to do is not the same as doing what we ought to do.

But notice this—that mutual desire does not make things any better. It only means that each of two persons is treating the other as a means of self-satisfaction. A man and a woman may want one another passionately without either loving the other. This is true not merely of sexual desire but of all desires. A man and a woman may want one another for all sorts of reasons, not necessarily sexual, and make that mutual want the basis of marriage, without either loving the other. And, I insist, such mutual desire, whether sexual or not, is no basis of a human relationship between them. It is no basis of friendship. It is the desire to obtain possession of another person for the satisfaction of their own needs, to dare to assert the claim over another human being—"You are mine!" That is unchaste and immoral, a definite inroad upon the integrity of a fellow human being. And the fact that the desire and the claim are mutual does not make a pennyworth of difference. Mutual love is the only basis of a human relationship; and bargains and claims and promises are attempts to substitute something else; and they introduce falsity and unchastity into the relationship. No human being can have rights in another, and no human being can grant to another rights in himself or herself. That is one of the things of which I am deeply convinced.

Now take another point. There is only one safe-guard against self-deception in the face of desire, and that is emotional sincerity, or chastity. No intellectual principle, no general rule of judgment is of any use. How can a man or woman know whether they love another person or merely want them? Only by the integrity of his or her emotional life. If they have habitually been insincere in the expression of their feelings, they will be unable to tell. They will think they love when they only want another person for themselves. What is usually known as "being in love" is simply being in this condition. It blinds

us to the reality of other people; leads us to pretend about their virtues, beauties, capacities, and so forth; deprives us of the power of honest feeling and wraps us in a fog of unreality. That is no condition for any human being to be in. If you love a person you love him or her in their stark reality, and refuse to shut your eyes to their defects and errors. For to do that is to shut your eyes to their needs.

Chastity, or emotional sincerity, is an emotional grasp of reality. "Falling in love" and "being in love" are inventions of romantic sentimentality, the inevitable result of the deceit and pretence and suppression from which we suffer. Love cannot abide deceit, or pretence or unreality. It rests only in the reality of the loved one, demands the integrity of its object, demands that the loved one should be himself, so that it may love him for himself.

In the second place, between two human beings who love one another, the sexual relationship is one of the possible expressions of love, as it is one of the possible co-operations in love—more intimate, more fundamental, more fraught with consequences inner and outer, but essentially one of the expressions of love, not fundamentally different in principle from any others, as regards its use. It is neither something high and holy, something to venerate and be proud of, nor is it something low and contemptible, to be ashamed of. It is a simple ordinary organic function to be used like all the others, for the expression of personality in the service of love. This is very important. If you make it a thing apart, to be kept separate from the ordinary functions of life, to be mentioned only in whispers; if you exalt it romantically or debase it with feelings of contempt (and if you do the one you will find that you are doing the other at the same time; just as to set women on a pedestal is to assert their inferiority and so insult their humanity): if you single out sex in that way as something very special and wonderful and terrible, you merely exasperate it and make it uncontrollable. That is what our society has done. It has produced in us a chronic condition of quite unnatural exasperation. There is a vast organisation in our civilization for the stimulation of sex—clothes, pictures, plays, books, advertisements and so on. They keep up in us a state of sexual hypersensitiveness, as a result of which we greatly overestimate the strength and violence of

natural sexuality. The most powerful stimulant of sex is the effort to suppress it. There is only one cure—to take it up simply, frankly and naturally into the circle of our activities; and only chastity, the ordinary sincerity of the emotional life, can enable us to do so.

Sex, then, must fall within the life of personality, and be an expression of love. For unlike all our other organic functions it is essentially mutual. If it is to be chaste, therefore, it must fall within a real unity of two persons—within essential friendship. And it must be a necessary part of that unity. The ideal of chastity is a very high and difficult one, demanding an emotional unity between a man and a woman which transcends egoism and selfish desire. In such a unity sex ceases to be an appetite—a want to be satisfied—and becomes a means of communion, simple and natural. Mutual self-satisfaction is incompatible with chastity, which demands the expression of a personal unity already secured. Indeed, it seems to me, that it is only when such a unity in friendship has reached a point where it is shut up to that expression of itself that it is completely chaste. How can two people know that their love demands such an expression? Only through a mutual chastity, a complete emotional sincerity between them. That alone can be the touch-stone of reality. And the law of reality in the relationship of persons is this: “‘the integrity of persons is inviolable.’ You shall not use a person for your own ends, or indeed for any ends, individual or social. To use another person is to violate his personality by making an object of him; and in violating the integrity of another you violate your own.” In all enjoyment there is a choice between enjoying the other and enjoying yourself through the instrumentality of the other. The first is the enjoyment of love, the second is the enjoyment of lust. When people enjoy themselves through each other, that is merely mutual lust. They do not meet as persons at all, their reality is lost. They meet as ghosts of themselves and their pleasure is a ghostly pleasure that cannot begin to satisfy a human soul, and which only vitiates its capacity for reality.\*



## CHAPTER ELEVEN

### *Outward Creativity* (continued)

Every individual is involved in interaction with his fellows which reaches down to the innermost recesses of his private life. Hence social and private religious living are identical.

HENRY NELSON WIEMAN

We may risk a generalization and say that at any given moment of history it is the function of associations of devoted individuals to undertake tasks which clear-sighted people perceive to be necessary, but which nobody else is willing to perform.

ALDOUS HUXLEY



## CHAPTER ELEVEN

### *Outward Creativity* (CONTINUED)

#### BETWEEN THE INDIVIDUAL AND SOCIETY

##### IN ATTITUDE

###### INTERDEPENDENCE

No man is an Iland, intire of itselfe; every man is a peece of the Continent, a part of the maine; if a Clod bee washed away by the Sea, Europe is the lesse, as well as if a Promontorie were; as well as if a Mannor of thy friends or of thine owne were; any man's death diminishes me, because I am involved in Mankinde; And therefore never send to know for whom the bell tolls; It tolls for thee.

John Donne, 1573-1631. English poet, divine.  
*Devotions upon Emergent Occasions.*

The constructive critic, maintains organic fellowship with other members of society even when maladjusted to them at the level of the mores: for he lives in vital conscious membership in the community of interdependence and need. This establishes a bond between him and others which is stronger and deeper than that of the mores. It is a bond which makes him meek before the lowly and fearless before the mighty: for he knows his need and their need is the same and that all men are helpless without one another. Full consciousness of this interdependence saves him in three ways. It enables him to keep his mental balance even when opposed to the mores of his fellow men; it gives him guidance and inspiration for the reconstruction of the social system; it comforts and sustains him by a great fellowship. Even when men in their blindness and misunderstanding

have cast him out, he knows he has not lost them from this fellowship. Furthermore this community cheers and sustains him because it is the promise and potency of that richer, better life and more adequately organized society for which he works.

Henry Nelson Wieman, 1884-. American philosopher, theologian, educator.  
*Methods of Private Religious Living.*

It is the duty of us who are strong to put up with the weaknesses of those who are immature, and not just suit ourselves. Everyone of us must try to please his neighbor, to do him good, and help in his development.

Saint Paul, first century Christian apostle.  
*Letter to the Romans*, Trans. E. J. Goodspeed.

A sound man's heart is not shut within itself  
But is open to other people's hearts:  
I find good people good,  
And I find bad people good  
If I am good enough;  
I trust men of their word,  
And I trust liars  
If I am true enough;  
I feel the heart beats of others  
Above my own  
If I am enough of a father,  
Enough of a son.

Laotzu, Born about 604 B.C., Chinese philosopher, founder of Taoism.  
*The Way of Life*, Trans. Witter Bynner.

He turns pure Spirit. Utter joy  
Creeps on to tranquillize  
His mind who seeks such discipline,  
While sin with passion dies.

Sin vanishes for him who clings  
to training such as this;  
At one with Spirit, he attains  
With ease and endless bliss.

*The Outcomes*

He sees himself in every life,  
 Sees every life that lives  
 Within himself; and so to all  
 A like emotion gives.

The New Testament of Hindu Scriptures, first century B.C.  
*Bhagavad-Gita*, Trans. A. W. Ryder.

To consider mankind otherwise than brethren, to think favors are peculiar to one nation and exclude others plainly supposes a darkness in the understanding. For, as God's love is universal, so where the mind is sufficiently influenced by it, it begets a likeness of itself, and the heart is enlarged towards all men.

John Woolman, 1720-1772. American Quaker.  
*Journal*, Whittier Edition.

My idea of nationalism is that my country may become free, that if need be the whole of the country may die, so that the human race may live. There is no room for race hatred here. . . . I do want to think in terms of the whole world. My patriotism includes the good of mankind in general. . . . Isolated independence is not the goal of the world States; it is voluntary interdependence. The better mind of the world desires today not absolutely independent States, warring one against another, but a federation of friendly, interdependent States. The consummation of that event may be far off. I want to make no grand claim for our country. But I see nothing grand or impossible about our expressing our readiness for universal interdependence rather than independence. I desire the ability to be totally independent without asserting the independence.<sup>1</sup> \*

Mohandas K. Gandhi, 1869-. Indian statesman.

When Oberlin first came to the Valley of Stone in 1767, which was a little Protestant island in a Roman Catholic ocean—Catholics and Protestants were fighting each other carrying on the old Thirty Years War, no longer of course, with torch and sword, but with petty persecutions.

<sup>1</sup> As quoted in *The Discovery of India*, by Jawaharlal Nehru.

In the course of time Oberlin discovered as he went about the Valley, that the chief barrier between himself and the Roman Catholic residents was the name "Protestant." This word was looked upon with superstitious horror. Was not a "Protestant" an opponent of the Holy Church? The chief adversary of the Church was Satan, therefore the Protestant, as an antagonist of the Church, must be a minion of the devil himself.

Oberlin thought the matter over. "Martin Luther," he explained to Catholics who were puzzled that a good man like himself could belong to such an evil party, "protested against the public sale of indulgences by an extravagant Pope. We do not now protest against the public sale of indulgences, because hawkers are no longer going about our village offering indulgences for sale. Martin Luther did well to fight against that evil, and the reform he effected has benefited even Roman Catholics today. But we are called, not to follow Martin Luther or any other person than Jesus himself. So, my friends, why should we let words stand between us? I am working to spread the Gospel—so I am an "evangelical." The gospels, although they do not mention the word "Rome," do command us to spread their religion throughout the world—it is a universal or "catholic" religion—so I can also call myself a "Catholic."

Oberlin would then hand his Roman Catholic friend a copy of the New Testament, from which he could see for himself that the fruits of religion were "love, joy, peace, long suffering." Yes, that was what they both were seeking. So, having reached this point of mutual understanding, Oberlin removed the word "Protestant" from the Valley churches, naming them instead "Catholic Evangelical."

At the close of the French Revolution, the fact that Oberlin had remained in his parish when most of the clergy were in hiding or fleeing for their lives, gave the Waldsbach minister immense prestige. There had been a number of years during which any person in the Valley of Stone who was in need of the consolations, either of religion or of charity, could go to Oberlin, since there was no other religious counsellor or helper to be found. As soon as the churches were allowed to reopen their doors, both Catholics and Protestants

began to crowd into the churches where Oberlin preached. Both Lutherans and Roman Catholics recognized that the Waldsbach minister belonged in a class by himself. The Lutherans refrained, therefore, from summoning him to appear before the consistory to answer for his heresies; and, on the other hand, Catholic priests who had found Oberlin's home a house of refuge in their day of danger, could hardly tell their parishioners that if they crossed the threshold of the Waldsbach church they would risk the safety of their souls.

An English clergyman, Rev. F. Cunningham, who visited the Valley of Stone, was astounded to find that Oberlin was administering the sacraments to Catholics, Lutherans and Calvinists, at the same time. Because the members of these different organizations would not eat the same bread, the Waldsbach minister had, on the plate, bread of different kinds—wafer, leavened and unleavened. "In everything the same spirit appeared," said this amazed visitor, "and it extended not only to his Catholic, but also to his Jewish neighbors, and made him many friends among them all." \*

Marshall Dawson, 1880—. American writer.  
*Oberlin: Protestant Saint.*<sup>2</sup>

After long study and experience I have come to these conclusions: that (1) all religions are true, (2) all religions have some error in them, (3) all religions are almost as dear to me as my own Hinduism. My veneration for other faiths is the same as for my own faith. Consequently, the thought of conversion is impossible. . . . Our prayer for others ought never to be: "God! give them the light Thou hast given to me!" but: "Give them all the light and truth they need for their highest development!"<sup>3</sup>

Mohandas K. Gandhi, 1869—. Indian statesman, mystic.

## LOVE

Imagine a circle and in the middle of it a center; and from this center forthgoing radii-rays. The farther these radii go from the center, the more divergent and remote from one another they be-

<sup>2</sup> John Frederick Oberlin, 1740-1826—French minister, educator, founder of the first Infant Schools.

<sup>3</sup> As quoted in *The Discovery of India*, by Jawaharlal Nehru.

come; conversely, the nearer they approach to the center, the more they come together among themselves. Now suppose that this circle is the world: the very middle of it, God; and the straight lines (radii) going from the center to the circumference, or from the circumference to the center, are the paths of the life of men. And in this case also, to the extent that the saints approach the middle of the circle, desiring to approach God, do they, by so doing, come nearer to God and to one another . . . Reason similarly with regard to their withdrawing—when they withdraw from God, they withdraw also from one another, and by so much as they withdraw from one another do they withdraw from God. Such is the attribute of love; to the extent that we are distant from God and do not love Him, each of us is far from his neighbour also. If we love God, then to the extent that we approach to Him through love of Him, do we unite in love with our neighbors; and the closer our union with them, the closer is our union with God also.

Abba Dorotheus, seventh century. An Eastern orthodox mystic.

If anyone says, "I love God," and yet hates his brother, he is a liar; for whoever does not love his brother whom he has seen cannot love God whom he has not seen. This is the command that we get from him, that whoever loves God must love his brother also.

Jesus of Nazareth.  
*New Testament*, Trans. E. J. Goodspeed.

By love, I do not mean any natural tenderness, which is more or less in people, according to their constitutions; but I mean a larger principle of the soul, founded in reason and piety, which makes us tender, kind, and benevolent to all our fellow-creatures. It is this love, that loves all things in God, that becomes a holy principle of all great and good actions.

If I hate or despise any one man in the world, I hate something that God cannot hate, and despise that which he loves. And though many people may appear to us ever so sinful, odious, or extravagant in their conduct, we must never look upon that, as the least motive

for any contempt or disregard of them; but look upon them with the greater compassion, as being in the most pitiable condition that can be.

Hatred of sin, which does not fill the heart with the softest, tenderest affections towards persons miserable in it, is the servant of sin. A man naturally fancies that it is his own exceeding love of virtue that makes him not able to bear with those that want it. And when he abhors one man, despises another, and cannot bear the name of a third, he supposes it all to be a proof of his own high sense of virtue, and just hatred of sin.

Now we are to love our neighbour, that is, all mankind, not because they are wise, holy, virtuous, or well-behaved. For if their virtue or goodness were the reason of our being obliged to love people, we should have no rule to proceed by; because though some people's virtues or vices are very notorious, yet, generally speaking, we are but very ill judges of the virtue and merit of other people.

Let us farther consider what that love is which we owe to our neighbour. It is to love him as ourselves. Now that self-love which is just and reasonable, keeps us constantly tender, compassionate, and well-affected towards ourselves; if therefore you do not feel these kind dispositions towards all other people, you may be assured that you are not in that state of charity, which is the very life and soul of Christian piety. You know how it hurts you, to be made the jest and ridicule of other people; how it grieves you to be robbed of your reputation: if therefore you expose others to scorn and contempt in any degree; if it pleases you to see or hear of their frailties and infirmities; or if you are only loth to conceal their faults, you are so far from loving such people as yourself, that you may be justly supposed to have as much hatred for them, as you have love for yourself.

But now, if the want of a true charity be so great a want, that, as St. Paul saith, it renders our greatest virtues but empty sounds, and tinkling cymbals, how highly does it concern us to study every art, and practise every method of raising our souls to this state of charity? It is for this reason, that you are here desired, not to let this hour of prayer pass, without a full and solemn supplication to God, for all

the instances of an universal love and benevolence to all mankind, for no love is holy, or religious, till it becomes universal.\*

William Law, 1686-1761. English clergyman, mystic.  
*Serious Call to a Devout and Holy Life.*

### Duty versus Love

The substitution of duty for a living creative love has drained all meaning from the precept "bear ye one another's burdens." The law of Christ was a law of joyous giving and receiving in human relationships. Here we see the danger of letting a living word crystallize into a Mosaic law. Every sacrifice must be newborn of a fresh and creative impulse. Wherever one sacrifices life for another through a desire for self-righteousness or for sterile duty, there are piled up conscious virtue and buried resentment which leave one with a sense of loss and futility instead of a revivifying feeling of attainment. Where the sacrifice is consciously accepted because of a realization of new values, deeper relationship, greater consciousness, fuller life, the result is a release of energy.

Frances G. Wickes, 1882-. American psychotherapist.  
*The Inner World of Childhood.*

It is easy for us to love those close to us—"What father among you, if asked by his son for a loaf will hand him a stone?" Even the evil behave differently from that. The point which Jesus makes about love is its inclusiveness—inclusive of those who think differently from you, belong to a different class (especially those regarded as social outcasts), the people of different race from you. These are the ones with whom we are to deal as equal with ourselves.

But how can we? It is one of the most arresting facts about the love preached in the Bible that it is not something which can be manufactured. We cannot make ourselves love. How then are we able to behave like this, or is the impossible asked of us? Love, like peace, is a *product*, a *result* in the Bible. Peace is the product of justice; love is the result of an identification—the identifying of our wills with the will of God, and our fate with that of all men, however obscure, fallen and needy. To love God with the totality of devotion called for by Jesus is to commit one's self to God and his



purpose. To love your neighbor as yourself is to stand equal, with no claims of special privilege, with every living creature. Hence Jesus' shocking behaviour in eating and drinking with publicans, harlots, and those racially unacceptable as equals in the best Jerusalem society. The point about the story of the Good Samaritan which must have been very surprising and challenging to its hearers was that a Samaritan, who was racially and religiously an outcast, was more acceptable in the sight of God than a priest or Levite, because he behaved toward an unknown person as if he were a member of his own family. Unfortunately, we have tended to interpret the story in Christian circles as meaning that to love is to help the needy. The fact that the Jews had a magnificent system of helping their own needy, would have robbed such a statement of any point. Nor does it explain Paul's statement that if you give everything you have in charity, it avails you nothing unless you have love. . . .

Interdependence, the acknowledgment that we all desperately need each other, is one of the most important contributions Christianity has to make to social and economic problems. In his letter to the Corinthians, Paul says (in the part immediately preceding his statement about love): "If the foot were to say 'because I am not the hand I do not belong to the body,' that does not make it no part of the body. If the ear were to say, 'because I am not the eye, I do not belong to the body,' that does not make it no part of the body. If the body were all eye, where would hearing be? . . . The eye cannot say to the hand, 'I have no need of you,' quite the contrary." (I Corinthians 12:15-21). We are inescapably all members of one another. A modern expression of this same truth is contained in Vincent Sheean's magnificent estimate of Rayna Prohme in *Personal History*.<sup>4</sup> "She felt a genuine relationship to all forms of human life. That was the essence of it. To her the Chinese coolie was another part of the whole life, rich, various, cruel and immense, that she shared to the extent of her limits in space and time. She could not see a Chinese coolie beaten and half starved, reduced to the level of the beasts, without feeling herself also beaten and half starved, degraded and oppressed; and the part of her that rebelled

<sup>4</sup> p. 270.

against this horror (her mind and spirit) was inflexibly resolved, by now, never to lie down under the monstrous system of the world. She was—to use Gerald Heard's word—"co-conscious" with all other parts of the human race. Man's inhumanity to man seemed to her a great deal more than that; it was an inhumanity of one part of the same body to another. The Shanghai entrepreneurs who employed thousands of Chinese men, women and children at starvation wages for twelve and fourteen hours a day were, to her, like the hands of a body cutting off its legs."

This is love—not saving your own skin, but hungering and thirsting after righteousness; knowing that you cannot have real security yourself while others are insecure.\*

Rose Terlin, contemporary American, editor, writer.  
*Christian Faith and Social Action.*

In Christian love one can allow the interests of the enemy and the alien to enter appreciative apprehension. This intuitive awareness and sympathetic understanding of the concerns of the other, across the barrier of hate, alienation, foreign culture, and racial difference, is a gift of God's grace. Only when the demands of creativity are sovereign over all other demands in one's life can one be sufficiently open, receptive, and responsive to permit this kind of love.

With this interpretation, not only is Christian love unendurable, it is destructive and evil to anyone who does not first love God with heart and soul and mind and strength. Only then can he love his neighbor as himself, however alien the interests of the neighbor may be. The distinctive mark of Christian love is precisely this duality and conflict of interests which it alone can tolerate. If others than Christians display this kind of love, we can only rejoice and say that this is what we mean by "Christian love," even though the label is not always accurate. Certainly, this kind of love is rarely found among professing Christians.

Only by loving persons who stand in radical contrast to all that I have ever been can I gain access to the wide area of value yielded by this diversity of interests added to my own. In time, if I am sufficiently committed to the creative power in life, these alien

interests may be integrated positively or negatively into the scope of my personality and its world. If integrated positively, I and my world are so transformed that these interests and persons previously so destructive to my personal organization become in some way sustaining. If integrated negatively, I and my world are so transformed that these interests and persons are deeply imbedded in my concern but are forever opposed to me and all that I would support.

One may ask: What good is Christian love under such circumstances? To be sure, it yields suffering and struggle and can never bring harmony under the circumstances mentioned. But it is not nonsensical on that account, and it is not without its own glorious good, tragic to the uttermost though it be. The good it yields is that magnificent spread and vividness of qualitative meaning, only possible with such love, connecting persons and strivings into a single glowing web of mutual reference, where cold indifference or instrumental connection alone could otherwise prevail. This suffering glory yields a vividness of contrast between extremes beyond the compass of any other outreach of the human spirit.\*

Henry Nelson Wieman, Contemporary philosopher and educator.  
*The Source of Human Good.*

If you love only those who love you, what merit is there in that? For even godless people love those who love them. And if you help only those who help you, what merit is there in that? Even godless people act in that way. And if you lend only to people from whom you expect to get something, what merit is there in that? Even godless people lend to godless people, meaning to get it back again in full. But love your enemies, and help them and lend to them, never despairing, and you will be richly rewarded, and you will be sons of the Most High, for he is kind even to the ungrateful and the wicked. You must be merciful, just as your Father is.

Jesus of Nazareth.  
*New Testament*, Trans. E. J. Goodspeed.

The cynic, who goes into the world determined to trust men no further than he can see them and to use them as pawns in his own

game, will find that experience confirms his prejudice; for to such a man men will not shew the finer sides of their nature. The Christian, who goes into the world full of love and trust, will equally find that experience confirms his "prejudice," for to him men will shew the finer and more sensitive sides of their nature, and even where there was no generosity his love and trust will, at least sometimes, create it. But though each finds his view verified, the latter has the truer view, for he sees all that the other sees and more beside.

William Temple, 1881-1944. Archbishop of Canterbury.  
*Readings in St. John's Gospel.*

Let a man overcome anger by love, let him overcome evil by good;  
let him overcome the greedy by liberality, the liar by truth!

Attributed to Gautama Buddha—600 B.C.  
*The Dhammapada*, Trans. F. Max Müller.

If one forsakes love and fearlessness,  
forsakes restraint and reserve power,  
forsakes following behind and rushes in front,  
He is dead!

For love is victorious in attack,  
And invulnerable in defense.  
Heaven arms with love  
Those it would not see destroyed.

Laotzu, Born about 604 B.C. Chinese philosopher.  
*The Book of Tao*, Trans. Lin Yutang.

#### SENSITIVITY

But if someone who is rich sees his brother in need and closes his heart against him, how can he have any love for God in his heart? Dear children, let us love not with words or lips only but in reality and truth.

Jesus of Nazareth.  
*New Testament*, Trans. E. J. Goodspeed.

### Sensitiveness to Inequalities

We live in a society which is shot through with a major tension between owner and worker. "Had we deliberately planned," says Professor Slichter of Harvard, "an industrial system which would create intense conflict between capital and labor, we could scarcely have devised one which would have established this result more completely than does the existing economic order."

Yet this same economic order seems to take every precaution to isolate these two classes. They live in different parts of the city. They go to different clubs, political meetings, churches, schools. They do not meet, except by accident.

An average group in an average church had just listened to one who had spent a good deal of time in a Canadian relief camp. He described in some detail the conditions: the absence of home life; the dullness of the daily routine; the emptiness of the future ahead; the increasing pressure toward cheap diversion in drugs or perversions. At the end of his talk questions are in order. Up speaks a worthy matron, kindly, dignified, well-fed. "Well, after all, these men have food, clothes, shelter, light, and twenty cents a day. What more can we do for them? What more do they want?"

She is a great worker in the church. She "kills herself" making sandwiches for church picnics. She is a great believer in missions, and spends many a winter afternoon cutting out dolls and clothes for the Fiji Islanders who are served by the church missionary. Her concern excludes the seven hundred men beaten into vice and despair three miles from her door.

Now it is no use blaming this woman's personal morality for her insensitiveness. It is the conditions of her life, not her hard-heartedness, which account for her self-righteousness. . . .

Sensitiveness is not a matter of mere intention; it is a matter of community of life. Jesus was sensitive to the publican and the prostitute, as the Pharisee was not. He achieved that sensitiveness in sharing their life, eating at their table, moving freely in their company. . . .

Community of life, as Jesus practiced it, and as we must find it today, was not charity. Charity does not enlarge our experience; it only confirms our preconceptions. It cannot create sensitiveness.

Sensitiveness demands a lurking disquiet, an openness and willingness to learn, bred of humility. It is killed by self-righteousness. And charity makes for self-righteousness. I keep my economic superiority, if for no other reason, at least because of my "responsibility" to the poor.

Like the capitalist who feels something of a public benefactor in "giving employment," so every one who contributes to charity finds a social justification for his privilege. Charity establishes a relation of generous contributor and grateful recipient which is both socially and morally false. It is socially false, because in a healthy economy the pauperism which makes this relation necessary would not exist; every one would have the right to work, and no one the right to gratuities. It is morally false, because only between equals can there be generosity without condescension and gratitude without servility.

Only one thing can meet the demands of religious sensitiveness in a society of economic castes: participation of members of all classes on a common footing, in common protest against the present separations, and the system which creates them; in the struggle for civil liberties, for peace, for the rights of organized labor, for the rights of the unemployed. Even there the old distinctions will trail us, and economic differences of language, manner, and social standing will mar our perfect togetherness. But as comrades in the same cause we can do penance for our father's sins which have divided us from our brothers; we can be humble, eager to learn from those whose suffering has taught them many things from which our own privilege has spared us. As we work together we shall learn the trust and respect, without which there can be neither love nor understanding.

Sensitiveness is the receptive side of religious character. It is the openness of one's spirit, the largeness of one's vision, the practical steps one is willing to take to maintain the growth of that awareness.\*

Gregory Vlastos.

*From Planning the Future with Youth.*

And yet, the life of an honest man must be an apostasy and a perpetual desertion. The honest man must be a perpetual renegade; the life of an honest man must be a perpetual infidelity. For the man

who wishes to remain faithful to truth must make himself continually unfaithful to all the continual, successive, indefatigable renascent errors. And the man who wishes to remain faithful to justice must make himself continually unfaithful to inexhaustibly triumphant injustices.

Charles Péguy, 1873-1913. French writer.  
*Charles Péguy*. Trans. A. and J. Green.

Now when some who have never experienced hard labour themselves live in fulness on the labour of others, there is often a danger of their not having a right feeling of the labourers' condition and of being thereby disqualified to judge candidly in their case, not knowing what they themselves would desire, were they to labour hard from one year to another to raise the necessities of life. . . . It is good for those who live in fulness to think seriously with themselves. Am I influenced by true charity in fixing all my demands? Have I no desire to support myself in expensive customs; because my acquaintances live in such customs?

To see their fellow-creatures under difficulties to which they are in no degree accessory tends to awaken tenderness in the minds of all reasonable people, but if we consider the conditions of those who are depressed in answering our demands, who labour for us out of our sight while we pass our time in fulness, and consider also that much less than we demand would supply us with things really useful, what heart will not relent, or what reasonable man can refrain from mitigating that grief of which he himself is the cause?

They who enter deeply into these considerations and live under the weight of them will feel these things so heavy and their ill effects so extensive that the necessity of attending singly to divine wisdom will be evident; and will thereby be directed in the right use of things in opposition to the customs of the times; and will be supported to bear patiently the reproaches attending singularity.

He who hath been a stranger among unkind people, or under the government of those who were hard-hearted, has experienced this feeling; but a person who hath never felt the weight of misapplied power comes not to this knowledge but by an inward

tenderness, in which the heart is prepared to sympathise with others.\*

John Woolman, 1720-1772. American Quaker.  
*Journal.*

### Sensitiveness to Our Common Liability

We civilised people have been spoilt. If any one of us is ill the doctor comes at once. If an operation is necessary, the door of some hospital or other opens to us immediately. But let every one reflect on the meaning of the fact that out here (Africa) millions and millions live without help or hope of it. Every day thousands and thousands endure the most terrible sufferings though medical science could avert them. Every day there prevails in many and many a far-off hut a despair which we could banish.

Believing it, as I do, to be my life's task to fight on behalf of the sick under far off stars, I appeal to the sympathy which Jesus and religion generally call for, but at the same time I call to my help also our most fundamental ideas and reasonings. We ought to see the work that needs doing not as a mere "good work," but as a duty that must not be shirked.

Ever since the world's far-off lands were discovered, what has been the conduct of the white peoples to the coloured ones? What is the meaning of the simple fact that this and that people has died out, that others are dying out, and that the condition of others is getting worse and worse as a result of their discovery by men who professed to be followers of Jesus? Who can describe the injustice and the cruelties that in the course of centuries they have suffered at the hands of Europeans? Who can measure the misery produced among them by the fiery drinks and hideous diseases that we have taken to them. If a record could be compiled of all that has happened between the white and the coloured races, it would make a book—which the reader would have to turn over unread, because its content would be too horrible.

We and our civilization are burdened, really, with a great debt. We are not free to confer benefits on these men, or not, as we please: it is our duty. Anything we give them is not benevolence but atone-



ment. For every one who scattered injury some one ought to go out to take help, and when we have done all that is in our power, we shall not have atoned for the thousandth part of our guilt. That is the foundation from which all deliberations about "works of mercy" out here must begin.\*

Albert Schweitzer, M.D., 1875-. German musician, missionary, author.  
*On the Edge of the Primeval Forest*, Trans. C. T. Campion.

#### FORGIVENESS

And so throughout eternity  
I forgive you, you forgive me;  
As our dear Redeemer said,  
This is the Wine, this is the Bread.

William Blake, 1747-1827. English poet, artist, mystic.

The Christian story is that, whatever the inadequacies of forgiveness and love may be in the operations of human justice, men ultimately face divine forgiveness as well as divine wrath. The Christ upon the cross is the point of illumination where the ultimate mercy is apprehended. It is not a mercy which cancels out the divine justice; nor does it prove the divine justice to be merely love. There is a hard and terrible facet to justice which stands in contradiction to love. It is not for that reason evil. Justice is good and punishment is necessary. Yet justice alone does not move men to repentance. The inner core of their rebellion is not touched until they behold the executor of judgment suffering with and for the victim of punishment. This is the meaning of "atonement" as apprehended by faith. It is the final meaning and the final mystery of the relation of God to man.

Reinhold Niebuhr, 1892-. American theologian, educator, author.  
*Discerning the Signs of the Times*.

Forgiving love is a possibility only for those who know that they are not good, who feel themselves in need of divine mercy, who live in a dimension deeper and higher than that of moral idealism, feel

themselves as well as their fellow men convicted of sin by a holy God and know that the differences between the good man and the bad man are insignificant in his sight. When life is lived in this dimension the chasms which divide men are bridged not directly, not by resolving the conflicts on the historical levels, but by the sense of an ultimate unity in, and common dependence upon, the realm of transcendence. For this reason the religious ideal of forgiveness is more profound and more difficult than the rational virtue of tolerance.

Reinhold Niebuhr, 1892-. American theologian, educator, author.  
*Interpretation of Christian Ethics.*

It is not easy to step from a higher position to a lower, and be one with that position in the act of forgiveness. It is much easier to act as judge and keep one's own invulnerable position. God takes no position, and who is man to say that he speaks and acts for God? And they who judge do it in order to escape the thrusts of Reality. Perhaps they climb the citadel of judgment in order to denounce that which in themselves is a need, a desire, a frustration, or a fear. How much more profitable it would be to deal with the evil within themselves honestly. One knows only of a few instances where the judged became the forgiver, for usually pressure begets pressure. Where this forgiveness is possible God surely is at work.\*

L. M. N.

And the scribes and the Pharisees bring a woman taken in adultery; and having set her in the midst, they say unto him, "Teacher, this woman hath been taken in adultery, in the very act. Now in the law Moses commanded us to stone such: what then sayest thou of her?"

And this they said, trying him, that they might have whereof to accuse him.

But Jesus stooped down, and with his finger wrote on the ground. But when they continued asking him, he lifted up himself, and said unto them, "He that is without sin among you, let him first cast a stone at her." And again he stooped down, and with his fingers

wrote on the ground. And they, when they heard it, went out one by one, beginning from the eldest, even unto the last: and Jesus was left alone, and the woman, where she was, in the midst. And Jesus lifted up himself, and said unto her, "Woman, where are they? did no man condemn thee?" And she said, "No man, Master." And Jesus said, "Neither do I condemn thee: go thy way; from henceforth sin no more."

From the Gospel According to John.  
*New Testament.*

### Forgiveness and Counter-forgiveness

Saints are men who permit God's forgiveness to come into them so fully that not only are their sins washed out, but also their very selves, their egos, and the root of their self-will. And again, we see, the intensity of their power really to forgive is in exact proportion to the degree that they have permitted themselves to be forgiven and so brought back to God. Look for a moment at the quality of their forgiveness, what they have accepted from God and so may pass on to man. I forgive to the level that I have been forgiven, and if that level is moderate (because I made reservations in what I declared, because I only wanted to lose my vices and not myself), I can forgive only people who have offended moderately and my forgiveness helps them only moderately. If I try forgiving people who have wronged me or others intensely, I find either I can't do it at all or the quality of my forgiveness is so weak that it is either resented (as the maniac became more fierce as the disciples tried to cure him) or more often dismissed with contempt. We have not power on earth to forgive sins because we are not forgiven to that degree—to that degree that God is our sole end and our ego is no more.

Therefore we must scale the second curve of the great spiral way of forgiveness if we would ever save our social order. Only people who are still quite kindly at heart want my forgiveness, for it is still so full of self—self-complacency and self-appreciation—that it is perhaps ten per cent the love of God and ninety per cent patronage and superiority. No wonder people don't want it, resent it. What help is it to them? How does it in any way rehabilitate them and make them capable of wishing to lose themselves, make them able

to believe that there is a God Who will help them both lose and find themselves in Him? Yet, we must repeat, saints do arise; their power is in exact proportion to their power to accept God's forgiveness of their whole selves—of their social being as much as of their private acts—and such men by this their acceptance of social responsibility and guilt have power really to forgive sin. They can forgive wrongs done not only to themselves but to others just because they accept as their own the guilt of others, the wrong-doing and the wrong-suffering of the entire community.

And their forgiveness can really forgive the wrong-doer because it brings him back into the current and circulation of the Eternal Life from which he cut himself off by his wrong-doing and from which the resentment of the wronged, quite as much as his own guilt, is now driving him farther away. The saints' forgiveness has the power of reaching the banished wrong-doer and salvaging him because that forgiveness has in it two real elements which grapple him. The first element is the saints' acknowledgment of a common guilt. When anyone fails, their spontaneous reaction is to point to themselves, saying in the depths of their hearts, "Lord, if thou hadst been *here* my brother had not died." The constant recognition of commonality with every human life builds a bridge from them to the isolated wrong-doer. The second element which grasps hold of the abandoned is that the quality of their goodness is dynamic. It goes for the sinner, not to immobilize him but permanently to mobilize his ingrown energy; not to protect a *status quo* but to build a city of God. The saint can show the dynamic sinner a way of life far more daring, unconventional, enterprising than any border-raid on the swag of smug and timid respectables. The saint is making an attack on the very center and citadel of the thoughtlessly secure. He aims at capturing society itself.

If, then, we are to save our social life, we must produce men so deeply forgiven that they can at least forgive, creatively discharge with a renewed will, give the conviction of new unlimited kinship and friendship to those extreme types of public enmity which our social system is producing.\*

## BETWEEN THE INDIVIDUAL AND SOCIETY

## IN INFLUENCE AND ACTION

## INFLUENCE

We can influence and direct others as we desire their good, but only when they are convinced, with the shrewd sense that all creatures have, that our motives are clean, our statements true, that we do seek their good, and not our advancement and elevation as their essential benefactors. All of us are individual spirits created to evolve into a common union. If we have made ourselves to grow, so that we are advanced some stages beyond the average intensity of individualism, we can directly influence those who wish to grow, and who are feeling the natural need to grow, in that direction. The spirit and character which is already advanced in constant creativeness, in wide compassion and unceasing illumination, knowing what life means and how to attain that meaning—such a spirit not only influences those among whom it is—but its influence spreads radioactively, telepathically, and the limits of its force cannot be set, because the source on which it is drawing is itself illimitable. Being, therefore, is all, and doing merely the symptom and sign of being, as body is the appearance of spirit.\*

Anonymous.

Perfectly to have given up one's own is to be merged with God, and then anyone who will touch the man must first touch God, for he is wholly within God and God is around him, as my cap is around my head, and to touch me one must first touch my clothing.

Similarly, when I drink, the drink must first pass over my tongue and there be tasted; but if my tongue is covered with a bitter coating, then however sweet the wine, it will taste bitter, because of the coating through which it reaches me. This is how it is with the person who, having given up all that is his own, is coated with God, so that no creature can touch him without first touching God, and

whatever reaches him must reach him through God. Thus it gets its flavor and becomes divine.

Meister Johannes Eckhart, 1260-1327. German scholar, mystic.  
*Meister Eckhart*, Trans. R. Blakney.

The religious man is not the attractive personality. He does not draw men to himself. He is the transparent personality: a window to something beyond himself. He does not make admirers. He does not dazzle men with a fascinating individuality. He challenges them to a supreme loyalty.

Gregory Vlastos, 1909-. Canadian Professor of Philosophy.  
*The Religious Person in the World Today*.

#### ACTION

What the mystic will do with his life after he has *seen*, after he has been *organized and fortified* and has been *made a lover*, we need not stop to ask. It will depend on what is specifically there to be done in his day and generation. But we can take it for settled that he will be a hundred-horsepower person in his world.

Rufus Jones, 1863-. American philosopher, author.

One early February morning in 1209, while hearing mass at the Porziancula, the aged priest read from the Gospel of St. Matthew—for it was St. Matthew's Day—the words of Jesus to the twelve as He sent them forth to preach. In a moment of inspiration God's will was made known to Francis, and the seed of the Order of the Bare-foot Friars was sown in his bosom. He too would go forth, with neither gold, nor silver, nor wallet, nor shoes, nor staff, and with but one coat, to call men to righteousness. He began to preach, disciples joined him—Bernard of Quintavalle, Peter Catani, Giles of Assisi. A forsaken traveller's shelter near the leper hospital at Rivo Torto, so small and mean that Francis had to chalk the name of each friar over his narrow sleeping-place, became the first settlement of the Franciscan friars. A simple Rule, based on the teachings of their divine exemplar, was drawn up by Francis, and one sum-

mer's day in 1210, the little band of disciples set forth from Rivo Torto to obtain its confirmation at Rome. They received the tonsure, and went their way rejoicing. Calling themselves the *minores*, or poor little folk, as distinguished from the *maiores*, or upper classes, they began their wondrous mission.

Of the success of the movement, the rapid increase of the friars and of their settlements, of the wanderings of Francis and his solitary wrestling with the Spirit in Umbria, in the Marches, in the Vale of Rieti, at La Verna, space forbids a detailed treatment. His power as a preacher was marvellous. As soon as the news ran that Francis was coming, the whole life of the community was at a standstill. Bells rang, the merchant left his desk, the trader his counter, the workman his tools, women and children crying "*ecco il santo!*" went forth to meet him; men strove to touch the hem of his tunic, and women bent down to kiss his footprints on the ground. Such was the consuming passion of his eloquence that he spoke not so much with his tongue as with the whole body, and at times, in the vehement fervour of his pleading for souls, he seemed to dance like David of old. He had the supreme wisdom of the simple and pure in heart; he possessed that piercing insight into the very core of things that comes from absolute sincerity and undeviating truthfulness.\*

Saint Francis, 1182-1226. Italian monk, preacher.  
*Little Flowers of St. Francis*, Trans. T. Okey.

To be a seer is not the same thing as to be a mere spectator. Once the contemplative has fitted himself to become, in Lallemant's phrase, "a man of much orison," he can undertake work in the world with no risk of being thereby distracted from his vision of reality, and with fair hope of achieving an appreciable amount of good. As a matter of historical fact, many of the great theocentrics have been men and women of enormous and beneficent activity.

The work of the theocentrics is always marginal, is always started on the smallest scale and, when it expands, the resulting organization is always subdivided into units sufficiently small to be capable of a shared spiritual experience and of moral and rational conduct.

The first aim of the theocentrics is to make it possible for any one who desires it to share their own experience of ultimate reality. The groups they create are organized primarily for the worship of God for God's sake. They exist in order to disseminate various methods (not all of equal value) for transforming the "natural man," and for learning to know the more-than-personal reality immanent within the leathery casing of selfhood. At this point, many theocentrics are content to stop. They have their experience of reality and they proceed to impart the secret to a few immediate disciples, or commit it to writing in a book that will be read by a wider circle removed from them by great stretches of space and time. Or else, more systematically, they establish small organized groups, a self-perpetuating order of contemplatives living under a rule. In so far as they may be expected to maintain or possibly increase the number of seers and theocentrics in a given community, these proceedings have a considerable social importance. Many theocentrics, however, are not content with this, but go on to employ their organizations to make a direct attack upon the thorniest social problems. Such attacks are always launched from the margin, not the centre, always (at any rate in their earlier phases) with the sanction of a purely spiritual authority, not with the coercive power of the state. Sometimes the attack is directed against economic evils, as when the Benedictines addressed themselves to the revival of agriculture and the draining of swamps. Sometimes, the evils are those of ignorance and the attack is through various kinds of education. Here again the Benedictines were pioneers. It is worth remarking that the Benedictine order owed its existence to the apparent folly of a young man who, instead of doing the proper, sensible thing, which was to go through the Roman schools and become an administrator under the Gothic emperors, went away and, for three years, lived alone in a hole in the mountains. When he had become "a man of much orison," he emerged, founded monasteries and composed a rule to fit the needs to a self-perpetuating order of hard-working contemplatives. In the succeeding centuries, the order civilized northwestern Europe, introduced or re-established the best agricultural practice of the time, provided the only educational facilities then available, and



preserved and disseminated the treasures of ancient literature. For generations Benedictinism was the principle antidote to barbarism. Europe owes an incalculable debt to the young man who, because he was more interested in knowing God than in getting on, or even "doing good," in the world, left Rome for that burrow in the hill-side above Subiaco.

Aldous Leonard Huxley, 1894-. English writer, literary critic.  
*Grey Eminence.*

The more a man becomes conscious of himself through self-knowledge and its corresponding effect upon action, there is an increasing tendency for that layer of the personal unconscious that has overlaid the collective unconscious to disappear. In this way a conscious function is born, that is no longer imprisoned in the petty, over-sensitive, and personal world of the ego, but participates freely in the wider world of objective interests. This extended consciousness ceases to be a knot of personal wishes, fears, hopes, and ambitions that have always to be compensated or corrected by unconscious, personal counter-tendencies. Instead, it now becomes a function of relation that is linked up with the world of objects, and by which the individual is pledged to an unconditioned, responsible, and indissoluble intercourse with the world. The complications that belong to this stage are no longer egoistic wish-conflicts, but difficulties that concern others just as much as oneself.

Carl G. Jung, M.D., 1875-. Swiss psychotherapist.  
*Two Essays on Analytical Psychology*, Trans. H. G. & C. F. Baynes.

The winter of 1930-31 was one of the darkest which the city of Tokyo has experienced. The whole nation was in the throes of a financial slump. The poor were in a pitiful plight.

Disregarding precedent, the mayor turned to Kagawa, urged him to become Head of the city's Social Welfare Bureau and help him and the city to cut their way through the crisis. The salary would be \$9,000 a year and an automobile for his own use.

The mayor's action caused a sensation. It raised a row in the City Council—because of the appointee's views on political and social

questions. The conservatives and reactionaries attacked him because of his socialistic views. The socialists and radicals attacked him because of his religious idealism. Within the Bureau itself he was called an idealist, an impractical dreamer, and intrigue against him was rife.

Kagawa at the time was engaged in a nation-wide evangelistic crusade. He could not see his way to accept the headship of the Bureau. He, however, never turns a deaf ear to a call of distress, and acceding to the mayor's second proposition, became the Bureau's chief adviser.

The mayor's offer of a salary he absolutely refused. With the money he could have supported for an entire year the three social settlements which he personally conducts in Kobe, Osaka, and Tokyo. These institutions desperately needed those funds. But Kagawa never chooses the easy way. Tokyo was in distress. He would not add one iota to the city burdens. He would serve only on the condition that there be no salary.

He appeared at his office in the stately City Hall in the \$1.85 laborer's suit which he wore in the slums. His first official act was to visit the centers of poverty and distress. He secured shelter for those exposed to the cold of winter. He fed the hungry. He preached to the masses.

Tokyo has a modern system of street railways and transportation, but the bulk of its food supplies is still distributed by means of 11,000 house-boats which ply on 218 miles of canals running like arteries into every section of the city. Thirty-one thousand people are employed on these boats, half of whom live in the boats' six-by-nine-foot holds. Often a family of twelve is crowded into the boathold.

He found the living conditions among these boatmen to be unspeakably bad. Being constantly on the move, they had no advantages. He provided visiting nurses, established dormitories for the children of school age, and places for the parents to sleep.

He started eleven new social settlements in as many sections where the need was the greatest.

In five months after assuming office he prepared and put through the City Council a scheme of unemployment insurance by which the

city's civic unemployed are registered at the Municipal Employment Bureaus and guaranteed work or given a grant every third day during the period of their enforced unemployment. It also provides that available labor under the city shall be equally distributed among these registered unemployed.

To Kagawa belongs thus the credit not only of initiating the movement for wiping out the slums in six cities of the Empire, but in inducing its chief city to take the second step in solving the problem of poverty by adopting a scheme which guarantees its own workers protection while unemployed. In the field of social legislation this was a pioneer step not only in Japan, but throughout the Orient.\*

William Axling, M.D., 1873-. American missionary.  
*Kagawa.*

### Three Levels of "Action"

Every person has a choice of three levels on which to live. He can be childish, ego-centric, and soft in mind, fondly imagining that the world revolves around his small desire. The cruelty and injustice from which others suffer cause him no pang: "Why should I go forth to battle in their behalf?" If such a one ventures outside the warm comfortable nest, it is only to dash feverishly over the surface of things. He may seem to be whole-hearted and free; actually he is irresponsible and naive. That is the lowest level.

Against this shallow innocence those on the second level energetically rebel. Some go fascist; others go communist or Pharisee. For the sake of future order or brotherhood, let there be violence now. That the Kingdom of Heaven may come according to my specifications, away with anybody who chooses a method different from that of my party.

Doesn't the end justify the means? These second-levelers make an impressive show. But peace they can find neither within nor without, and they are almost wrecking the world. Like all adolescents, they are not really sure of themselves. As a result, they make an issue of their maturity; or overemphatically protest their realism; or solemnly look down upon everybody else.

On the third level move those athletes of the spirit who are

fundamentally effective and aware. The fascists call them "communists"; the communists call them "social fascist"; the Pharisees dismiss them as "sinners." Level number three is always patronized by level number two as though it were only level number one. The communist brushes Kagawa aside as a peddler of religious opium; the sword-fondling nationalist labels Gandhi as a sentimentalist who only turns the other cheek; the half-baked intellectual mutters that Schweitzer is a fool for leaving the popular lecture room to bury himself in Africa. Yet Kagawa, Gandhi, and Schweitzer are more poignantly aware of ultimate reality than inhibited atheists are. They cherish a deeper attachment to native land than arrogant nationalists can feel. They have a wider grasp of philosophy, by being brotherly, than the inhibited intellectuals in their ivory towers ever reach.

Those who have climbed to the second level are preoccupied with their growing pains. The gaiety and gusto of the great souls are literally over their heads. They see no point in sitting at the feet of children. But Kagawa, Gandhi, and Schweitzer do. Put either one in the presence of youngsters and in five minutes they will all be having a jolly and probably hilarious time. Theirs is the gift of making others feel at home because they are themselves at ease with life. Imagine yourself meeting the chubby Japanese in that funny black, unpressed suit he wears in Tokyo; or the half-naked Hindu after evening prayers in an outcaste village; or the stout-bodied Alsatian in full dress emerging from a concert in Paris. At first you might feel embarrassed in the presence of fame. But only for a moment. You would soon be thinking of more important things than the impression you were making. Before long they would be sharing with you a sense of power that is overcoming the world. And you yourself would be laughing with them.

These three have humor not because they have escaped but because they have embraced the sufferings of the underprivileged and the tasks of social change. They are free and spontaneous because they are conscripts of a terrible compassion. They are not insensitive to evil. Indeed, they can tell you far more about it than can those who are of as well as in the world. But the evil has no power to

crush or sour them. They see *through* the intervening ugliness to something just and lovely beyond.

What they see does not strike them dumb. They are amazingly articulate. Kagawa bubbles over untiringly through microphones, newspapers, magazines, and books. Gandhi addresses vast crowds, issues innumerable articles, and writes one of the most self-revealing autobiographies. Schweitzer forcefully lectures, preaches, and interprets civilization to itself and himself to the world.

Do their hands produce so much because their hearts are serene? Or is their tranquillity the result of their creativity? Neither is the final cause of the other. But these qualities are the reward of that most important of all human acts—commitment. These three live for and by something infinitely higher than themselves.

Not every moment, but oftener than we, they breathe and dream in union with the deepest law of human life. It is a law that Jesus proclaimed again and again and embodied all the time: If any man tries to defend himself he will be lost, but if he throws all of himself into the cause of the Family of God he will find his soul.

Allan A. Hunter, 1893-. American minister, author.  
*Three Trumpets Sound.*

For long generations our people had offered their "blood, toil, sweat and tears." This process had eaten its way deep into the body and soul of India, poisoning every aspect of our corporate life. . . . And then Gandhi came. He was like a powerful current of fresh air that made us stretch ourselves and take deep breaths; like a beam of light that pierced the darkness and removed the scales from our eyes; like a whirlwind that upset many things, but most of all the working of people's minds. He did not descend from the top; he seemed to emerge from the millions of India, speaking their language and incessantly drawing attention to them and their appalling condition. Get off the backs of these peasants and workers, he told us, all you who live by their exploitation; get rid of the system that produces this poverty and misery. . . .

The essence of his teaching was fearlessness and truth and action allied to these, always keeping the welfare of the masses in view. . . .

The dominant impulse in India under British rule was that of fear. . . . It was against this all-pervading fear that Gandhi's quiet and determined voice was raised: Be not afraid.

Was it so simple as all that? Not quite. And yet . . . suddenly, as it were, that black pall of fear was lifted from the people's shoulders—not wholly, of course, but to an amazing degree. . . . A sea change was visible as the need for falsehood and furtive behavior lessened. It was a psychological change—almost as if some expert in psycho-analytical method had probed deep into the patient's past, found out the origins of his complexes, exposed them to his view, and thus rid him of that burden. . . .

Gandhi for the first time entered the Congress organization and immediately brought about a complete change in its constitution. . . . A new technique of action was evolved which, though perfectly peaceful, yet involved nonsubmission to what was considered wrong, and as a consequence, a willing acceptance of the pain and suffering involved in this. . . . The call of action was twofold. There was of course the action involved in challenging and resisting foreign rules; there was also the action which led us to fight our own social evils. Apart from the fundamental objective of the Congress—the freedom of India—and the method of peaceful action, the principal planks of the Congress were national unity, which involved the solution of the minority problems, and the raising of the depressed classes and the ending of the curse of untouchability. . . .

Gandhi influenced millions of people in India in varying degrees; some changed the whole texture of their lives, others were only partly affected, or the effect wore off, and yet not quite, for some part of it could not be wholly shaken off. . . . Some might well say almost in the words of Alcibiades: "Yes, I have heard Pericles and all the other great orators, and very eloquent I thought they were; but they never affected me like that; they never turned my whole soul upside down and left me feeling as if I were the lowest of the low; but this latter day Maryas (meaning Socrates), has often left me in such a state of mind that I've felt I simply couldn't go on living the way I did. . . . I've been bitten by something much more poisonous than a snake; in fact, mine is the most painful kind of bite

there is. I've been bitten in the heart, or the mind, or whatever you like to call it. . . ." <sup>5</sup> \* \_\*\*

Jawaharlal Nehru, contemporary Indian statesman.  
*The Discovery of India.*

### Freedom in Action

Freedom does not come from a series of emancipations from external restrictions. Those we never quite escape. No matter what our independence, we are only exchanging one tyranny for another. Freed from the interference of domineering parents, a young man may be left the slave of his friends, of his ambition, slave of his own desire to be free. No one who has lived in one community for any length of time can fail to notice the pathetic subservience of the average man to public opinion; his dread lest he should lose that which he never quite had—the esteem of those around him. There is only one way of escape from this dread which follows most men from adolescence to old age. It is the sense of belonging wholly to a transcendent value. So long as one loves oneself, one will fear the things which have power to hurt that self. Release comes only with the self-transcendence of love.

There are two kinds of security: One, when the future is guaranteed; the other, when the present is right. Men have often looked to religion for that first kind of assurance: that it will protect their health, their reputation, their worldly goods, their families, their friends, and will reserve them a comfortable corner in the world to come. It is the other kind of security that is the effortless possession of the committed man. It does not rest on credulity, but on the simple willingness to do the right, and follow it, so far as one can see it. In the hour of danger one can only ask oneself: "What else could I have done? It was the only right thing that I could see. Of course I shall stand the consequences, and would do it again, if I had the chance. For the rest, I can only trust to the same power of good that compelled me, and is now constraining others to the same work." This is the sense of religious freedom and religious security: Freedom, because one knows that one's own personality is ultimately

<sup>5</sup> From *The Five Dialogues of Plato*. Everyman's Library, E. P. Dutton and Co.

unimportant; security, because one knows that the kingdom of love is the only thing worth living for, worth suffering for, if need be, worth dying for.\*

Gregory Vlastos, 1909-. Canadian, Professor of Philosophy.  
*The Religious Person in the World Today.*

"Do you not realize what an assignment to Molokai<sup>6</sup> would mean?" Father Clement asked Damien gently. "It would mean worse than exile. It would mean living daily with death and the dread of death."

Damien replied, "Do not be fearful for me. I have known many lepers and I have no fear of them. Their tragedy is that, through no fault of their own, they are despised by man. Do not let us allow them to believe that God has deserted them, also!"

The Bishop looked past the eager, flushed face of the young priest. He had had other plans for Damien. He needed such a young man with courage and decision near him. Finally he grasped the edge of the table. "It shall be as you desire, my son," he said quietly. "And since it has been decided, a boat leaves the harbor here for Honolulu in an hour's time. You and I will sail on this boat. It will be my privilege to accompany you to your new home."

When the steamer dropped anchor in the deep waters off the shore of Molokai and Damien and Bishop Maigret were taken ashore they found a large crowd of people—lepers of Kalawao and Kalapaupa, the two settlements on Molokai.

"Here is one who has come to live among you, my children," the Bishop said. "He will care for you and be a father to you. From this day forward you are not alone."

All around Damien was a world of pain and horror beyond anything he had imagined. The huts of invalids lay in such a state of foulness and filth that a few times it was all he could do to keep from rushing out into the sunshine. Clothing was in rags and very dirty. The dying lay on foul mats of rushes. He prayed silently,

<sup>6</sup> From *Man of Molokai*, Copyright 1943, by Ann Roos, published by J. B. Lippincott Co. This selection was chosen from several different sections of the book and is a condensed version of those sections.



desperately—heaven sustain him through these first terrible hours—let no sign of revulsion or fear be on his face.

Food was scanty and not suited to the desperately ill. Huts were tottering and there were no tools and little lumber for better ones. There was work to do here! He must not delay a moment. Decency would never flourish where there was no interest and no hope. And hope could not be born until there was human dignity. He would write at once to the authorities in Honolulu—to the Board of Health—to Bishop Maigret—to Belgium, even!

Life took on a changed aspect for the lepers in the few years of Damien's occupation of the colony. Physically they were more comfortable. The squalid huts in which the priest first found the lepers gave place to simple but sturdy wooden cottages. He discovered a natural reservoir in the Waihanau Valley, a few miles distant. His importunings to the Hawaiian officials had been ceaseless, with the result that miraculous cold water finally burst forth from the central taps in the settlement of Kalawao and its neighboring village, Kalapaupa. It seemed more than mere water to Father Damien. He stood watching the childlike amazement and delight of the women as they held their children's dusty feet under the taps or filled rude pails and gourds with the precious liquid, and felt that here was surely being washed away some of the old apathy and despair.

No leper was too repulsive in body nor too abandoned in spirit for Father Damien to shrink from him. And this lack of fear or repugnance was the golden key to the lepers' confidence and even love. As he was dressing their wounds, Damien would talk with the lepers intimately. He treated them all as whole men capable of taking their places in the community. He praised and chided them. He joked with them until the tight misery around their hearts had relaxed a little. He remonstrated sternly with those who had been careless. To Catholic and non-Catholic alike he gave his care and attention.

After years of transforming service there arrived a Sunday which no one on the Island of Molokai ever could forget. Father Damien went to church as usual, mounted the pulpit and read the text: "Be

not anxious, therefore, saying: What shall we eat, or what shall we drink, or wherewith shall we be clothed? For after all these things the heathen seek. For your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things."

After hearing the text, the people followed him through the well-known preamble of the sign of the cross and settled back to listen.

The voice of Father Damien went on evenly.

"Our Heavenly Father knoweth," he was repeating, "that *we lepers* have need of all these things."\*—\*\*

Ann Roos, contemporary American writer.  
*The Man of Molokai.*

His going on foot in England had nothing to do with the Negro slave trade, except in that remote sense in which all evil is inter-related. Nor was it a personal asceticism; nor due to those good Quaker reasons, so soothing to hear, about a "stop in his mind" or "a leading." No, it was plainly and simply because he would not by one penny support the stagecoaches. The stagecoaches, concentrating on transport of passengers, were only about ten years old. In order to compete with the waggons, which carried both goods and passengers at first, the coaches had to aim at speed. . . . Woolman, an expert in horses, observed these vehicles on the road. He saw them reharnessed at the inns. He saw the postilion boys—young, so as to be light—lifted stiff from the leader, staggering into the inn, white-faced and sick, for poor food and insufficient rest. And his heart burned again for the world's cruelty. He watched the horses, too, foaming at the mouth, red in the eyes, breathing hard, being led to their stalls for just the minimum of food and rest that would enable them to keep up the killing pace, under the whip, when their turn came round again. And this was summer weather, conditions were at their best. How would things be in the winter, when snow drifted in the hollows, and ice made roads slippery, and the bitter night wind met that unprotected boy upon the leader?

"As my journey hath been without a horse," says Woolman, "I have had several offers of being assisted on my way in these stagecoaches, but have not been in them, nor have I had freedom to send

letters by these posts in the present way of their riding, the stages being so fixed and one boy so dependent on another as to time, and going at great speed, that in long cold winter nights the poor boys suffer much. I heard in America of the way of these posts, and cautioned Friends in the General Meeting of Ministers and Elders at Philadelphia, and in the Yearly Meeting of Ministers and Elders in London, not to send letters to me on any common occasion by post. And though on this account I may be likely not to hear so often from my family left behind . . . yet for righteousness sake I am content. . . . Stage-coaches frequently go upwards of one hundred miles in twenty-four hours; and I have heard Friends say in several places that it is common for horses to be killed with hard driving, and that many others are driven till they grow blind. Post-boys pursue their business, each one to his stage, all night through the winter. Some boys who ride long stages suffer greatly in winter nights, and at several places I have heard of their being frozen to death. So great is the hurry in the spirit of this world that in aiming to do business quickly, and to gain wealth, the creation at this day doth loudly groan."

Here again that ounce of action which Woolman supplied spoke more loudly and was longer remembered than any of his words.\*

Janet Whitney, English writer.  
*John Woolman: American Quaker.*

Oberlin became instinctively the protector of ill-treated people of Jewish faith. A Jew who was crossing the mountain heights above the Valley of Stone was robbed and murdered. For some years after this even Oberlin passed on to the widow, each year, the sum of 50 francs. The woman, astonished at receiving such a rich gift from the pastor of so poor a parish, asked what had drawn him into the affair. Oberlin replied that since the murder had been committed in his parish, he felt that not only the villagers but himself as well, were blood-guilty, and that so far as he had the power he wished to atone for the crime and help to avert the curse resting upon the place where innocent blood had been shed,

A Jewish peddler, who had for many years made trips through the Valley of Stone and who sold goods on credit to the villagers, died leaving his widow in great destitution. When Oberlin heard of this, he sent for the list of the Jew's debtors who lived in his parish, collected from those who were able to pay, and paid himself for those who could not do so.

One morning, as Oberlin was at work in his study, he heard a great noise in the village. Rushing out, he saw a foreigner in the midst of a howling, threatening mob. Oberlin dashed into the crowd. On all sides the cry was raised, "A Jew! A Jew!" With the greatest difficulty, the pastor at last commanded silence. When he could make himself heard he exclaimed: "Those who treat so cruelly one who is not a Christian, are themselves unworthy of that name." Then, lifting the peddler's pack upon his own shoulders, he took the man by the hand, led him to the manse, and sheltered him from the mob's blind fury.

That evening, the peddler sat down at the dinner-table with the Oberlin family, the little curtsying maids, and the pensionnaires. In answer to the reluctant stranger's protest, Oberlin had said: "The pot will not know the difference, since there are already so many mouths to share the feast." As the two men were sitting together talking, when the dishes had been cleared away, a neighboring Catholic priest who had found the Waldsbach manse a cozy place to visit, joined them, and they drew their chairs together before the fire.

The priest was in a mellow mood. He beamed upon the Jewish peddler. Then laying his hand on Oberlin's shoulder, he said: "How I wish, my good friend, that you and I were of the same religion."

The Waldsbach minister was silent a moment before he spoke. He looked first at the priest, then at the Jew. Putting one arm upon the priest's shoulder, while the other circled the man he had rescued from the mob, he said: "Love is the religion of Jesus Christ. The Savior is love personified."

The eyes of the Jew were moist with tears. Bowing his head, he murmured: "What doth the Lord require of thee, but to do justly, to love mercy, and to walk humbly with thy God?"

The priest said, softly: "He who loves his fellow-man, whom he has seen, loves God whom he has not seen." \*\*\*

Marshall Dawson, 1880-. American writer.  
*Oberlin: Protestant Saint.*<sup>7</sup>

"Whosoever will be chief among you, let him be your servant."

If a shift in underlying assumptions is basic to large-scale changes in values, it may be that the chief significance of the prophet is his refusal to accept current assumptions. By living counter to what everyone else accepts as inevitable, he shows that another way is possible. Kodanda Rao (Secretary of the Servants of India Society) once observed that Gandhi—by undertaking the detested sweeping work of untouchables—had so changed the thinking of India that no one would any longer justify untouchability, though the old tabus may continue for a generation. John Woolman led many to free their slaves, not by words only but by his dramatic refusals to live as if slavery were justified. Similarly today people who maintain a proletarian standard of living and share the "dirty work" wherever they go—especially in rich homes!—are challenging the right of anyone to leisure or luxury at the price of others' labor and hunger.

One has to do manual work for some time before one comes to recognize the insidious power of the half-conscious rationalizations by which we justify our not taking our share of the cleaning, the coal-digging, the elevator-running.

Some of these half-conscious rationalizations are:

"Don't they get paid for it?" (as if the workers should be grateful for the job, instead of the bourgeois being dependent on them!)

"My time is more valuable than theirs" (this comes up surprisingly to consciousness, and makes one shamefully aware of the extent of one's unconscious pride, until at last one comes to see what is really meant by the equality of all souls in the sight of God.)

"Why should I work if I don't get paid for it?" The sheer astonishment provoked by an intellectual's efforts to carry water for miners' wives or groceries from pushcart markets for overloaded Bowery grandmothers, to mend socks for truck-drivers' children,

<sup>7</sup> John Frederick Oberlin, 1740-1826—French minister, educator, founder of first Infant Schools.

sweep union halls,—“for nuttin’?” shows how deeply embedded is this contemporary prejudice. It prevents people without a paid job from doing work simply because it needs to be done; it prevents others who have extra food and clothing from giving it to those who need it—“for nothing.” As long as America believes that men will not work except for profit, merely political action for a new social order is likely to continue to meet insuperable obstacles. But when she sees men and women actually working “for nothing” (some are trying to carry this out in an ordinary position by not receiving a salary but taking enough for their bare needs from a drawing account) and refusing to be above anyone else, the new society will be already in our midst.

Anonymous. Quoted from *Inward Light*.

Philanthropy is a field in which many men and women of the margin have laboured to the great advantage of their fellows. We may mention the truly astounding work accomplished by Father Joseph’s contemporary, St. Vincent de Paul, a great theocentric, and a great benefactor to the people of seventeenth-century France. Small and insignificant in its beginnings, and carried on, as it expanded, under spiritual authority alone and upon the margin of society, Vincent’s work among the poor did something to mitigate the sufferings imposed by the war and by the ruinous fiscal policy which the war made necessary. Having at their disposal all the powers and resources of the state, Richelieu and Father Joseph were able, of course, to do much more harm than St. Vincent and his little band of theocentrics could do good. The antidote was sufficient to offset only a part of the poison.

It was the same with another great seventeenth-century figure, George Fox. Born at the very moment when Richelieu was made president of the council and Father Joseph finally committed himself to the political life, Fox began his ministry the year before the Peace of Westphalia was signed. In the course of the next twenty years the Society of Friends gradually crystallized into its definitive form. Fox was never corrupted by success, but remained to the end the apostle of the inner light. The society he founded has had its ups

and downs, its long seasons of spiritual torpor and stagnation, as well as its times of spiritual life; but always the Quakers have clung to Fox's intransigent theocentrism and, along with it, to his conviction that, if it is to remain at all pure and unmixed, good must be worked for upon the margin of society, by individuals and by organizations small enough to be capable of moral, rational and spiritual life. That is why, in the two hundred and seventy-five years of its existence, the Society of Friends has been able to accomplish a sum of useful and beneficent work entirely out of proportion to its numbers. Here again the antidote has always been insufficient to offset more than a part of the poison injected into the body politic by the statesmen, financiers, industrialists, ecclesiastics and all the undistinguished millions who fill the lower ranks of the social hierarchy. But though not enough to counteract more than some of the effects of the poison, the leaven of theocentrism is the one thing which, hitherto, has saved the civilized world from total self-destruction.\*

Aldous Leonard Huxley, 1894-. English writer, literary critic.  
*Grey Eminence.*

There was, then, no self-pity mingled with the implacable economy to which Oberlin subjected himself in order to enlarge his resources for advancing the public good. This man was a lover of the arts, of music, travel, beauty and the concourse of rare minds. His tastes were refined; he could have spent a fortune pampering them; But he had set before himself work which committed him to a different program. The task was enormous; his resources were insignificant. He pursued unflinchingly the strategy essential to achieving his object: unsparing personal economy; systematic accounting; boundless generosity in gifts to the public good.

But however complete his consecration, if he alone had pursued this course, he would have failed. The load was too great to be lifted by a single pair of hands. Oberlin's power to awaken in others sacrificial zeal for the public welfare made success certain. Where generosity for the public good becomes a community characteristic, prosperity is inevitable.

"Money is power," especially in a region where destitution had been so acute and chronic that the gift of a copper coin would bring tears of gratitude into the eyes of an impoverished widow. Oberlin constantly studied ways and means of enlarging his generosity. He made himself three boxes. In the first box he deposited one-tenth of his earnings as a gift for maintaining public worship. In the second box he deposited another tenth of his earnings, as a source of gifts toward community improvements, prizes for school children, entertaining strangers, redressing injuries done to any person by malefactors in his parish, and for other purposes. The contents of the third box, in which he deposited the third tenth of his income, were to be used for the poor.

One listens willingly to a discourse on generosity when it is delivered by a person who has himself set an example of unselfishness so great there is nothing left to say.

The size of the collections in the churches of the Valley of Stone—considering the modest earnings of the people—astonished visitors from the outside world. These people who had been so greatly helped by Oberlin and his friends in Strasburg or London, grew eager to help one another and even those who, in distant places, were in need.

Did a villager lose a cow? A collection was taken, and the cow was replaced. Was the home of a poor widow destroyed by fire? A collection was taken; the entire valley came to her rescue. When the Revolutionary administration neglected the foundlings in the Strasburg hospital, a collection was taken for them, and many of these unfortunate children were adopted by the mountaineers. Such a spirit chased the wolf of destitution from the Valley of Stone. Self-respecting poverty remained, in many quarters, but mendicancy disappeared.

Marshall Dawson, 1880-. American writer.  
*Oberlin: Protestant Saint.*

### The American Friends Service Committee

Cromwell's wise saying that "no man ever goes so far as when he doesn't know where he is going," applies in a striking way to the



unfolding and enlarging activities of the American Friends Service Committee.

No one dreamed in the sharp crisis of 1917, when the first steps of faith were taken, that we should feed more than a million German children, drive dray loads of codliver oil into Russia, plough the fields of the peasants and fight typhus in Poland, rebuild the houses and replant the wastes in Serbia, administer a longtime service of love in Austria, become foster parents to tens of thousands of children in the coal fields in West Virginia, Kentucky, Pennsylvania, and Ohio, inaugurate plans for the rehabilitation of the stranded soft coal miners, carry relief to the children on both sides of the warring forces in Spain and create new types of Peace activity which have brought this supreme issue of these times vitally home to the minds and consciences of people in all parts of America.

We verily went out in those days of low visibility not knowing whither we were going, but we were conscious of a divine leading, and we were aware, even if only dimly, that we were "fellow-laborers with God" in the rugged furrows of the somewhat brambly fields of the world.

The Quakers had always from the time of their rise in the period of the English Commonwealth been sensitive to the ills of humanity and ready as occasions arose to take up the burden of the world's suffering, but in the early and middle periods of Quaker history experiments in the service of love were apt to be spontaneously entered into as the individual concern of a tender heart who followed a leading that seemed to be divinely given to him. John Bellers, John Woolman, William Allen, Elizabeth Fry, Anthony Benezet, and Joseph Sturge are characteristic champions of the Quaker faith. They saw a task that needed to be done. They were recipients of a vision, an inward leading, and they were not disobedient to what seemed to them their heavenly vision. They had a certain amount of corporate backing and support, but in the main they walked a solitary path and went forward on their own uncharted way.

The American Friends Service Committee, as its name implies, was from the beginning, and has all along continued to be, a corporate activity. Many of its undertakings originated in the inward

insight of a single individual, and some of its most important concerns had their birth in a sensitive person's soul, but all its decisions have been arrived at through corporate action. Its thirty years of history have given many glowing verifications of the wisdom of arriving at decisions by taking "the sense of the meeting." Nothing in this long period has been settled by a majority vote which overrode the judgment of a strong minority opposed to it. All matters of importance have been luminously presented to the whole group, corporately considered, looked at from many angles, threshed out in clear, open light and decided by unanimous judgment; or referred to a small group to be further studied, matured and brought again to the whole Committee, to be there reconsidered in fuller light and with enlarged wisdom, which usually has resulted in a final unanimous decision.\*

Rufus Jones, 1863-. American philosopher, author.  
From Introduction to *Swords into Ploughshares* by Mary Hoxie Jones.

## BETWEEN THE INDIVIDUAL AND SOCIETY

### WITHIN THE BELOVED COMMUNITY

And his mother and his brothers came. And they stood outside the house and sent word in to him to come outside to them. There was a crowd sitting around him when they told him,

"Your mother and your brothers are outside asking for you."

He answered,

"Who are my mother and my brothers?"

And looking around at the people sitting about him, he said,

"Here are my mother and my brothers! Whoever does the will of God is my brother and sister and mother."

The Gospel According to Mark  
*New Testament*, Trans. E. J. Goodspeed.

### The New Community

I want you to form the nucleus of a new community which shall start a new life amongst us—a life in which the only riches is integrity of character. So that each one may fulfill his own nature

and deep desires to the utmost, but wherein tho', the ultimate satisfaction and joy is in the completeness of us all as one. Let us be good all together, instead of just in the privacy of our chambers, let us know that the intrinsic part of all of us is the best part, the believing part, the passionate, generous part. We can all come croppers, but what does it matter? We can laugh at each other, and dislike each other, but the good remains and we know it. And the new community shall be established upon the known, eternal good part in us. This present community consists, as far as it is a framed thing, in a myriad of contrivances for preventing us from being let down by the meanness in ourselves or in our neighbours. But it is like a motor car that is so encumbered with non-skid, non-puncture, non-burst, non-this and non-that contrivances, that it simply can't go any more. I hold this the most sacred duty—the gathering together of a number of people who shall so agree to live by the *best* they know, that they shall be *free* to live by the best they know. The ideal, the religion, must now be *lived, practised*. . . .

After the War, the soul of the people will be so maimed and so injured that it is horrible to think of. And this shall be the new hope: that there shall be a life wherein the struggle shall not be for money or for power, but for individual freedom and common effort towards good. That is surely the richest thing to have now—the feeling that one is working, that one is part of a great, good effort or of a great effort towards goodness. It is no good plastering and tinkering with this community. Every strong soul must put off its connection with this society, its vanity and chiefly its fear, and go naked with its fellows, weaponless, armourless, without shield or spear, but only with naked hands and open eyes. Not self-sacrifice, but fulfilment, the flesh and the spirit in league together, not in arms against one another. And each man shall know that he is part of the greater body, each man shall submit that his own soul is not supreme even to himself. "To be or not to be" is no longer the question. The question now is how shall we fulfil our declaration, "God is." For all our life is now based on the assumption that God is not—or except on rare occasions.

. . . We must go very, very carefully at first. The great serpent

to destroy is the will to Power: the desire for one man to have some dominion over his fellow-men. Let us have no personal influence, if possible—nor personal magnetism, as they used to call it, nor persuasion—no “Follow me”—but only “Behold.” And a man shall not come to save his own soul. Let his soul go to hell. He shall come because he knows that his own soul is not the be-all and the end-all, but that all souls of all things do but compose the body of God, and that God indeed shall *BE*.

I do hope that we shall all of us be able to agree, that we have a common way, a common interest, not a private way and a private interest only.\*

D. H. Lawrence, modern English novelist, poet, essayist.  
From a letter <sup>8</sup> to Lady Ottoline Morrell—Feb. 1915.

### Characteristic of the “Beloved Community”

“See how these Christians love one another” might well have been a spontaneous exclamation in the days of the apostles. The Holy Fellowship, the Blessed Community has always astonished those who stood without it. The sharing of physical goods in the primitive church is only an outcropping of a profoundly deeper sharing of a Life, the base and center of which is obscured to those who are still oriented about self, rather than about God. To others, tragic to say, the very existence of such a Fellowship within a common Life and Love is unknown and unguessed. In its place, psychological and humanistic views of the essential sociality and gregariousness of man seek to provide a social theory of church membership. The precious word *Fellowship* becomes identified with a purely horizontal relation of man to man, not with that horizontal-vertical relationship of man to man *in God*.

It appeared in vivid form among the early Friends. The early days of the Evangelical movement showed the same bondedness in love. The disclosure of God normally brings the disclosure of the Fellowship. We don’t create it deliberately; we find it and we find ourselves increasingly within it as we find ourselves increasingly

<sup>8</sup> *The Letters of D. H. Lawrence*, edited by Aldous Huxley. Also see *Notes on D. H. Lawrence* by W. H. Auden, *The Nation*, April 26, 1947.

within Him. It is the holy matrix of "the communion of the saints." It was a tragic day when the Quakers ceased to be a Fellowship and became a Society of Friends. Yet ever within that Society, and ever within the Christian church, has existed the Blessed Community, a little church within the church.

In the Fellowship cultural and educational and national and racial differences are leveled. Unlettered men are at ease with the truly humble scholar who lives in the Life, and the scholar listens with joy and openness to God's dealing with the workingman. We find men with chilly theologies but with glowing hearts. We overleap the boundaries of church membership and find Lutherans and Roman Catholics, Jews and Christians, within the Fellowship. We re-read the poets and the saints, and the Fellowship is enlarged. With urgent hunger we read the Scriptures, with no thought of pious exercise, but in order to find more friends for the soul. We brush past our historical learning in the Scriptures, to seize upon those writers who lived in the Center, in the Life and in the Power. Particularly does devotional literature become illuminated. Time telescopes and vanishes, centuries and creeds are overleaped. The incident of death puts no boundaries to the Blessed Community, wherein men live and love and work and pray in that Life and Power which gave forth the Scriptures. And we wonder and grieve at the overwhelmingly heady preoccupation of religious people with problems, unless they have first come into the Fellowship of the Light.

The final grounds of holy Fellowship are in God. Persons in the Fellowship are related to one another through Him, as all mountains go down into the same earth. They get at one another through Him.

The relation of each to all, through God, is real, objective, existential. It is an eternal relationship which is shared in by every stick and stone and bird and beast and saint and sinner of the universe. On all, the wooing love of God falls urgently, persuadingly. But he who, having willed, yields to the loving urgency of that Life which knocks at his heart, is entered and possessed and transformed and transfigured. The scales fall from his eyes when he is given to eat of the

tree of knowledge, the fruit of which is indeed for the healing of the nations.

This community of life and love is far deeper than current views based upon modern logic would suppose. Logic finds, beneath every system of thought, some basic assumptions or postulates from which all other items of belief are derived. It is said that those who share in a system of thought are those who hold basic assumptions in common. But these assumptions are of the intellect, subsequent products, efforts to capture and clarify and make intelligible to ourselves and to others some fragment of that immediacy of experience in God. Theological quarrels arise out of differences in assumptions. But Holy Fellowship, freely tolerant of these important yet more superficial clarifications, lives in the Center and rejoices in the unity of His love.

And this Fellowship is deeper than democracy, conceived as an ideal of group living. It is a theocracy wherein God rules and guides and directs His listening children. The center of authority is not in man, not in the group, but in the creative God Himself. Nor do all members share equally in spiritual discernment, but upon some falls more clearly the revealing light of His guiding will. "Weighty Friends," with delicate attunement both to heaven and to earth, bulk large in practical decisions. It would be a mistake indeed to suppose that Holy Fellowship is chained fast to one political system, or bound up inextricably with the fortunes of any one temporal structure of society. It is certainly true that some temporal systems are more favorable than are others to the flowering of the Fellowship. But within all groups and nations and creeds it springs up, smiling at differences, for, existing in time, it is rooted in the Eternal One.\*

Thomas R. Kelly, 1893-1941. American philosopher, educator.  
*A Testament of Devotion.*

### The Christian Community in the Dark Ages

John Buchan's description of the Dark Ages, points out that the darkness was not total. He writes:

"There were many points of light in that darkness. There was first of all the Christian Church which, behind all its political caprices and theological pedantries, did preserve a continuous tradition

of civilization and the spiritual life. Throughout those centuries it produced saints and missionaries whose names we still honor. It produced poets whose hymns we still sing, and in many a monastery tucked away in the forests there were scholars who studied more than the Church fathers. Much of the literature of Greece and Rome survived in obscure places, Aristotle, or a part of him, was not forgotten, and men could get to Plato through St. Augustine. . . .”

Christians were numerous—vast hordes of them, in name!—but those who cherished the memory and strove to follow the way of the crucified Christ were hardly more than little communities of sanctified souls hidden in such places of quiet refuge as could still be found. In the murky spectacle of bloody kings, plundering warriors, starving peasants, and contentious churchmen they seemed to count for little. But these Christians, the self-chosen among the great multitude of conforming believers, were the custodians of all that was precious in the world. They were the guardians of altars, far hidden from the crowded ways of men, where burned the lights which were to bring back the day after the long, cold night.

Out of this inner sincerity and sanctity of spirit, as from a living spring, there flowed certain attitudes and interests which were important.

These Christians refused to all earthly powers an allegiance anterior or superior to that which they pledged to God. There were no nations in the Dark Ages as in our modern times. But there were clans and tribes, kings and chieftains, and the early texture of loyalties which was later woven into the elaborate fabric of feudalism. But none of these was allowed to interfere with, least of all to supersede, the obedience which was given to God alone. It was true that this obedience was transmitted through the Church, which later became a very earthly institution indeed. The temporal powers of the Church took on an importance over the spiritual powers which led to the final tragedy of mediæval Christianity. But in its essence the Church was the mere agent and interpreter of the Most High.

As these Christians in the Dark Ages thus gave exclusive and complete obedience to God, in defiance of all earthly powers, so they lived primarily not for the world of present experience but for a

next world of future promise. This present world on earth was but a manifestation of a preparation for this next world in heaven, which was to be a pure realm of the spirit. It exacted certain elementary conditions and duties, of course, which could not be avoided. For this brief period of time man was living, whether or no, in the abode of a physical body and amidst the scene of a material earth, as a kind of discipline and training of the spirit which was within him.

It is in this sense that Christianity in the Dark Ages, as in later ages, was an "other-world" religion. This in our time has become its reproach—that men neglected the obligations and opportunities of this present world in their absorption in the next! And in many ways this is a just reproach. There is no question that there is a fundamental spiritual fallacy in this separation of this present life from some kind of future life. But that there is a distinction between body and soul, matter and spirit, temporal and eternal, is central to all that we mean by religion. This is a dichotomy without which no understanding of the religious life is possible. St. Augustine knew this when, amidst the incredible catastrophe of the fall of Rome before the sword of Alaric, he pointed to that "City of God" which, in contrast to even the most powerful city of men, lies quite beyond the reach of fire and sword. The Bishop of Hippo may have located his City of God by a theological geography which is no more acceptable to our time than Ptolemy's charting of the heavens. But his vision of the City was none the less real. The Christians of that day saw it and made it the lodestar of their lives. Already, amidst the chances and changes of this world, and even as they kept their place in the social order of their time, they were citizens of God's City. Its laws were their commandments and its labors their daily task.

This leads to a third distinguishing characteristic of these groups of Christians in the Dark Ages. As their obedience was to God, and their status that of citizens in His City, their interests were fundamentally spiritual, and thus inevitably apart from the prevailing activities of the times.

They tended more and more to withdraw from the blood-poisoned currents of their day and generation. Some of these Christians became hermits, dwelling by themselves in a lonely and in many



ways selfish quest of personal salvation. Other wiser and nobler spirits established orders of social life, communities of mutual dedication and endeavor, and set up in forest clearings, or on mountaintops, monasteries, as they were called, where they might live in peace and preserve the precious things of life. In these monasteries they took pledges of pure and simple living, and bound themselves to obedience to the will of the Most High. Their interests of course were primarily in ways of spiritual living; and in worship, prayer, and discipline of hand and heart, they strove to realize among men the life of God. Along with these central devotions went wholesome labor, that the communities might have a self-sustaining economy and the intellectual activities which alone availed to preserve such fragments of classic literature and learning as have survived into our modern time. In Biblical manuscripts, illuminated texts and priceless copies of ancient Greek and Latin documents, we see monuments to the culture and enlightenment which were not allowed to perish in swirling floods of barbarism. When other men were fighting, and saying that there was nothing to do but fight, they refused to fight or even to be interested in fighting. They turned deliberately away from these outward violences of the secular world to the inward peace of the devout and loving soul. These Christians not only saved, in a period of disruption and demoralization, the practice of culture and religion, but the very knowledge and love of these realities.\*

John Haynes Holmes, 1879-. American minister, author.  
*Out of the Darkness.*

### Saint Francis of Assisi and "The Third Order"

Thomas of Spalato relates that when he was a student at Bologna, in the year 1222, he saw St. Francis preaching in the piazza in front of the *Palazzo del Podesta* on the text, "Angels, men, and devils." The whole city had assembled to hear him, and "he treated his theme so well and so wisely that many learned men who were present stood filled with admiration when they heard such words from the lips of an untutored friar. The whole matter of his discourse was directed to the quenching of hatred, and the establishment of peace. His dress was mean, his person insignificant (*contemptibilis*), his face without

beauty. But with so much power did God inspire his words that many noble families, sundered by ancient blood feuds, were reconciled for ever." Often whole populations were moved to declare themselves his disciples and to mediate on some rule of life that would allow his converts to attain the desire of their hearts without wholly renouncing their family and secular duties. A certain rich merchant of Poggibonsi named Lucchesio, and a former acquaintance of Francis, being converted, had gathered around him a small group of like-minded penitents who sought to live, so far as they might, according to the Franciscan idea, being in the world but not of the world; similar communities were soon formed in other Italian cities, and lived under a Rule indited or inspired by Francis. Thus was founded the Order subsequently known as the Third Order, but which, at its inception, was called the Order of Continents or Penitents. The earliest known foundation was at Faenza in 1221, and the first extant Rule—a precious find by Sabatier—is dated August 18, 1228. The Penitent vowed to make restitution of all ill-gotten gains, to become reconciled with his enemies, to live in peace and concord with all men, to pass his life in prayer and works of charity, to keep certain fasts and vigils, to pay tithes regularly to the Church, to take no oath save under exceptional conditions, never to wear arms, to use no foul language, and to practise piety to the dead.

Saint Francis, 1182-1226. Italian monk, preacher.  
*Little Flowers of St. Francis*, Trans. T. Okey.

### The Third Order as a "Vital Cell"

The formation of the Third Order of Franciscans is one of the most important events in the spiritual life of the Middle Ages. It was an attempt to carry the gospel of love and the Franciscan way of life into the domain of home and everyday life. It was a vital spontaneous growth rather than a planned event. It grew up to meet the need of the eager multitude. Whole villages or cities, like that for instance of Cannara or Poggibons, or even Florence, came thronging round Francis. It looked for a moment as though the whole world would become Friars or Sisters of Clara. The very crowd of applicants for his two Orders threatened to defeat his purpose. The members of

this Third Order were not asked to give up houses or lands or home or family. They were only asked to penetrate their lives with a passion for Christ, to live with joy and enthusiasm, and to make life a radiant affair.

Whoever was free at heart from *slavery to things* and eager for love and peace and truth was thereby a candidate for this Order. The pure in heart, the meek, the humble, the poor in spirit, were in it and of it. Those who labored and were heavy laden were members of it. Those who caught Francis' spirit of passionate love and devotion belonged to it, even before it was technically founded. It was thus a movement rather than an organization. From the very first and all through its history it was a vital cell within the larger life of the Church, an *ecclesiola in Ecclesia*. It was throughout a nursery of saints. It brought forth more than eighty canonized or beatified saints, including St. Louis, King of France, and St. Elizabeth of Hungary. Its list of artists and poets is a long one, including Giotto, Raphael, Murillo, Dante, Petrarch, and Coventry Patmore. Among its mystics were Angela of Foligno, St. Bridget of Sweden, Raymond Lull, Vincent de Paul and Francois de Sales. It was always a nursery of mystics, but the emphasis was on making one's life an organ of love and service rather than straining after ecstasies.

The greatest explorer of all time, Christopher Columbus, was a Tertiary and so too was Galileo. The list of martyrs is an extraordinary one, with St. Joan of Arc at the top of the list. This movement profoundly affected every walk and department of life, but above everything else, it sanctified the home and it produced lives of beauty in a dark world. It gave reality—the reality of experience—to religion and it restored joy and radiance to a world that had largely lost them.

One of the most important aspects of this Third Order was its attempt to follow Christ as a band of "peace-makers." It brought a new Truce of God to a world forever at war. Its members were forbidden to bear arms in offensive warfare and until the Rule was altered by Pope Nicholas V they might not bear arms at all. And they were allowed, in case they were vassals, to refuse military service to their suzerains. They had caught the spirit which Francis showed to the Soldan as Housman has put it in his Little Plays. "I would show

the Christ, Soldan. Or if by that name thou know Him not, then by His other name, which is Love, wherein also dwell Joy and Peace."

Hardly less important was the cultivation of the group spirit by this Third Order. It formed a vital movement among artisans and working men, which developed into one of the powerful forces that finally led to the disintegration of the feudal system.

There is a charming legend in the Little Flowers which catches the beauty of this group spirit, and which shows how the invisible bonds of brotherhood bound together members, separated most widely by station, into one spirit of fellowship. The story says that once St. Louis, clad as a poor pilgrim, knocked at the door of a Franciscan convent, and asked for Brother Giles. A hint from the keeper of the convent, or, as other accounts say, a Divine revelation, gave Giles the secret that his visitor was no less a person than the King of France. Giles ran to meet his guest. They embraced and knelt together in perfect silence. Then, without having broken the silence, Louis arose from his knees and went on his journey. When Giles came back to his cell, all the brothers reproached him for not having said anything to his royal visitor. With fine simplicity Giles answered: "I read his heart, and he read mine."

Such then, or something like it, was the Third Order of St. Francis.\*

Rufus M. Jones, 1863-. American philosopher.  
*Inward Light* (Dec. 1941)

## The Church of the Spirit

The Church of the spiritual Reformers (sixteenth and seventeenth centuries) was a Fellowship, a Society, a Family, rather than a mysterious and supernatural entity. They felt once again, as powerfully perhaps as it was possible in their centuries to feel it, the immense significance of the Pauline conception of the Church as the continued embodiment and revelation of Christ, the communion of Saints past and present who live or have lived by the Spirit. Through this spiritual group, part of whom are visible and part invisible, they held that the divine revelation is continued and the eternal Word of God is being uttered to the race. "The true religion of Christ," as one of

these spiritual teachers well puts it, is "written in the soul and spirit of man by the Spirit of God; and the believer is the only book in which God now writes His New Testament." This Church of the Spirit is always being built. Its power is proportional to the spiritual vitality of the membership, to the measure of apprehension of divine resources, to the depth of insight and grasp of truth, to the prevalence of love and brotherhood, to the character of service, which the members exhibit. It possesses no other kind of power or authority than the power and authority of personal lives formed into a community by living correspondence with God, and acting as human channels and organs of His Life and Spirit. Such a Church can meet new formulations of science and history and social ideals with no authoritative and conclusive word of God which automatically settles the issue. Its only weapons are truth and light, and these have to be continually re-discovered and re-fashioned to fit the facts which the age has found and verified. Its mission is *prophetic*. It does not dogmatically decide what facts must be believed, but it sees and announces the spiritual significance of the facts that are discovered and verified. It was, thus, in their thought a growing, changing, ever-adjusting body—the living body of Christ in the World.

Rufus M. Jones, 1863-. American philosopher and author.  
*Spiritual Reformers of the 16th and 17th Centuries.*

### The Rebuilding of "Modern" Society

Our social frame, our material and mental background, should be rebuilt. But society is not plastic. Its form cannot be changed in an instant. Nevertheless, the enterprise of our restoration must start immediately, in the present conditions of our existence. Each individual has the power to modify his way of life, to create around him an environment slightly different from that of the unthinking crowd. He is capable of isolating himself in some measure, of imposing upon himself certain physiological and mental disciplines, certain work, certain habits, of acquiring the mastery of his body and mind. But if he stands alone, he cannot indefinitely resist his material, mental, and economic environment. In order to combat this environment victoriously, he must associate with others having the same purpose.

Revolutions often start with small groups in which the new tendencies ferment and grow.

The dissenting groups would not need to be very numerous to bring about profound changes in modern society. It is a well-established fact that discipline gives great strength to men. An ascetic and mystic minority would rapidly acquire an irresistible power over the dissolute and degraded majority. None of the dogmas of modern society are immutable. Gigantic factories, office buildings rising to the sky, inhuman cities, industrial morals, faith in mass production, are not indispensable to civilization. Other modes of existence and of thought are possible. Culture without comfort, beauty without luxury, machines without enslaving factories, science without the worship of matter, would restore to man his intelligence, his moral sense, his virility, and lead him to the summit of his development.\*

Alexis Carrel, 1873-1944. French surgeon, biologist.  
*Man the Unknown.*

### Present Requirements of the "Beloved Community"

If evolution is to continue (for it cannot continue now unless we consciously co-operate with this, its next step, the evolution of consciousness), men who are forwarding that evolution must make for themselves not merely personal and private ways of life but also a new social pattern of living which permits and expresses their new type of consciousness. They must create a manifest social pattern of avowed intentional living in which the higher type of consciousness can function. They must form a community which has the three functions which make a society an organism capable of creative growth—an effective psychiatry for uniting and expanding the individual, an appropriate economy for sustaining and forwarding the like-minded group, and an original policy—a message and a demonstration to the world that there is a way out of its tangle and a way ahead for life, if people choose to take it and pay the price. . . .

To most people, unaware of modern technical progress, the thought of a community which has predominantly psychological aims, raises in the mind the picture of a society painfully inadequate to supply sufficient resources to permit sufficient time for psycho-

logical advance. . . . A relapse into toil-dulled peasanthood is, however, no longer necessary. Man need not choose between being a social parasite and an agricultural drudge. If it is necessary for psychological advance, if it is required for further evolution that we make a directly productive society, a self-subsisting community, then it is not economics which any longer questions the feasibility of such a plan. . . .<sup>9</sup>

What then prevents intelligent people availing themselves of this way of deliverance? Nothing but the fact that society is, and must always be, based on psychology and have as its consequence and symptom of that psychology, an appropriate economics. We have tried to maintain that this is not so, that in fact the reverse is true, that economics is basic and psychology the resultant. In actual fact what we have is nothing of the sort. We simply endure a diseased economics inevitably springing from an evil psychology. . . .

Only those who have discovered the path of evolution, what is its next step and how we are to co-operate with that development, can know themselves as part of a self-transcending purpose. Only such as have this experience will possess the mutual social sanction which will hold a community together in an organic relationship. Such people and such only will have and cannot fail to have a sane economics, the sane economics which will give them the physical independence required in order that they may be free to advance to further consciousness.

The level of economic requirement, the standard of life, is then settled by the stage of psychological advance. The two must emerge together and balance. . . .\*

Gerald Heard, 1889-. English author, religious philosopher.  
*Pain, Sex and Time.*

Slowly, through all the universe, that temple of God is being built wherever, in any world, a soul, by free-willed obedience, catches the fire of God's likeness. When, in your hard fight, in your tiresome

<sup>9</sup> "Such authorities as Borsodi (School of Living, Suffern, New York) have shown that with the rise of the small power plants a community can become self-sufficing—and under a decentralized plan can thus actually live more plentifully than under the present economic system." See Mr. Heard's text, pages 219-223.

drudgery, or in your terrible temptation, you catch the purpose of your being, and give yourself to God, and so give him the chance to give himself to you, your life, a living stone, is taken up and set into the growing wall. . . . Wherever souls are being tried and ripened, in whatever commonplace and homely ways, there God is hewing out the pillars for his temple.\*

Phillips Brooks, 1835-1893, American clergyman.

Unto what is the kingdom of God like? And whereunto shall I liken it? It is like unto leaven, which a woman took and hid in three measures of meal, till it was all leavened. It is like a grain of mustard seed, which, when it is sown upon the earth, though it be less than all the seeds that are upon the earth, yet when it is sown, groweth up, and becometh greater than all the herbs, and putteth out great branches; so that the birds of the heaven can lodge under the shadow thereof.

Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a treasure hidden in the field; which a man found, and hid; and in his joy he goeth and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field.

If any man hath ears to hear, let him hear.

And take heed how ye hear: for whosoever hath, to him shall be given; and whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that which he thinketh he hath.\*\*

Jesus of Nazareth.





## APPENDIX

### *The Object of Devotion*

Men must be ruled by God or they will be ruled by tyrants.

WILLIAM PENN

I am in every religion as a thread through a string of pearls.

THE BHAGAVAD GITA

And ye shall seek me, and find me when ye shall search for me with all your heart.

JEREMIAH



## APPENDIX

### *The Object of Devotion*

While no uniform concept of the Object of Devotion is requisite to progression on the Way, a conviction of the fact of an ultimate reality obviously is necessary. Insofar as concepts contribute to that conviction, they are important. They can furnish the foothold needed to start the process of clarification. It is not as important *what* the beginning idea of God is, as *that* it is, and that it develops sufficiently to awaken the degree of devotion necessary to penetrate those levels of consciousness wherein lie the major obstacles to the perception and experience of Reality.

We have seen that there are several fields of knowledge<sup>1</sup> which provide evidence pointing toward the existence of a transcendent, immanent Reality. An approach to a conviction concerning this Reality can be made through the postulates of reason, the processes of history, the implications of science, the mystical insight into nature and art, or through actual personal manifestations of God in history. The material assembled in this appendix gives only the barest hint of what some men have glimpsed by means of these various approaches. Obviously each selection presents only a small portion of the author's full insight. Limitation of space prevents a more complete presentation of each. It is hoped that the selections will serve to illustrate the range in starting points toward a conviction of the Reality of God. The reader is urged to follow up whichever approaches seem real to him through supplementary reading.

For some readers these statements on the Object of Devotion may seem meaningless. Others may find them confusing. Such reactions need not bar the sincere aspirant from the Way, for as Henry Nelson Wieman writes, "People who live this Way have very diverse ideas of God, and some seem to have scarcely any idea of God at all." Those who are conditioned against all ideas of God as such should concentrate on whatever seems worthful to them, whether it be "Truth," "Love," "Simplicity,"

<sup>1</sup> See General Introduction.

"Integrity," or any attribute that speaks to them of permanency and value. Such value can provide the opening wedge to devotion.

There were four major advices discovered in our research concerning the Object of Devotion. (1) That no idea, nor yet all ideas of God, can approximate the actual Reality which men seek—that ideas are mere fragments of a Whole, mere clues to the infinite nature of the Good. That in this area more than in any other the words used to express ideas should be considered as symbols only and kept distinct from the actual Reality which they attempt to describe. (2) That no idea should be held or clung to as final, but rather that one should be ready to have his particular idea of God "smashed to bits . . . in order to, in an instant, find God . . . for God is the destroyer of gods." (3) That some ideas, particularly of anthropomorphic implication, block expanding cosmology and thus handicap a growing perception of God. (4) That those who progress beyond conviction through purgation to real Illumination and beyond, dismiss all ideas of God as such, for their experience transcends any rational concept. As Meister Eckhart preached: "To tell the truth, the intellect is no more content with (the idea of) God than it would be with a stone or a tree. It can never rest until it gets to the core of the matter, crashing through to that which is beyond the idea of God and truth, until it reaches the *in principio*, the beginning of beginnings, the origin or source of all goodness and truth." And as a modern philosopher expresses it: "No matter how true an idea of God religion may hand on, the true idea may constitute a wall which keeps God out, if it is adopted as an idea simply—that is to say, as a repetition of other men's insights, as a universal idea. God, who is truly said to explain man to himself, must explain me to myself. What I require to find in a god is that 'This is what I have wanted; this is what I have been meaning all the time; the world as I now see it is a world in which I as a primitive, various, infinitely discontented will, can completely live and breathe.' This is what the mystic is trying to make plain—that the idea, as a universal, is not sufficient for any man to live by.

"Hence the chief burden of his revelation (as if of the idea's own never-resting conscience) is that religion must exist as experience and not as idea only. There is nothing in sensation which physical science cannot exhaust, except the experience of having sensations: in the same way, there is nothing in the mystic experience not expressible in idea, except the experiencing itself. This is the chief part of the mystic knowledge which cannot be otherwise known, namely that the mystic experience is possible.

Monotonously and age after age, men rediscover and reannounce this invariant truth, as if they were calling on men to exist, to live, to save their souls. And what is it to save one's soul, if not to be original in this sense (and in what follows from it)? From this point of view the reiteration of the mystic is justified."<sup>2</sup>

All those who seek Thee tempt Thee,  
And those who find would bind Thee  
To gesture and to form.

But I would comprehend Thee  
As the wide Earth enfolds Thee.  
Thou growest with my maturity,  
Thou art in calm and storm.

I ask of Thee no vanity  
To evidence and prove Thee.  
Thou wert in aeons old.

Perform no miracles for me,  
But justify Thy laws to me—  
Which, as the years pass by me,  
All soundlessly unfold.

Rainer Maria Rilke, 1875-1926. German poet.  
*The Book of Hours*, Trans. Jessie Lemont.

## SOME MODERN IDEAS OF GOD

### God as the Completed Ideal Harmony

The order of the world is no accident. There is nothing actual which could be actual without some measure of order. The religious insight is the grasp of this truth: that the order of the world, the depth of reality of the world, the value of the world in its whole and in its parts, the beauty of the world, the zest of life, the peace of life, and the mastery of evil, are all bound together—not accidentally, but by

<sup>2</sup> *The Meaning of God in Human Experience*—pp. 450-51, by William Ernest Hocking.

reason of this truth: that the universe exhibits a creativity with infinite freedom, and a realm of forms with infinite possibilities; but that this creativity and these forms are together impotent to achieve actuality apart from the completed ideal harmony, which is God. . . .

The limitation of God is his goodness. He gains his depth of actuality by his harmony of valuation. It is not true that God is in all respects infinite. If He were, He would be evil as well as good. Also this unlimited fusion of evil with good would mean mere nothingness. He is something decided and is thereby limited.

He is complete in the sense that his vision determines every possibility of value. Such a complete vision coordinates and adjusts every detail. Thus his knowledge of the relationships of particular modes of value is not added to, or disturbed, by the realization in the actual world of what is already conceptually realized in his ideal world. This ideal world of conceptual harmonization is merely a description of God himself. Thus the nature of God is the complete conceptual realization of the realm of ideal forms. . . . God is the one systematic, complete fact, which is the antecedent ground conditioning every creative act.

The depths of his existence lie beyond the vulgarities of praise or of power. He gives to suffering its swift insight into values which can issue from it. He is the ideal companion who transmutes what has been lost into a living fact within his own nature. He is the mirror which discloses to every creature its own greatness.

The kingdom of heaven is not the isolation of good from evil. It is the overcoming of evil by good. This transmutation of evil into good enters into the actual world by reason of the inclusion of the nature of God, which includes the ideal vision of each actual evil so met with a novel consequent as to issue in the restoration of goodness.

God has in his nature the knowledge of evil, of pain, and of degradation, but it is there as overcome with what is good. . . . Every event on its finer side introduces God into the world. Through it his ideal vision is given a base of actual fact to which He provides the ideal consequent, as a factor saving the world from self-destruction.

tion of evil. The power by which God sustains the world is the power of himself as the ideal. He adds himself to the actual ground from which every creative act takes its rise. The world lives by its incarnation of God in itself.

God is that function in the world by reason of which our purposes are directed to ends which in our own consciousness are impartial as to our own interests. He is that element in life in virtue of which judgment stretches beyond facts of existence to values of existence. He is that element in virtue of which our purposes extend beyond values for ourselves to values for others. He is that element in virtue of which the attainment of such a value for others transforms itself into value for ourselves.

He is the binding element in the world. The consciousness which is individual in us, is universal in him; the love which is partial in us is all-embracing in him. Apart from him there could be no world, because there could be no adjustment of individuality. His purpose in the world is quality of attainment. His purpose is always embodied in the particular ideals relevant to the actual state of the world. Thus all attainment is immortal in that it fashions the actual ideals which are God in the world as it is now. Every act leaves the world with a deeper or a fainter impress of God. He then passes into his next relation to the world with enlarged, or diminished, presentation of ideal values.

He is not the world, but the valuation of the world. In abstraction from the course of events, this valuation is a necessary metaphysical function. Apart from it, there could be no definite determination of limitation required for attainment. But in the actual world, He confronts what is actual in it with what is possible for it. Thus He solves all indeterminations.

The passage of time is the journey of the world towards the gathering of new ideas into actual fact. This adventure is upwards and downwards. Whatever ceases to ascend, fails to preserve itself and enters upon its inevitable path of decay.\*



### God as Benevolent Power

I do dimly perceive that whilst everything around me is ever-changing, ever-dying, there is underlying all that change a Living Power that is changeless, that holds all together, that creates, dissolves, and re-creates. That informing Power or Spirit is God; and since nothing else that I see merely through the senses can or will persist, He alone is.

And is this power benevolent or malevolent? I see it as purely benevolent. For I can see that in the midst of death, life persists; in the midst of untruth, truth persists; in the midst of darkness, light persists. Hence I gather that God is Life, Truth, Light. He is Love. He is the supreme Good.

But He is no God who merely satisfies the intellect, if He ever does. God, to be God, must rule the heart and transform it. He must express Himself in every smallest act of His votary. This can only be done through a definite realization more real than the five senses can ever produce. Sense perceptions can be, and often are, false and deceptive, however real they may appear to us. Where there is realization outside the senses it is infallible. It is proved, not by extraneous evidence, but in the transformed conduct and character of those who have felt the real presence of God within.

Such testimony is to be found in the experiences of an unbroken line of prophets and sages in all countries and climes. To reject this evidence is to deny oneself.

This realization is preceded by an immovable faith. He who would in his own person test the fact of God's presence can do so by a living faith. Exercise of faith will be the safest where there is a clear determination summarily to reject all that is contrary to Truth and Love." \*

Mahatma K. Gandhi, 1869-1948. Hindu mystic, statesman.  
Quoted in *Gandhi's Ideas* by C. F. Andrews.

### God as Revealed in the Fundamental Contradictions within Science

Any effort to visualize God reveals a surprising childishness. We can no more conceive Him than we can conceive an electron. We forget that this incapacity is not, in itself, a proof of non-existence.

We are in the habit of juggling nowadays with electrons, protons, neutrons, etc. Individually, they are rigorously inconceivable and physicists, who inspire as much confidence today as did the priests in the past, affirm that without these particles our material objects, the forces we employ—in other words, our whole inorganic universe—become incoherent and unintelligible. (Let us not forget that these particles move in a world where time and space do not have the same value as in ours.) Nobody questions the reality of these now familiar though elusive and strange elements.

The agnostic and the atheist do not seem to be in the least disturbed by the fact that our entire organized, living universe becomes incomprehensible without the hypothesis of God. Their belief in some physical elements, of which they know very little, has all the earmarks of an irrational faith, but they are not aware of it. Some of them have remained slaves to a naive verbalism. I had the proof of this in a letter received after the publication of one of my books and in which the writer bitterly reproached me for having substituted the word "God" for the word "anti-chance." Now, the word "anti-chance" cannot be entirely satisfactory to a cultivated, scientific mind, for it simply signifies that the whole intellectual pattern which we call our science is basically wrong and, at best, but a set of artificial rules which, by a lucky chance, enables us to foresee a certain number of events. Indeed, as we have seen, modern science rests ultimately on statistical concepts and the calculus of probabilities. These laws postulate the completely disordered distribution of the constitutive elements of our universe. If we admit the possibility of an anti-chance in a part of this universe (the living world which has led to thought), the whole edifice crumbles unless we concede that Life obeys different laws. In either case, this is tantamount to accepting an irrational influence, foreign to our physical universe, as the determining factor in living and evolutive phenomena.

It matters little what name we give this influence. Today the study of life and evolution forces us to recognize that its action is logically required and has apparently always manifested itself in a "forbidden," ascensional direction finally to end in the thought and conscience of man. We, therefore, see no reason for not giving this

cause, which perturbs our intellectual pastimes and our ideas, the name men have given since time immemorial to all the causes which escaped them, causes exacted, but not explained, by our intelligence.

The idea of God is a pure idea, like the idea of force, or of energy, and does not need to be visualized; nor can it be. It develops either spontaneously through intuition, unworded and irrational, and is then called revelation; or else it emerges rationally from the contradictions observed between the homogeneous but tentative pattern proposed by science and objective reality which made the construction of this scheme possible. We have tried to emphasize these contradictions in the preceding chapters.

Should we keep our blind confidence in human reason and intelligence, we will attribute these contradictions to our momentary ignorance and will say: "In a near or distant future, new facts or new interpretations will enable us to shed light on these obscurities, due to our imperfect knowledge of reality. Science is One and there can be no real which escapes it." But in so doing we cease to think rationally, scientifically. We simply express a hope based on a sentimental trust in science. What is more, we completely lose sight of the fact that when these contradictions deal, as in our example, not with details, but with a set of fundamental concepts, which constitute the foundations of our science, we have actually shaken the whole scientific edifice in the name of which we have condemned Faith, and have been driven, by an equally irrational faith in an unaccountable abstractive intelligence, to demonstrate its failure.

It is natural and logical that the idea of God should emerge for those who, according to the language of the Church, have not been touched by grace, not only from such logical conflicts, but also from the following contradiction: we observe the existence of an immense number of facts, which for more than a thousand million years have tended to assure the persistence of species, and all of a sudden we are confronted with tendencies leading exactly in the opposite direction. "So far, thou wast only concerned with living and procreating; thou couldst kill, steal food or mates, and go to sleep peacefully after having obeyed all the instincts put in thee to assure a numerous descendance. From this day on, thou shalt combat these instincts, thou shalt

not kill, thou shalt not steal, thou shalt not covet. Thou shalt only sleep peacefully if thou hast mastered thyself. Thou shalt be ready to suffer and to give thy life, which yesterday thou wast forced to defend at any price, if thou art but asked to believe no longer that the ideal thou hast chosen is the only true one. To live, eat, fight, and procreate are no longer thy principal aims. Death, hunger, slavery, and chastity endured for a high ideal are nobler ends. And thou must be noble. It is the will of the new being who has risen in thee and whom thou must accept as master even though he curbs thy desires."

Alas, this new being does not yet inhabit all hearts, or if it does, its voice is still very feeble. It cannot grow unless it is clearly perceived and freely desired. It cannot blossom without effort.\*-\*\*

Lecomte du Noüy, 1883-1947. French bio-physicist.  
*Human Destiny.*

### Fundamental Component of Belief in God

Perhaps the fundamental component of a belief in God is the expression in action of an attitude of faith or trust. Its opposite is an attitude of fear. A man who is on the defensive in his attitude to life does not believe in God, whatever his professions may be. Belief in God necessarily delivers a man from fear and from self-centeredness, because it *is* his consciousness that he is not responsible for himself nor for the world in which he lives. It involves the recognition that his own life is a small, yet an essential part of the history of mankind, and that the life of mankind is a small but essential part of the universe to which it belongs. It involves the recognition that the control and the determination of all that happens in the world lies in the hands of a power that is irresistible and yet friendly. It is more than the recognition of this; it is the capacity to live as if this were so. It is the habit of living in the light of this faith. This is not all that is contained in the belief in God, but it is a fundamental and necessary element in it. Anyone who does behave in this way believes in God at least so far, whatever he himself may say about it. The opposite attitude, which is the core of real atheism, expresses itself in that individualism which makes a man feel alone and isolated in a world against which he must defend himself. Such a man may often be overwhelmed with a sense of his individual responsibility. He feels that

what happens to him depends upon himself. If he is responsible in a smaller or a greater degree for other people he feels that what happens to them depends upon himself. Consequently all that happens beyond his own control in the world appears as a series of fortunate or unfortunate accidents to which he must perpetually adjust himself. This *is* to disbelieve in God. For belief in God, whatever else it may involve, at least includes the capacity to live as part of the whole of things in a world which is unified. If we believe in God we live as if the fortunes of the world did not depend on us; we live as if the world could be trusted to work out its own destiny and to use us, even through our mistakes and our failures, for its own good purposes.

John MacMurray, 1891-. English Professor of Philosophy.  
*Creative Society.*

### God as Known by "Effects"

The further limits of our being plunge, it seems to me, into an altogether other dimension of existence from the sensible and merely "understandable" world. Name it the mystical region, or supernatural region, as you choose. So far as our ideal impulses originate in this region (and most of them originate in it) we belong to it in a more intimate sense than that in which we belong to the visible world, for we belong in the most intimate sense wherever our ideals belong. Yet the unseen region in question is not merely ideal for it produces effects in this world. When we commune with it, work is actually done upon our finite personality, for we are turned into new men, and consequences in the way of conduct follow in the natural world upon our regenerative change. But that which produces effects within another reality must be termed a reality itself, so I feel as if we had no philosophic excuse for calling the unseen or mystical world unreal.

God is the natural appellation, for us Christians at least, for the supreme reality, so I will call this higher part of the universe by the name of God. We and God have business with each other; and in opening ourselves to his influence our deepest destiny is fulfilled. The universe, at those parts of it which our personal being constitutes, takes a turn genuinely for the worse or for the better in proportion as each one of us fulfills or evades God's demands. As far as this goes I probably have you with me, for I translate into schematic

language what I may call the instinctive belief of mankind; God is real since he produces real effects.

William James, 1842-1910. American philosopher.  
*Varieties of Religious Experience.*

### God as in the Present Moment

Men esteem truth remote, in the outskirts of the system, behind the farthest star, before Adam and after the last man. In eternity there is indeed something true and sublime. But all these times and places and occasions are now and here. God Himself culminates in the present moment, and will never be more divine in the lapse of all the ages. And we are enabled to apprehend at all what is sublime and noble only by the perpetual instilling and drenching of the reality that surrounds us. The universe constantly and obediently answers to our conceptions; whether we travel fast or slow, the track is laid for us. Let us spend our lives in conceiving then. The poet or the artist never yet had so fair and noble a design.

Henry David Thoreau, 1817-1862. American philosopher.  
*Walden.*

### God as the Spirit in Which Truth Has Its Shrine

We recognise that the type of knowledge after which physics is striving is much too narrow and specialised to constitute a complete understanding of the environment of the human spirit. A great many aspects of our ordinary life and activity take us outside the outlook of physics. For the most part no controversy arises as to the admissibility and importance of these aspects; we take their validity for granted and adapt our life to them without any deep self-questioning. It is therefore somewhat of an anomaly that among the many extra-physical aspects of experience religion alone should be singled out as specially in need of reconciliation with the knowledge contained in science. Why should anyone suppose that all that matters to human nature can be assessed with a measuring rod or expressed in terms of the intersections of world-lines? If defence is needed, the defence of a religious outlook must, I think, take the same form as the defence of an aesthetic outlook. The sanction seems to lie in an inner feeling of growth or achievement found in the

exercise of the aesthetic faculty and equally in the exercise of the religious faculty. It is akin to the inner feeling of the scientist which persuades him that through the exercise of another faculty of the mind, namely its reasoning power, we reach something after which the human spirit is bound to strive.

It is by looking into our own nature that we first discover the failure of the physical universe to be co-extensive with our experience of reality. The "something to which truth matters" must surely have a place in reality whatever definition of reality we may adopt. In our own nature, or through the contact of our consciousness with a nature transcending ours, there are other things that claim the same kind of recognition—a sense of beauty, of morality, and finally at the root of all spiritual religion an experience which we describe as the presence of God. In suggesting that these things constitute a spiritual world I am not trying to substantialise them or objectivise them—to make them out other than we find them to be in our experience of them. But I would say that when from the human heart, perplexed with the mystery of existence, the cry goes up, "What is it all about?" it is no true answer to look only at that part of experience which comes to us through certain sensory organs and reply: "It is about atoms and chaos; it is about a universe of fiery globes rolling on to impending doom; it is about tensors and non-commutative algebra." Rather it is about a spirit in which truth has its shrine, with potentialities of self-fulfilment in its response to beauty and right. Shall I not also add that even as light and colour and sound come into our minds at the prompting of a world beyond, so these other stirrings of consciousness come from something which, whether we describe it as beyond or deep within ourselves, is greater than our own personality?

Sir Arthur Eddington, 1882–1944. English physicist, astronomer.  
*New Pathways in Science.*

### God as Pervading All Reality

If God pervades all reality, He must pervade material reality. If God is not in the material world, He is unreal or half-real. Traditional theology is confused and confusing on this point. On the one hand, it assures us that God made the heavens and the earth. On the

other hand, it defines God as a purely spiritual being, and thus politely banishes Him from the world that He has made. Thus many Christians are atheists in their conception of the material world and in their dealings with it.

Consider that all-important basis of our common life today: the Machine. Our own period of world-history began with the Industrial Revolution; any social revolutions, past or pending, would be unthinkable in this period without that mechanical revolution which increased man's power over nature a hundredfold or more. What is the religious meaning of the machine? Many Christians distrust it on principle. They look upon it as inhuman, unnatural, not to say diabolical, and godless. It figures in many sermons as a Frankenstein's monster that enslaves man. This is not only atheism, but nonsense as well. Only man can enslave man. Man can be enslaved through the machine (as he can also be liberated through the machine); never by the machine.

But there is nothing inhuman or unhuman about the machine. Only man can make it. A machine is as distinctively and brilliantly and expressively human as a violin sonata or a theorem in Euclid. It is not just a bit of matter. It is matter transformed in the likeness of a human thought. Indeed it is a human thought, projected from men's brain in the external world, given body, so it can carry on an independent existence. And it is not only man who expresses himself through the machine. It is God. For with the one exception of speech, the machine is the greatest instrument of human interdependence yet discovered. If God be "the power that makes us one," the order of reality that forces us out of exclusive isolation into creative unity with one another, then the machine is surely a divine agency.

One cannot overestimate the importance of this point. For it means that the command to love is written in the material structure of our everyday life. Mutuality is not just a shiny ideal that catches the eye of a few idealists. It is the demand of the historic process. It is not merely a moral obligation, which can be set aside because of more urgent practical necessities. It is the most urgently practical need of our life. It is a moral obligation precisely because it is also a



material necessity. For it is obvious that the machine is not a tool for individual production but for co-operative production; that it is essentially a public utility. It is created by co-operative scientific thinking. It can function only by linking together immense numbers of men as workers, managers, consumers. Take this public utility and make it the property of one man, or a few men, who will use it for their private profit, and what happens? You are trying, once again, to do the impossible. You try to turn an agency of co-operation into an agency of individual profit. You will not work it according to its own nature. So it will not work at all. And so you get closed factories, unemployed millions, and people suffering and dying for lack of those very things that men and factories could produce for the use of all, but cannot produce for the profit of a few. And common folk look at it all, and shake their heads, and say, "It is madness." That is just what it is. But the madness is not in the machine. The machine is one of the most compellingly rational of human discoveries. The madness is in those who would use a rational thing to further the irrational ends of exploitation and domination. It is the madness of trying to use an instrument of God for the purposes of the devil.

And what will God do? What can He do? He cannot change His nature to make up for our stupidity, and make unworkable things workable for our sake. The prophets discovered this long ago. They found that, if men will not know willingly the God of love, they will know unwillingly the God of wrath. There are not two gods. The God of wrath is the God of love vindicating Himself in the death of those who will not live in love. It is the laws of health that destroy those who disobey them. There are no laws of disease other than the laws of health. It is the laws of logic that condemn those who ignore them to nonsense and self-contradiction. The identical forms that show up the crookedness of illogical thinking prove the straightness of logical thinking. It is God, not the devil, who rules the world through the terror and desolation of unemployment and concentration camps and pogroms and air-raids, in Germany, in Spain, in China, in Poland. The initiative lies with God, and the judgment lies with God. The power of love perennially present in

the structure of human life, now more urgent than ever in the co-operative nature of the machine, is the power of God. It is pressing down upon human divisiveness and pride, crushing us in so far as we will not obey, destroying the old order that will not yield to the new.\*

Gregory Vlastos, 1909-. Canadian Professor of Philosophy.  
*Christian Faith and Democracy*

### God as Other Mind—as Eternal Substance

I shall always be more certain that God is, than what he is: it is the age-long problem of religion to bring to light the deeper characteristics of this fundamental experience. But the starting point of this development is no mere That Which, without predicates. Substance is known as Subject: reality from the beginning is known as God. The idea of God is not an attribute which in the course of experience I come to attach to my original whole-idea: the unity of my world which makes it from the beginning a whole, knowable in simplicity, is the unity of other Selfhood.

God then is immediately known, and permanently known, as the Other Mind which in creating Nature is also creating me. Of this knowledge nothing can despoil us; this knowledge has never been wanting to the self-knowing mind of man.

We may find our thought of God following in arrear of the best conception we have of ourselves; but it is only because we know that whatever selfhood we have is an involution of the selfhood of the Whole, and that our external relations to our fellows do but follow and reproduce in their own more distant fashion the relation of God to us which from his view is internal. Hence the remark that "Man is never long content to worship gods of moral character greatly inferior to his own" may be accepted, with its sting drawn, because of what we know of our relation to the Whole of which we are natural parts.

The conception of God as Law has its right in destroying the *poverty* of my thought of personality. I confess that this word "person" has for me a harsh and rigid sound, smacking of the Roman

Code. I do not love the word personality. I want whatever is accidental and arbitrary and atomic and limited and case-hardened about that conception to be persistently beaten and broken by whatever of God I can see in the living law and order of this Universe until it also has all such totality and warmth.

But I see that personality is a stronger idea than law; and has promise of mutuality and intercourse that laws, even if living, cannot afford. I see further that personality *can include law*, as law cannot include personality. And I see, finally, that this deepening conception of personality is not more an ideal than an experience. For God is not falsely judged in experience *to be both one and the other*. The negation of any one such attribute by the other is only for the enlargement of the first, not for its destruction. Until I can perfectly conceive personality, God must be for me alternately person and law; with the knowledge that these two attributes of one being are not, in truth, inconsistent, and that their mode of union is also something that I shall verify in some moment of present knowledge, as by anticipation of an ultimate attainment. Not only is God to be found in experience, but whatever attributes are genuinely predicated of him are to be found there also.

God is the Eternal Substance, and is known as such; God is also the Eternal Order of things: but God is That Which does whatever Substance is found to do. If it is the knowledge of God that first gives us our human comradeship and its varied and satisfying responsiveness, the God who is the bearer of that responsiveness is not himself without response. These comrades are in a measure God's organs of response, even as Nature is God's announcement of his presence and individuality: but God has also a responsiveness of his own, and herein lies the immediate experience of the personality of God. The relations between man and God have, in the course of religious history, become more deeply personal and passionate, with the deepening sense of evil and spiritual distress. The soul finds at length its divine companion. But as religion enters into these deeper and more fertile strata of the knowledge of God, it becomes evident that the development of religion falls increasingly upon the shoulders of individual men, whose experience of God and its cognitive con-

tent becomes authoritative for others. We find that religion becomes universal at the same time that it becomes most peculiarly personal, and takes its impetus and name from individual founders and prophets. Buddhism and Christianity and Islam are religions of redemption and of universal propagandism; and it is they, chiefly, that willingly refer their character and revelation of God to one person.\*

William Ernest Hocking, 1873-. American philosopher.  
*Meaning of God in Human Experience.*

### God as Immanent and Transcendent

It is foolish to seek for God outside of oneself. This will result either in idolatry or in scepticism. To seek God within oneself is better, but there is danger lest this will result in egomania, in becoming an opponent of order or a nihilist.

Therefore, he who truly seeks God should discover the unchangeable laws which operate outside of himself and recognize within himself a profound and mysterious purpose. Through being cognizant of a power which pervades both within and without, cognizant also of a world of growth which is common to both, recognizing, moreover, the immutability of the moral order and recognizing the fact that God as life fills both the inner and the outer, that He is the creator of absolute values, the preserver and unfold of all things—thus and thus only will one be able to cease going astray.

Kagawa, 1888-. Japanese social reformer, Christian evangelist.  
As quoted in *Kagawa* by William Axling.

### God as the "Self"—the Central Point of Personality

In the evolution of the personality, the aim is the attainment of the central point of the personality. It may perhaps be not immediately intelligible as to what is meant by the concept of the "central point of the personality." I will therefore try to sketch this problem in a few words. If consciousness with the ego as the centre is thought of as being placed opposite the unconscious, and if now the process of assimilating the unconscious be added to the mental picture, this assimilation can be thought of as a sort of approximation of the conscious and the unconscious whereby the centre of the total per-

sonality no longer coincides with the ego, but with a point midway between the conscious and the unconscious. This would be the point of new equilibrium, a new centering of the total personality, a virtual centre perhaps which, on account of its central position between the conscious and the unconscious, ensures the personality a new and more solid foundation. I freely admit that visualizations of this kind are never more than the awkward attempts of a fumbling mind to give some kind of form to inexpressible, and well-nigh indescribable, psychological facts. I could even express the same thing in the words of Paul: "Not I who live, but Christ who liveth in me." Or I might invoke Laotzu and appropriate his concept of Tao, the Middle Way and the creative centre of all things. Behind all these sayings the same meaning lies. Speaking now as a psychologist with a scientific conscience I have to declare that these facts are psychic factors of indisputable effect. They are not the discoveries of an idle mind, but definite psychic events. They obey absolutely definite laws, and have their own law-determined causes and effects, which accounts for the fact that they can be demonstrated just as well among the most varied peoples and races living to-day as among those of thousands of years ago. As to what these processes consist in I have no theory to offer. One would first have to know what the psyche is. I am content merely to state the facts.

The dissolution of the *mana*<sup>3</sup> personality naturally leads us, through the assimilation of its contents, back to ourselves as an existing, living something, stretched as it were between two worlds of images, from which forces proceed that are only dimly discerned but are all the more clearly felt. This something, though strange to us, is yet so near; it is altogether ourselves, and yet unrecognizable, a virtual middle-point of such a mysterious constitution that it can demand anything, relationship with animals and with gods, with crystals and with stars, without causing us to wonder, without even exciting our disapproval. This something demands all that and more, and therefore, with nothing in our hands which could fairly be opposed to these claims, it is surely wiser to listen to this voice.

<sup>3</sup> The power from the collective unconscious which emerges during the process of individuation and which must be assimilated. (Editors)

I have called this middle-point the self. Intellectually the self is nothing but a psychological concept, a construction that serves to express an undiscernible essence, and which in itself we cannot grasp, since, as its definition implies, it transcends our powers of comprehension. It might just as well be called "the God in us."<sup>4</sup> The beginnings of our whole psychic life seem to be inextricably rooted in this point, and all our highest and deepest purposes seem to be striving towards it. This paradox is unavoidable, for we always come to it when we try to describe something which lies beyond our power of comprehension.

The self has as much to do with the ego, as the sun with the earth. They are not interchangeable factors. This idea is as little concerned with the deification of man, as with the dethronement of God. What lies beyond our human understanding is out of our reach. If, therefore, we use the concept of a god, we are using it to formulate a definite psychological fact, namely, the independence and superiority of certain psychic contents which become manifest in their capacity to thwart the will, to obsess consciousness, and to influence moods and actions.\*

Carl G. Jung, M.D., 1875-. Swiss psychotherapist.  
*Two Essays on Analytical Psychology*, Trans. H. G. and C. F. Baynes.

### God as a Paradox

Although the concept of God is a spiritual principle par excellence, none the less the collective need will have it that it is at the same time an intuition of the first creative cause, out of which proceed all the forces of instinct that resist the spiritual principle. Thus God would be not only the spiritual light, appearing as the latest flower on the tree of evolution, not only the spiritual goal of redemption in which all creation culminates, not only the end and the purpose, but also the darkest, most primordial cause of nature's black deeps. This is a tremendous paradox which manifestly

<sup>4</sup> Dr. Jung's latest writings reveal an enlarged view of Reality. Whereas he formerly stressed only the immanent aspect of God, he now includes the transcendent aspect as well—"God without," as well as "God within" the personality. See his latest book *Psychology and Alchemy*—now being prepared in English and to be published soon by Kegan Paul, Trench, Trubner and Company, London. Also see *The Psychology of Transference*—page 253 of the German edition.

corresponds to a profound psychological truth. For it asserts an essential contradictoriness in one and the same being, a being whose innermost nature consists in the tension between opposites. Science calls this "being" energy, since energy is that something which is like a moving balance between the opposites. For this reason, an intuition of God, in itself impossibly paradoxical, may be so satisfying to human needs that no logic, however apparently valid, can stand against it. As a matter of fact, even the most profound contemplation could scarcely have discovered a more appropriate formula for this fundamental fact of inner perception.

Carl G. Jung, 1875-. Contemporary Swiss psychotherapist.  
*Contributions to Analytical Psychology.*

### God as Mystery and Meaning

A genuine Christian faith must move between those who claim to know so much about the natural world that it ceases to point to any mystery beyond itself, and those who claim to know so much about the mystery of the "unseen" world that all reverence for its secret and hidden character is dissipated. A genuine faith must recognize the fact that it is through a dark glass that we see; though by faith we do penetrate sufficiently to the heart of the mystery not to be overwhelmed by it. A genuine faith resolves the mystery of life by the mystery of God. It recognizes that no aspect of life or existence explains itself, even after all known causes and consequences have been traced. All known existence points beyond itself. To realize that it points beyond itself to God is to assert that the mystery of life does not dissolve life into meaninglessness. Faith in God is faith in some ultimate unity of life, in some final comprehensive purpose which holds all the various, and frequently contradictory, realms of coherence and meaning together. A genuine faith does not mark this mysterious source and end of existence as merely an X, or as an unknown quantity. The Christian faith, at least, is a faith in revelation. It believes that God has made Himself known. It believes that He has spoken through the prophets and finally in His Son. It accepts the revelation in Christ as the ultimate clue to the mystery of God's nature and purpose in the world, particularly the mystery of the relation of His justice to His mercy. But these

clues to the mystery do not eliminate the periphery of mystery. God remains *deus absconditus*.

Reinhold Niebuhr, 1892-. American theologian, educator, author.  
*Discerning the Signs of the Times.*

### God as Revealed in Jesus Christ

The approach of Faith, this appreciation of the nature of God as He has been unveiled in the ethical processes of history, especially in the Person of Christ, and in His expanding conquest of the world must always be one of the great factors of spiritual religion.

Once at least there shone through the thin veil of matter a personal Life which brought another kind of world than this world of natural law and utilitarian aims full into light. There broke through a revelation of Purpose in the Universe so far beyond the vague trend of purpose dimly felt in slowly evolving life that it is possible here to catch an illuminating vision of what the goal of the long drama may be—the unveiling of sons of God. Here the discovery can be made that the deepest Reality toward which Reason points, and which the mystical experience *feels*, is no vague Something Beyond, but a living, loving Someone, dealing with us as Person with person. In Him there comes to focus in a Life that we can love and appreciate a personal character which impresses us as being absolutely good, and as being in its inexhaustible depth of love and Grace worthy to be taken as the revelation of the true nature of the God whom all human hearts long for. And finally through this personal revelation of God in Christ there has come to us a clear insight that pain and suffering, and tragedy can be taken up into a self-chosen Life and absorbed without spoiling its immense joy, and that precisely through suffering-love, joyously accepted, a Person expressing in the world the heart of God may become the moral and spiritual Saviour of others.

Nowhere else in the universe—above us or within us—has the moral significance of life come so full into sight, or the reality of actual divine fellowship, whether in our aspirations or in our failures, been raised to such a pitch of practical certainty as in the personal life and death and resurrection and steady historical triumph of Jesus Christ. He shows the moral supremacy, even in this imperfect



empirical world, of the perfectly good will, and He impresses those who *see* Him—see Him, I mean, with eyes that can penetrate through the temporal to the eternal and find His real nature—as being the supreme personal unveiling of God, strong enough in His infinite Grace and divine self-giving to convince us of the eternal co-operation of God with our struggling humanity, and to settle our Faith in the essential Saviourhood of God.

He who sees *that* in Christ has found a real way to God and has discovered a genuine way of salvation. It is the way of Faith, but Faith is no airy and unsubstantial road, no capricious leap. There is no kind of aimful living conceivable that does not involve faith in something trans-subjective—, faith in something not given in present empirical experience. Even in our most elementary life-adjustments there is something operative in us which far underlies our conscious perceiving and the logic of our conclusions. We are moved, not alone by what we clearly picture and coldly analyse, but by deep-lying instincts which defy analysis, by background and foreground fringes of consciousness, by immanent and penetrative intelligence which cannot be brought to definite focus, by the vast reservoirs of accumulated wisdom through which we *feel* the way to go though we can pictorially envisage no “spotted trees” that mark the trail.

This religious and saving Faith, through which the soul discovers God and makes the supreme life-adjustment to Him, is profoundly moral and, in the best sense of the word, rational. It does not begin with an assumption, blind or otherwise, as to Christ’s metaphysical nature, it does not depend upon the adoption of systematically formulated doctrines; it becomes operative through the discovery of a personal Life, historically lived—and continued through the centuries as a transforming Spirit—rich enough in its experience to exhibit the infinite significance of life, inwardly deep enough in its spiritual resources to reveal the character of God, and strong enough in sympathy, in tenderness, in patience, and in self-giving love to beget forever trust and confidence and love on the part of all who thus find Him.

The God whom we learn to know in Christ—the God historically

revealed—is no vague first Cause, no abstract Reality, no all-negating Absolute. He is a concrete Person, whose traits of character are intensely moral and spiritual. His will is no fateful swing of mechanical law; it is a morally good will which works patiently and forever toward a harmonized world, a Kingdom of God. The central trait of His character is Love. He does not *become* Father. He is not reconciled to us by persuasive offerings and sacrifices. He is inherently and by essential disposition Father and the God of all Grace. He is not remote and absentee—making a world “in the beginning,” and leaving it to run by law, or only occasionally interrupting its normal processes—He is immanent Spirit, working always, the God of beauty and organizing purpose. He is Life and Light and Truth, an Immanuel God who can and does show Himself in a personal Incarnation, and so exhibits the course and goal of the race.\*

Rufus M. Jones, 1863–. American philosopher, author.  
*Spiritual Reformers of the 16th and 17th Centuries.*

He is the Way.

Follow Him through the Land of Unlikeness;

You will see rare beasts, and have unique adventures.

He is the Truth.

Seek Him in the Kingdom of Anxiety;

You will come to a great city that has expected your return for years.

He is the Life.

Love Him in the World of the Flesh;

And at your marriage all its occasions shall dance for joy.

W. H. Auden, 1907–. English poet.  
From *For the Time Being*, a Christmas Oratorio.

## SOME GENERALIZED MYSTIC IDEAS OF GOD

It is striking to note the remarkable similarity in the ideas of the Object of Devotion as expressed by the great mystics in all religions. Their ideas lose specific content, and launch into greater and greater

abstractions regarding their beloved. Their experience of God seems so much greater than any conceptual knowledge of Him that they are forced to leave all ideas as such, and can only express the weight of their new knowledge through such generalizations as "the ground of the soul," "the deepest abyss," "the inner motive force," "That which is," "the inner Voice," and "the inner Light." They seem to agree with Olier, who writes: "It is better to make a complete and perfect sacrifice of metaphysical speculation, and simply to adore the unknown mystery of God's grace. You cannot believe how profitable is intellectual silence in regard to these things, and how well it holds the soul in freedom, humility and simplicity."

#### NEO-PLATONIC EXPRESSION

Those divinely possessed and inspired have at least the knowledge that they hold some greater thing within them, though they cannot tell what it is; from the movements that stir them and the utterances that come from them they perceive the power that moves them: in the same way, it must be, we stand towards the Supreme when we hold intellect pure; we know the Divine Mind within, that which gives Being and all else of that order; but we know, too, that it is none of these, but a nobler principle than anything we know as Being—fuller and greater; above reason, mind and feeling—confering these powers.

Plotinus, 204-270, Greek philosopher, mystic

#### JEWISH EXPRESSION

O Lord, thou hast searched me, and known me.  
 Thou knowest my downsitting and mine uprising,  
 Thou understandest my thought afar off.  
 Thou searchest out my path and my lying down,  
 And art acquainted with all my ways.  
 For there is not a word in my tongue,  
 But, lo, O Lord, thou knowest it altogether.  
 Thou hast beset me behind and before,  
 And laid thine hand upon me.

Such knowledge is too wonderful for me;  
It is high, I cannot attain unto it.  
Whither shall I go from thy spirit?  
Or whither shall I flee from thy presence?  
If I ascend up into heaven, thou art there:  
If I make my bed in Sheol, behold, thou art there.  
If I take the wings of the morning,  
And dwell in the uttermost parts of the sea;  
Even there shall thy hand lead me,  
And thy right hand shall hold me.  
If I say, Surely the darkness shall overwhelm me,  
And the light about me shall be night;  
Even the darkness hideth not from thee,  
But the night shineth as the day:  
The darkness and the light are both alike to thee.  
Search me, O God, and know my heart,  
Try me, and know my thoughts;  
And see if there be any way of wickedness in me,  
And lead me in the way everlasting.

*From the 139th Psalm, Old Testament.*

#### CHRISTIAN MYSTIC EXPRESSIONS

Thou calledst, and shoutedst, and burstest, my deafness. Thou flashedst, shonest, and scatteredst my blindness. Thou breathedst odours, and I drew in breath and pant for Thee. Thou touchedst me, and I burned for Thy peace. For Thou hast created us for Thyself, and our heart is restless until it find rest in Thee.

Not with doubting, but with assured consciousness, do I love Thee Lord. Thou hast stricken my heart with Thy word, and I loved Thee. Yea also heaven, and earth, and all that therein is, behold, on every side they bid me love Thee. But what do I love, when I love Thee? not beauty of bodies, nor the fair harmony of time, nor the brightness of the light, so gladsome to our eyes, nor sweet melodies of varied songs, nor the fragrant smell of flowers, and ointments, and spices, not manna and honey, not limbs acceptable to embracements

of flesh. None of these I love, when I love my God; and yet I love a kind of light, and melody, and fragrance, and meat, and embracement, when I love my God, the light, melody, fragrance, meat, embracement of my inner man: where there shineth unto my soul, what space cannot contain, and there soundeth, what time beareth not away, and there smelleth, what breathing disperseth not, and there tasteth, what eating diminisheth not, and there clingeth, what satiety divorceth not. This is it which I love, when I love my God.

And what is this? I asked the earth, and it answered me, "I am not He;" and whatsoever are in it, confessed the same. I asked the sea and the deeps, and the living creeping things, and they answered, "We are not thy God, seek above us." I asked the moving air; and the air with his inhabitants answered, "I am not God." I asked the heavens, sun, moon, stars, "Nor (say they) are we the God whom thou seekest." And I replied unto all the things which encompass the door of my flesh, "Ye have told me of my God, that ye are not He; tell me something of Him." And they cried out with a loud voice, "He made us." (The invisible things of God speak to all; but they only, understand, who compare the voice received from without, with the truth within.)

What then do I love, when I love my God? By my very soul will I ascend to Him. I will pass beyond that power whereby I am united to my body. I will pass beyond this power of mine which is called memory, desirous to arrive at Thee, and to cleave unto Thee.

How then do I seek Thee, O Lord? For when I seek Thee, my God, I seek a happy life. I will seek Thee, that my soul may live. For my body liveth by my soul; and my soul by Thee. Nor is it I alone, or some few besides, but we all would fain be happy; a happy life is joy in the truth: for this is a joying in Thee, Who art the Truth, O God my light, health of my countenance, my God. Happy then will man be, when, no distraction interposing, he shall joy in that only Truth, by Whom all things are true.

Too late loved I Thee, O Thou Beauty of ancient days, yet ever new! Behold, Thou wert within, and I abroad, and there I searched for Thee. Thou wert with me, but I was not with Thee. When I shall with my whole self cleave to Thee, I shall no where have

sorrow, or labour; and my life shall wholly live, as wholly full of Thee.\*-\*\*

Saint Augustine, 354-430. Latin church Father, Christian mystic.  
*Confessions*, Trans. E. B. Pusey

Oh, who will give me a voice that I may cry aloud to the whole world that God, the all highest, is in the deepest abyss within us and is waiting for us to return to Him. Oh, my God, how does it happen in this poor old world, that Thou art so great and yet nobody finds Thee, that Thou callest so loudly and nobody hears Thee, that Thou art so near and nobody feels Thee, that Thou givest Thyself to everybody and nobody knows Thy name! Men flee from Thee and say they cannot find Thee; they turn their backs and say they cannot see Thee; they stop their ears and say they cannot hear Thee!

Hans Denck, 1495-1527. German mystic, spiritual reformer.  
*On the Law of God*.

How inexhaustible God's resources, wisdom, and knowledge are! How unfathomable his decisions are, and how untraceable his ways! Who has ever known the Lord's thoughts, or advised him?

Or who advanced anything to him, for which he will have to be repaid?

For from him everything comes; through him everything exists; and in him everything ends! Glory to him forever!

Saint Paul, first century Christian Apostle.  
*New Testament*, Trans. E. J. Goodspeed.

For silence is not God, nor speaking is not God; fasting is not God, nor eating is not God; loneliness is not God, nor company is not God; nor yet any of all the other two such contraries. He is hid between them, and may not be found by any work of thy soul, but all only by love of thine heart. He may not be known by reason, He may not be gotten by thought, nor concluded by understanding; but He may be loved and chosen with the true lovely will of thine heart. . . . Such a blind shot with the sharp dart of longing love may never fail of the prick, the which is God.<sup>5</sup>

<sup>5</sup> *The Epistle of Discretion*.

But now thou askest me and sayest, "How shall I think on Himself, and what is He?" and to this I cannot answer thee but this: "I wot not."

For thou hast brought me with thy question into that same darkness, and into that same cloud of unknowing, that I would thou wert in thyself. For of all other creatures and their works, yea, and of the works of God's self, may a man through grace have fullhead of knowing, and well he can think of them: but of God Himself can no man think. And therefore I would leave all that thing that I can think, and choose to my love that thing that I cannot think. For why; He may well be loved, but not thought. By love may He be gotten and holden; but by thought never. And therefore, although it be good sometime to think of the kindness and the worthiness of God in special, and although it be a light and a part of contemplation: nevertheless yet in this work it shall be cast down and covered with a cloud of forgetting. And thou shalt step above it stalwartly, but listily, with a devout and a pleasing stirring of love, and try for to pierce that darkness above thee. And smite upon that thick cloud of unknowing with a sharp dart of longing love; and go not thence for anything that befallleth.<sup>6</sup>

Unknown author, English mystic, fourteenth century.

He who does not love does not know God; for God is love. . . .

God is love, and he that dwelleth in love, dwelleth in God and God in him.

Saint Paul, first century Christian.  
*New Testament.*

## TAOIST EXPRESSION

There is a primal essence that is all-inclusive and undifferentiated and which existed before there was any appearance of heaven and earth. How tranquil and empty it is! How self-sufficing and changeless! How omnipresent and infinite! Yet this tranquil emptiness becomes the Mother of all. Who knows its name? I can only

<sup>6</sup> *The Cloud of Unknowing*. Edited by Evelyn Underhill.

characterize it and call it *Tao*. Though it is quite inadequate, I will even call it the Great. But how boundless is its Greatness! It stretches away into the far distances (like a circle) only to return again.

*Tao* is eternal but is unnamable. Its simplicity, though considered as of the humblest, is most independent. Nothing in the world is able to bring it into subjection.

Great *Tao* is all pervading! It is available everywhere, on the right hand and on the left. Everything is dependent upon it for existence and it never fails them.

*Tao* is invisible but permeates everywhere; no matter how one uses it or how much, it is never exhausted.

To common people *Tao's* principle of simplicity and humility seems weak and insipid; they desire and seek music and dainties. Indeed, *Tao* has no taste! When looked at, there is nothing to be prized; when listened for, it can scarcely be heard; but its satisfactions are inexhaustible.

*Tao* acts without assertion, yet all things proceed in conformity with it.

The superior man, as soon as he listens to *Tao*, earnestly practices *Tao*; an average man, hearing of *Tao*, sometimes remembers it and sometimes forgets it; an inferior man, hearing of *Tao*, ridicules it. If it were not thus ridiculed, it would not be worth following as *Tao*.\*

Laotzu, born about 604 B.C. Chinese philosopher, founder of Taoism.  
*Laotzu's Tao and Wu-Wei*, Trans. by Bhikshu Wai-dau and D. Goddard.

## HINDU EXPRESSION

Formless, that self-luminous Being exists within and without, higher than the highest. From Him issue life, and mind, and senses—ether, air, water, fire, and the earth. . . . He is the innermost Self in all beings. He who knows him hidden in the shrine of his heart cuts the knot of ignorance even in this life. Self-luminous, ever present in the hearts of all, is the great Being. He is the refuge of all. In Him exists all that moves and breathes. Adorable is He. He is the supreme goal. He is beyond the known, and beyond the knowable.



He is self-luminous, subtler than the subtlest; in Him exist all the worlds and those that live therein. He is that imperishable *Brahman*. He is the life-principle; He is the speech and the mind; He is the truth; He is immortal. He is to be realized. Attain Him, O friend.

*Upanishad* (Mundaka) The Old Testament of Hindu Scriptures.  
Trans. Swami Prabhavananda.

## Suggested Reading

- Auden, W. H., *For the Time Being; The Age of Anxiety*.  
Baker, Augustin F., *Holy Wisdom*.<sup>1</sup>  
Boisen, Anton, *The Exploration of the Inner World*.<sup>2</sup>  
*The Bible*—Modern Translations by Edgar J. Goodspeed and James Moffatt; and the Revised Standard Version (1946).  
*The Bhagavad Gita*—Translations by Arthur Ryder; Prabhavananda & Isherwood (1944); Nikhilananda (1944).  
*A Buddhist Bible*—Edited by Dwight Goddard.  
Chapman, Dom John, *Spiritual Letters*.<sup>1</sup> (advanced).  
Cheney, Sheldon, *Men Who Have Walked With God*.  
Coster, Geraldine, *Yoga and Western Psychology*.<sup>2</sup>  
Dewey, John, *A Common Faith*.  
Dunbar, Flanders, *Mind and Body*.<sup>2</sup> (Psychosomatic Medicine).  
Eckhart, Meister—Translation by R. B. Blakney (advanced).  
Eliot, T. S., *Four Quartettes; Family Reunion*.  
Fénelon, Francois, *Spiritual Letters of Archbishop Fénelon*.<sup>1</sup>—Translation by H. L. S. Lear; *Christian Perfection*—Translation by M. W. Stillman (1947).  
Field, Johanna, *A Life of One's Own*.<sup>2</sup>  
Fosdick, H. E., *On Being a Real Person*.  
Frost, Bede, *The Art of Mental Prayer*.<sup>1</sup>  
Grou, Jean Nicholas, *The Hidden Life*.  
Guild of Pastoral Psychology—Lectures. 65 Cottenham Park Rd., London, SW 20.  
Gregg, Richard, *The Power of Non-Violence*.  
Harding, Esther, *The Way of All Women*.<sup>2</sup>  
Heard, Gerald, *A Preface to Prayer*; <sup>1</sup> *The Creed of Christ*; <sup>1</sup> *The Code of Christ; The Source of Civilisation*.  
Herman, E., *Creative Prayer*.<sup>1</sup>  
Hocking, William E., *Human Nature and Its Remaking*; <sup>2</sup> *The Meaning of God in Human Experience*.  
Horney, Karen, *The Neurotic Personality of Our Time*; <sup>2</sup> *Self Analysis*.<sup>2</sup>

- Horton, Walter M. and H. N. Wieman, *The Growth of Religion*.  
 Huxley, Aldous, *The Perennial Philosophy*; <sup>1</sup> *Ends and Means*.  
 Inge, W. R., *Personal Religion and the Life of Devotion*.  
*Imitation of Christ*, Whitford's translation.  
 Jacobi, Jolan, *The Psychology of Jung*.  
 James, William, *Varieties of Religious Experience*.  
 Jones, Rufus, *Spiritual Reformers of the 16th and 17th Centuries; Pathways to the Reality of God; The Luminous Trail* (1947).  
 Jung, Carl G., *Modern Man in Search of a Soul*; <sup>2</sup> *The Integration of the Personality*; <sup>2</sup> *Psychological Types*; <sup>2</sup> *The Secret of the Golden Flower*.<sup>2</sup>  
 (Commentary by Dr. Jung.)  
 Kelley, Thomas, *A Testament of Devotion*.  
 Kierkegaard, Soren, *Purity of Heart; Christian Discourses; Sickness Unto Death*.  
 Kunkel, Fritz, *How Character Develops*; <sup>2</sup> *In Search of Maturity*; <sup>2</sup> *Creation Continues*.<sup>2</sup>  
 Laotzu, *Tao Teh King*—Translations by Arthur Waley, Witter Bynner, and Dwight Goddard.  
 Lee, Gerald Stanley, *Heathen Rage* (Body-mind Coordination).  
 Lee, Jennette, *The Magic Body* (Body-mind Coordination).  
 Lewis, C. S., *Screwtape Letters; Beyond Personality; Miracles*.  
 Liebman, Joshua Loth, *Peace of Mind*.<sup>2</sup>  
 Lin Yutang, editor, *The Wisdom of China and India*.  
 Lounsbury, G. Constant, *Buddhist Meditation*.<sup>1</sup>  
 MacMurray, John, *Reason and Emotion*.<sup>2</sup>  
 May, Rollo, *Springs of Creative Living*.<sup>2</sup>  
 Meland, Bernard E., *Modern Man's Worship*.<sup>1</sup>  
 Menninger, Karl, *Man Against Himself*.<sup>2</sup>  
 Millay, Edna St. Vincent, *Conversation at Midnight*; and the poem *Renascence*.  
 Murry, John Middleton, *Keats and Shakespeare; God*.  
 Niebuhr, Reinhold, *The Nature and Destiny of Man; Discerning the Signs of the Times*.  
 Noüy, Lecomte du, *Human Destiny*.  
 Northrup, F. C. S., *The Meeting of East and West*.  
 Péguy, Charles, *Charles Péguy: (Basic Verities)*—Prose and Poetry, Vol. I  
 Pourrat, P., *Christian Spirituality*.<sup>1</sup>  
 Poulain, Père A., *Graces of Interior Prayer* <sup>1</sup> (Technical).  
 Rilke, Rainer Maria, *Duino Elegies; Letters to a Young Poet*.

Rogers, Carl, *Counselling and Psychotherapy*.<sup>2</sup>

*Russian Letters of Direction*, Marcarius.

Sales, St. Francis de, *Introduction to the Devout Life*; <sup>1</sup> *On the Love of God*.

Sharman, Henry Burton, *Records of the Life of Jesus; Jesus as Teacher*.

Sheldon, William, *Psychology and the Promethean Will*.<sup>2</sup>

Steere, Douglas, *Prayer and Worship*; <sup>1</sup> *On Beginning from Within*.<sup>1</sup>

Temple, William, *Nature, Man, and God*.

Tillyard, Alfreda, *Spiritual Exercises*.<sup>1</sup>

Toynbee, Arnold J., *A Study of History* (An abridgment of Vol. I-VI by Somervell).

Trueblood, D. Elton, *Predicament of Modern Man*.

Underhill, Evelyn, *Mysticism*; <sup>1</sup> *The Spiritual Life; Worship*.<sup>1</sup>

Unknown, *The Cloud of Unknowing* <sup>1</sup> (advanced).

Watts, Allan, *The Meaning of Happiness*.

Wickes, Frances G., *The Inner World of Childhood*; <sup>2</sup> *The Inner World of Man*.<sup>2</sup>

Wieman, H. N., *Methods of Private Religious Living*; <sup>1</sup> *Issues of Life*.

Woolman, John, *Journal*.

<sup>1</sup> For specific instructions on Prayer.

<sup>2</sup> Psychological interpretations, personality structure, self-education procedures, etc.



## Index of Authors

- Auden, W. H., 17, 41, 42, 489  
 Augustine, St., 7, 141, 491  
 Axling, William, 379, 432
- Baker, Augustin, 114, 175, 181, 211, 235, 278, 290, 294  
 Barth, Karl, 48  
 Baynes, H. G., 324  
 Bennett, Charles, 366  
 Bernard, St., 97  
 Bhagavad-Gita, 13, 359, 409, 465  
 Blake, William, 1, 46, 424  
 Boisen, Anton T., 76  
 Boodin, John Elof, 6  
 Brooks, Phillips, 98, 462  
 Buddha, 72, 392, 419  
 Buttrick, George A., 284
- Calhoun, Robert Lowry, 350  
 Carlyle, Thomas, 155  
 Carpenter, Edward, 46, 367, 375  
 Carrel, Alexis, 193, 460  
 Caussade, Pere de, 263  
 Chapman, Dom John, 151, 185, 212  
*Cloud of Unknowing, The*, 83, 93, 261, 264, 292, 494  
 Coe, George Albert, 16, 175  
 Collier, Howard E., 177, 193, 303, 347
- Dawson, Marshall, 410, 442, 446  
 Denck, Hans, 44, 493  
 Dewey, John, 23  
*Dhammapada, The*, 3, 66  
 Dickerson, R. E., 70, 73, 77, 103, 148, 151, 307, 332, 360  
 Dickinson, Emily, 16  
 Donne, John, 149, 408  
 Dorotheus, Abba, 413
- Ecclesiasticus, 160  
 Eckhart, Meister Johannes, 5, 30, 53, 69, 73, 89, 91, 96, 204, 210, 322, 355, 369, 380, 428  
 Eddington, Sir Arthur, 5, 477  
 Epictetus, 89  
 Exupery, Antoine de St., 165
- Faussett, Hugh L'Anson, 14, 102  
 Fenelon, Francois, 21, 77, 92, 93, 96, 98, 109, 137, 140, 145, 154, 161, 263  
 Fleg, Edmond, 222  
 Fordham, Michael, 293, 299  
 Fosdick, Harry Emerson, 335
- Fox, George, 99, 100, 375  
 Frost, Bede, 196, 208, 213, 240, 242, 287, 289
- Gandhi, M., 410, 412, 472  
 Goethe, Johann Wolfgang von, 17  
 Greek Mysteries, 261  
 Gregg, Richard, 184  
 Grou, Jean Nicholas, 140, 161, 213, 293, 360, 399
- Heard, Gerald, 45, 59-64, 104, 114, 187, 286, 295, 352, 461  
 Herman, Emily, 185  
 Hinkle, Beatrice, 4  
 Hobbhouse, L. T., 19  
 Hocking, William Ernest, 158, 179, 469, 481  
 Holmes, John Haynes, 453  
 Horney, Karen, 128  
 Horton, Walter M., 175  
 Hugel, Friedrich von, 293  
 Hunter, Allan A., 434  
 Hunter, Elizabeth, 282  
 Huxley, Aldous L., 40, 131, 190, 218, 265, 266, 267, 340, 356, 359, 407, 430, 445  
 Huxley, Thomas H., 92
- Isaiah*, 262, 263
- Jacobi, Jolan, 120, 312, 325  
 James, William, 476  
*Jeremiah*, 260, 382, 465  
*John, Gospel of*, 104, 425  
 Johnson, Josephine, 383, 402  
 Jones, E. Stanley, 47, 159, 261  
 Jones, Rufus, 289, 429, 447, 457, 487  
 Jung, Carl G., 32, 81, 86, 101, 102, 109, 134, 261, 305, 318, 322, 432, 483
- Kagawa, Toyohiko, 378, 389, 483  
 Keats, John, 261  
 Kelly, Thomas R., 231, 451  
 Kempis, Thomas a, 1, 37, 49, 92, 110, 260  
 Kierkegaard, Soren, 29, 94, 143, 146  
 Kunkel, Fritz, 7, 69, 70, 73, 77, 103, 117, 137, 148, 151, 196, 234, 299, 300, 307, 327, 332, 360, 402
- Laotzu, 10, 13, 15, 112, 386, 390, 409, 419, 494  
 Law, William, 41, 58, 88, 132, 272, 285, 349, 413  
 Lawrence, Brother, 163, 195, 371

- Lawrence, D. H., 449  
 Leen, Edward, 87, 132, 185, 261  
 Le Roy, Edouard, 178  
 Lester, Muriel, 247  
 Lewis, C. S., 340  
 Liebman, Joshua Loth, 58, 134, 160  
*Little Flowers of St. Francis*, 429, 456  
 Lounsbury, Grace C., 256, 281  
 Luke, Gospel of, Intro., 12, 52, 96, 101
- MacMurray, John, 14, 358, 399, 402, 475  
 Mansfield, Katherine, 153  
*Mark, Gospel of*, 68, 449  
 Martineau, James, 182  
*Matthew, Gospel of*, 45, 92, 327, 332  
 May, Rollo, 300  
 McDowell, William Fraser, 92  
 Meland, Bernard E., 18, 186  
*Mirror of Perfection*, 388  
 Morgan, Charles, 49  
 Morgan, Elise, 271  
 Mozoomder, Protap Chundar, 82  
 Muilenberg, James, 8  
 Murry, John Middleton, 18, 50, 84, 106, 321, 373, 382
- Nehru, Jawaharlal, 436  
 Niebuhr, Reinhold, 96, 424, 486  
 Nouy, Lecomte du, 6, 41, 473  
 Nugent, Harriet, 262
- O'Meara, Kathleen, 122
- Paul, St., 74, 88, 103, 110, 262, 263, 264, 309, 349, 369, 378, 397, 409, 414, 416, 484, 493, 494  
 Péguy, Charles, 17, 335, 363, 421  
 Penn, William, 388, 465  
 Pennington, Isaac, 99, 145  
 Planck, Max, 15  
 Plato, 124, 395  
 Plotinus, 490  
 Poncins, Gontran de, 392  
 Poulain, A., 199, 277  
 Prabhavananda, Swami, 358  
*Proverbs*, 262  
*Psalms*, 6, 117, 118, 263, 329, 330, 378, 490
- Raymond, Ruth, 268  
 Rilke, Rainer Maria, 377, 469  
 Romer, Alfred, 82, 261  
 Roos, Ann, 439
- Rudhyar, Dane, 85  
 Russell, Bertrاند, 46  
 Russell, George William, 398
- Sales, St. Francis de, 211, 237, 284  
 Salisbury, Helen M., 228  
 Schweitzer, Albert, 423, 435  
 Shakespeare, William, 128  
 Sharman, H. B., 373  
 Sheldon, William H., 4, 112, 304  
 Smith, Hannah Whitehall, 141  
 Soutar, William, 376  
 Spinoza, Benedict, 51, 55, 191  
 Steere, Douglas V., 179, 220, 343  
 Stuart, R. H. J., 42, 91
- Tagore, Rabindranath, 151  
 Tauler, Johann, 7  
 Temple, William, 183, 418  
 Terlin, Rose, 351, 415  
*Theologica Germanica*, 35, 39, 69, 114  
 Thoreau, Henry David, 89, 99, 143, 147  
 Tillich, Paul, 319  
 Tillyard, Aelfreda, 260  
 Tolstoi, Lyof N., 365, 387  
 Toynbee, A. J., Intro., 357  
 Trueblood, D. Elton, 343  
 Tszsze, 397  
 Tukaram, 376
- Underhill, Evelyn, 42, 53, 113, 142, 175, 201, 205, 289, 292, 335  
*Upanishad*, Intro., 495
- Vernier, Philippe, 354  
 Vivekananda, Swami, 361  
 Vlastos, Gregory G., 26, 176, 336, 420, 429, 438, 478
- Wang-Yang-Ming, 350  
 Watts, Alan, 64, 72  
 Whitehead, Alfred North, 469  
 Whitney, Janet, 383, 441  
 Wickes, Frances, 5, 69, 136, 261, 314, 315, 380, 415  
 Wieman, Henry N., 24, 25, 89, 90, 273, 337, 350, 407, 408, 417  
 Wodehouse, Helen, 44  
 Wolff, Toni, 47, 229  
 Woolman, John, 410, 422  
 Wordsell, Edward, 113  
 Wu Ming Fu, 14

## *Index of Subject Matter*

Poems are indicated by title where given—otherwise by first line.

### A

"A sound man's heart is not shut within itself," 409  
 Absolute, attainment through contemplation, 207  
 Abundant life, through releasing the Self, 72  
 Abyss: affective prayer on, 281; connected with ego, 75; as unbearable situation, 76  
 Acceptance: brings change, 153; necessary in mortification, 218; wider acceptance, 59  
 Achievement: emotion and motive, 44; mediocrity of, 110  
 Action: 349-367; abandoning fruits of, 359; and the "cause," 363; and We-activity, 360; as a technique, 172, 307, 358; as dependent on feelings, 278; as affected by self-knowledge, 432; as related to insight, 352; in life of Jesus, 358; as related to knowledge, 350; new technique of, 437; of theocentric, 429; as "yes" to the Light, 172; of creative personalities, 357; of the expert, 355; levels of, 293, 434; prepared for by prayer, 351; toward brotherhood, 352; *See also*: Work  
 Activity: of Jesus, 358; as needing roots, 365; of American Friends, 448; of the shadow, 315; of the theocentric, 430  
 Activities, outward, as needing transformation, 360  
 Acts: of love, 361; of the will, 237; return to consideration of, 198  
 Adler, Alfred, 302, 309  
 Adultery, woman taken in, 425  
 Adversity: to be acceptable to, 160; use of in spiritual life, 280  
 Affections: converted into resolutions, 239; of the will (Franciscan), 242  
 Affliction, as treasure, 147, 149, 158  
 Alexander, F. M., 226  
 "All those who seek Thee tempt Thee," 469  
 Allegiance, partial, 92  
 Ambition, as assignment of God, 98  
 American Friends Service Committee, 448  
 Analysis, of dreams, 309  
 "And so throughout eternity," 424  
 Anima, defined, 120  
 Animus, defined, 120  
 Anxiety, as helpful, 139  
 Apprenticeship, necessary years of, 372

Archetypes, as seen in analysis, 313  
 Aridity, causes of, 290  
 Art: and reality, 14; paradox in, 15; *See also*: Phantasy, active  
 Assignment, act of, 281  
 Atheism, core of, 475  
 Attachment: 47, 64; non-attachment, 66  
 Atonement, meaning of, 424  
 Attitude: bias of the conscious, 319; religious, 87; unconscious, in prayer, 195  
 Attitudes, and processes of living, 23  
 Augustine, St., 43, 215, 343, 455  
 Austerity, danger of egocentric, 219  
 Autosuggestion, in prayer, 179  
 Awakening, necessity of, 146  
 Awareness: being sought and found, 8; of a faulty condition, 111; of creative action, 43; of God, 355; requirements of, 355

### B

Bates, William, 224  
 Beauty: as neglected attribute of God, 296; meditation on, 265; of God, 265; as truth, 50  
 Being: conditions of, 114; knowledge as function of, 191; recalling oneself to, 181  
 Belief, in God, 475  
 Benedictines, 430, 431  
 Bible, Intro., 6, 12, 45, 48, 52, 68, 74, 88, 92, 96, 101, 104, 117, 118, 221, 260, 262, 263, 308, 327, 329, 330, 332, 373, 378, 382, 415, 416, 425, 449, 465, 490  
 Biography: as aid, 222, 308  
 Blessedness, 158  
 Books: as aids, 220, 235, 308; *See also*: Reading  
 Breathing: as helpful in meditation, 225, 226  
 Brotherhood, 352  
 Brotherly society, 135  
 Buchan, John, 453  
 Buddhist: communities, 341; meditations, 170, 256, 280; Sutras, 20  
 "But of deep love is the desire to give," 402

### C

Catharsis: aids to, 196; as earliest psychotherapeutic treatment, 306; through confession, 307  
 Catherine, St., 54



- Cause: dangers of a, 364; First Creative, 485  
 Cave: Plato's, 124, 313  
 Center, the: appeal to, 118; in right place, 89; re-orientation around, 372; to be free at, 47; true, 78  
 Change, 153; *See also*: Transformation, inner change  
 Character, responsibility in developing, 74  
 Charity, true, 422  
 Chastity, defined, 404  
 Choice: conscious choice of one's Way, 32; as implication of Way, 40-45; to love, 41; *See also*: Paradox, commitment, decision  
 Christ, 103; as met outwardly, 134; as revealing God, 487  
 Christian, 362; business of the, 365; communities, kinds of, 341; culture, 134; love, 417; Mystic Expression of God, 491  
 Christianity, 34, 59, 103, 218  
 Church, the, 343-345; alternatives to, 346; invisible, 345; identification with, 346; of the spirit, 460; of the spiritual reformers, 459  
 Civilization, debt of, 423  
 Commitment: as including "work," 350; the rewards of, 436; to God—as the Way, 26; to the Good, in prayer, 177; *See also*: Decision, conscious; choice; paradox  
 Community: beloved, 449-463; functions of, 461; the new, 449  
 Competitiveness, 128  
 Completeness: achieving of, 34; *See also*: Integration, individuation, fulfillment, personality  
 Compromise, of self and society, 19  
 Concentration: 234, 288  
 Confession: 305, 327; significance of, 306  
*Confessions of St. Augustine, The*, 221  
 Conflict, as evil of modern times, 184  
 Conscience, as natural selection, 41  
 Conscious: as opposed to unconscious, 318; to become, 115  
 Consciousness: acceptance of, 136; as a kind of death, 102; compassion as phase of, 275; emptying the field of, 204; evolution of, 188, 461; new kind of, 107; of a reality, 113; quest of, 5; to increase the range of, 319  
 Contemplation: as act of whole personality, 206; "passive," 201; as prayer, 182; self transcendent in, 206  
 Contradictions, cultural, 128, 130  
 Conversion, 43, 55  
*Corinthians, I and II*, 88, 330, 373, 416  
 Corporate worship, role of, 343-348  
 Courage, 93; *See also*: Consciousness  
 Creative action: as third stage, 119; awareness of, 43  
 Creativity, 329  
 Crisis: as leading to rebirth, 103; as means of conversion, 120; as needed to shatter "shell," 71  
 Cross, the, 391  
 Crosses, sources and uses of our, 154  
 Crucifixion, meaning of, 81  
 Culture: defects of, 71; modern, 128; step-child of, 130  
 "Cursed is the man who trusts in man," 382
- D
- Damien, Father, 439  
 Dancing, related to active phantasy, 325  
 Dark Ages, description of, 453  
 Dark Night of the Soul, 292  
 Darkness, 46; as the place of God, 82; the individual's inner, 233; of unconscious mind, 328; *See also*: Abyss, anxiety, shadow  
 Death, as act of resignation, 280  
 Decision, conscious, 32; *See also*: Commitment, obedience, choice  
 Dedication, 90  
 Defeat, 158  
 Degrees: of high prayer, 168; and kinds of prayer, 195-207; of loving God, 97; of spiritual life, 114  
 Demands, of religious way, 110  
 Deprivation, in orison of quiet, 204  
 Depth-psychology: as contributing to prayer, 170; and religion, 300; stages of the journey in, 117  
 Desire, 7  
 Destiny, 85  
 Detachment, 51, 52; and attachment, 47; soul's power of, 180  
 Development, individual: anxiety about, 143; related to dedication, 363  
 Devotion: as combined with thought, 185; books to intensify, 220; immaturities in, 285; intercession as part of, 272; invincibility of, 90; necessity of, 89; object of, The Appendix, 445-465; to the Good, 40, 88-101  
 Dichotomy, of religious life, 455  
 Difficulties, in prayer, 282-297  
 Director, religious, 210-217  
 Discipline, 341  
 Discursive Meditation: 197, 199; patterns, 247-277; procedures, 231-247  
 Disinterestedness, 53  
 Distractions, 287  
 Disunity, 184  
 Double mindedness, 28, 143  
 Drawing, related to active phantasy, 325  
 Dream analysis, technique of, 309-313  
 Dreams: "affect" of, 314; and religious experience, 289; and symbol of rebirth, 136; as negative and positive, 312; compensatory quality of, 314; psychic images in, 312; resistance to, 311; reproduction of, 326; use of, in self-knowledge, 310  
 Dryness, spiritual, 293  
 Duty: different from real worship, 295; substitute for love, 415

## E

Education, 127: *See*: Self-education  
 Effectiveness, failure in, 366  
 Effects, as reality of God, 477  
 Ego: as false image of self, 70; as the seeming-self, 148; not interchangeable with self, 485; resistance to changing the, 308; sacrifice of the, 47; to serve the, 137  
 Egocentricity: elimination of, 300; forms of, 138; leads to crisis, 71; role of, 73; self-deception in, 138; types and patterns of, 73  
 Emotion: as governing achievement, 44; negative, 80; release from suppressed, 305  
 Eternal Life, 68  
 Eternity, voice of, 146  
 Ethical demand, refusal of, 178  
 Events, inner relation to, 380  
 "Everlasting No," 155  
 "Everlasting Yea," 157  
 Evil: as conflict and disunity, 184; as false shame, 162; becoming good, 154; dealing with, 425; greater dangers than, 132; in "spiritual" self, 136; self-justification as proof of, 137; technique of, 115  
 Exercises, periods for spiritual, 228  
 Experiment, inadequacy of, 286  
 Experience: of the introvert and extravert, 332; religious, 186; dreams and visions in, 289; related to psychology, 299; spiritual, changed by training, 191; to be true to, 382  
 Eyes, overcoming tension of, 224

## F

Fact, love of, 51  
 Faith: as highest value, 153; as made real, 185; in God, 486; necessity to live in, 475  
 Fasting, 331  
 Feelings: as important in action, 278; integrated with intellect, 305  
 Fellowship: as lesson in receptivity, 336; group, 331; intimate, 331; obstacles to, 252; organic, 408; psychological basis for, 252; value of, 172, 346  
 "Foodless am I and shelterless," 376  
 Forgiveness: and counterforgiveness, 426; as turning to God, 254; way and power of, 424-426  
 Fox, George, 445  
 Francis, St. (of Assisi), 43, 217, 388, 429, 456  
 Francis, Third Order of St., 456  
 Franciscan Method, the, 242  
 Free, ways of being, 47  
 Freedom: as inspiration for work, 361; as related to compassion, 435; meditation on, 271; spiritual, 66  
 Free will, 44  
 Freud, Sigmund, 301, 309  
 Friendship; and emergent unity, 336; positive and negative definitions of, 400  
*From the Wilderness*, 376

Fulfillment, attaining of, 102  
 Functions: creative, in a community, 461; four functions of personality (functional types), 120

## G

*Galatians II*, 48  
 Gandhi, M., 112, 376, 435, 437, 444  
 Genius, following of, 99  
 Gifts, readiness for, 31  
 Gin hac, Pere, 217  
 Goal, in phantasy, 323  
 God: as a paradox, 485; as benevolent power, 472; as completed ideal harmony, 469; fundamental component for belief in, 475; as immanent and transcendent, 483; as known by effects, 476; as life, 483; as mystery and meaning, 486; as other mind—eternal substance, 481; as the self, 483; as revealed in contradictions in science, 472; as revealed in Jesus Christ, 487; as supreme reality, 476; devotion to, 26, 88-92; doing will of, 92-95; generalized mystic ideas of, 489; loving, 96; necessity for worthy view of, 295; some modern ideas of, 469  
 "God speaks," 17  
 God-regarding, 87  
*Golden Age is in my Heart Today, The*, 374  
 Good, the 143; devotion to, 90; willing of, 28  
 Goodness, 427; acquirement of, 54  
 Good works, as distractions, 356  
 Grace: meditation on, 267; power of, 112  
 Gregory, St., 354  
 Group spirit, of Third Order, 459  
 Groups: religious, healing in, 347; unlimited liability of, 340  
 Growth: abandoning illusions in, 16; creative, in a community, 461; dependent on decomposition, 13; involvements solved by, 60; urge to, 332  
 Guilt, common, 427

## H

Happiness: achievement of, 392; wished for one's self, 256  
 Harmony, completed in God, 470  
 "He is the Way," 489  
 "He turns pure Spirit," 409  
 Healings: effected by worship, 194, 347  
 Heart: and mind, 106, 107  
 Help: as needed in self-education, 307; psychological and spiritual, 210  
 "Helper": a good book as, 308; role of the, 307  
 Henry, Father, worker with Eskimos, 392  
 Hindu sources, Intro.  
 Hinduism, 218  
 History, two-fold process of, 18

Holiness: real, 140; meditation on, 266  
 Holy Fellowship: 451; as living in the Center, 453  
 Holy sentence, use of, 260  
 Home, 362  
 Hope, related to affliction, 146  
 House, building of, 45  
*Hui Ming Ching*, 102  
 Human being, central need of, 8; *See also*:  
   Personality, consciousness, devotion  
 Human soul, and personality, 35  
 Humility: a learner of, 58; acts of, 150; and  
   psychic peace, 160; progress in, 150; re-  
   quirements of, 98; world contrary to, 58  
 Humor: and imperfection, 151; related to  
   suffering, 435  
 Hygiene, clinical: as related to spiritual, 303;  
   worship essential to, 193

## I

"I am like a child who awakes at the light,"  
   377  
*I Charge You*, 85  
 "I waited patiently for Jehovah," 378  
 Ideals: role of, 89  
 Ideas of God: 467, 468; Christian Mystic,  
   491; Hindu, 495; Jewish, 490; modern  
   ideas of, 469; neo-Platonic, 490; Taoist,  
   494  
 "If one forsakes love and fearlessness," 419  
 Ignation Exercises, 216  
 Illumination, 54, 55; double urge toward,  
   276; in depth psychology, 119  
 Illusion, 53  
 Images: as false guides, 137; as used by re-  
   ligious people, 228; in active phantasy,  
   324; power of, 118; psychic, in the dream,  
   312  
 Imperfection, 160  
 Imperfections, acceptance of, 151  
 Incarnation, personal, 489  
 Inclusiveness, of love, 410, 413  
 India, the soul of, 436  
 Indifference, center of, 156  
 Individual, the: defined, 381; limiting of,  
   71; *See also*: Personality, human being  
 Individuality: extra-individuality, 59; reali-  
   zation of, 275  
 Individuation, process of, 120, 123; *See also*:  
   Integration, completeness  
 Inferiority, feelings of, 148  
 Influence, on others, 428  
 Initiation, and rebirth, 101  
 Inner: conflict, projections of, 105; strong-  
   hold, 48; victory, and pride, 160; world,  
   entering of, 202  
 "Inner Light," 99, 445  
 Innocence and experience, 17  
 Insecurity, through separateness, 184  
 Insight: acquired in solitude, 188; and ego-  
   centricity, 138; related to action, 352; re-  
   lated to life of Jesus, 358

Insincerity, of daily life, 284  
 Insufficiencies, hiding of, 306  
 Integration: in the world, 351; of feeling and  
   intellect, 305; of the world, 45; *See also*:  
   Individuation, completeness  
 Integrity, and self-scrutiny, 381  
 Intentional living, 7  
 Interdependence: and Christianity, 416; vol-  
   untary of states, 410  
 Interior life: defeat of, 141; practice of, 197  
 Interior man, and spiritual director, 213  
 Interior silence, and orison, 203  
 Introversion, states of, 205  
 Inward: man, privileges of, 36; light, Intro.;  
   turning, 147; world, need to discover, 246  
 Isolation, emotional, 129

## J

Jesus, of Nazareth: Intro., 3, 12, 14, 34, 39,  
   45, 48, 68, 92, 101, 104, 106, 109, 233,  
   261, 262, 264, 352, 354, 358, 413, 418,  
   419, 463  
 Jewish: expression of God, 490; faith, and  
   Oberlin, 442  
 John, St., of the Cross, 213, 219, 292, 357  
 Joseph, Father, 445  
 Journey, of the soul, 374  
 Juan, San, de la Cruz. *See* John, St., of the  
   Cross  
 Judgment: and repression, 328  
 Jung, Carl G., 112, 171, 196, 246, 301, 302,  
   309, 326, 346  
 Justice, divine, 424

## K

Kagawa, 432, 435  
 Karma Yoga, defined, 358  
 Keats, John, 51, 101, 261  
 Kierkegaard, psychology of, 304  
 Kingdom of God, Intro., 63; as immanent,  
   354; steps toward the, 117; within our-  
   selves, Intro., 114  
 Knowledge: as a function of being, 191; as  
   related to action, 350; method for acquir-  
   ing, 190; of God, 150; of oneself, as nec-  
   cessary, 69; of personal wretchedness, 149;  
   of religion and science, 477; of the self,  
   through the Shadow, 81

## L

Lallemant, Father Louis, 356  
 Laotzu, 20, 484  
 Laughter: and imperfections, 150; related to  
   suffering, 435  
 Law: of God, 387; of life, 12  
 Leadership, to invisible center, 102  
 Lee, Gerald S., and Jeanette, 226  
 Legislation, social, and Kagawa, 434  
 Lepers, on Molokai, 135  
 Liberty, use of, 41

Life: as "hatching process," 287; community of, 420; interior. *See* Interior life; meditation on, 274; of action, definition, 356; personal, 400; religious, dichotomy of, 455; spirit of, 182; spiritual, and adversity, 280; spiritual, recollection in, 288  
 Light: belief in, 99; first step toward, 354; following the inner, 99; related to darkness, 101  
 Liguorian Method, the, described, 240  
 Literature, sacred: and illumination, 452; reading of, 220  
 Living: new social patterns of, 461; ways of, 24  
 Longing, as leading to God, 246  
 Lourdes, healings of, 194  
 Love: duty versus, 415; and hatred, 69; and perfection, 217; as inspiration for work, 361; as overvalued, 129; attribute of, 413; "being in love," 404; demands of, 405; eyes of, 97; inclusiveness of, 410, 413; of enemies, 418; of God, 96; of neighbor, 98; of one's partner, 402; of the heart, 92; self-transcendence of, 438; stages of, 401  
 Lovelessness, and society, 131  
 Loyola, 341  
 Lust, mutual, 403

## M

Machine, as divine agency, 479  
 Mana Personalities: 123; dissolution of, 484  
 Man: as vice-creator, 354; good vs. bad, 425; life of the honest, 421; outer and inner, 73; the true, 390  
 Mankind: involvements of, 407, 408; meditation on interdependence of, 273  
 Mask, true face beyond the, 81  
 Maturity: definition of, 159; through negative experiences, 152  
 Meanings, of life, 375  
 Medicine, clinical, and spiritual hygiene, 303  
 Meditation: and short-term concentration, 234; as effective self-education, 190; Buddhist, 256, 281; confessional and undeveloped creativity, 329; confessional, description of, 327; contemporary procedure of, 243; Franciscan method of, 242; Liguorian method of, 240; obstacles in, 282; on "beauty," 265; on forgiveness, 254; on freedom, 271; on "God is love," 255; on "grace," 267; on "holiness," 266; on interdependence of mankind, 273; on levels of personality, 271; on loving kindness, 256; on the nature of reality, 251; on the unifying life, 274; patterns for, 247-281; physical processes during, 223; posture in, 226, 227; procedures for, 235-247; prayer as fruit of, 241; results of, 184-195; Salesian method of, 237; to recall reality, 270; *See also*: Prayer  
 Meekness, 83

"Men of stamina, knowing the way of life," 386  
 Menninger, Karl, 302  
 Mental: disorder, 76; health, as responsiveness, 25; level of personality, 269; prayer 197; *See also*: "Prayer, discursive"; prayer, schools of, 237  
 Mind: accessibility to, 228; and heart, 106, 107; and loving, 185; conscious and unconscious, 229; peace of, 135  
 Mind-body, coordination of, 224  
 Miracle, and prayer, 174  
 Mistakes, related to sins, 159  
 Molokai, lepers of, 439  
 Moment, present, and God, 477  
 Moral demand, 388  
 Moralism, and egocentricity, 79  
 Mortification, definitions of, 218  
 Movement, duality of, 358  
 Mutuality, and historic process, 479  
 Mystery, of God, 486  
 Mysterium Magnum, 133  
 Mystic Way, 113

## N

Nature: divine, 35; God in, 41; intent of, 5; of God in the Person of Christ, 487; of the self, 70-73; the paradox in, 13  
 Negative, experiences and maturity, 151  
 Neo-Platonic, expression of God, 490  
 Neuroses, development of, 130  
 New, the, as hostile to old, 87  
 New life, characteristics of, 119  
 Nicodemus, 104

## O

Obedience: blind, 133; weakness in, 95  
 Oberlin, John Frederick, 410, 442, 444, 446  
 Obstacles: to progression, 128-145; to re-orientation, 110  
 "Old Wise Man," as symbol, 123  
 Opinions, of the world, 133  
 Orientation, desire for, 4  
 Orison, degrees and kinds of, 201  
 Over-anxiety, source of, 154

## P

Painting: comprehension of, 326; related to active phantasy, 325  
 Parables, 52, 463  
 Paradox: 370, 371; as negative aspect of Way, 11, 18, 22; in art, 14; in history, 18; in nature, 13; in psychic life, 16; in science, 15; in *Theologica Germanica*, 36; in world body, 18; *See also*: Choice, decision, commitment  
 Parochial work, by amateurs, 217  
 Participation mystique, 86, 102  
 Pastoral Psychology, Guild of, 196, 289, 293, 304, 348

- Peace: from meditation, 184; from the cross, 391; inner, 389; of mind, 58
- Pearl, the, of great price, 53
- Pearson, Ralph M., 325
- Perception, cleansing of, 46
- Perfection, acquiring of, 217
- Perseverance, necessity of, 297
- Person, process of becoming a, 16
- Persona, the, 81
- Personality: as a social entity, 337; as an act of courage, 32; attainment of, 483; contemplation and, 206; development of, 32, 324; in a religious man, 429; meditation based on levels of, 268; mental level of, 269; related to fellowship, 269; to achieve completeness, 34; value of, 135
- Personalities, action of creative, 357
- Phantasy, Active, methods of, 324
- Phantasy-image: 318; material, handling of, 322
- Phenomena: organic, in prayer, 193; psychological, 289
- Philanthropy, field of, 445
- Philippians*, 330
- Physical, additions, solving of, 60
- Plato, 438, 454
- Pluralist, self as, 161
- Possessions: as bar to spiritual progress, 65; as illusory, 65
- Possessiveness, social, 62
- Posture, in prayer and meditation, 226
- Potentialities, unrealized, 70
- Power: destructiveness of will to, 451; informing, as God, 472; to forgive, 426
- Practice of the Presence of God*, *The*, 371
- Prayer: a discipline, 284; aids to, 218; affective, discussion of, 199, 278; and self-consciousness, 249; as adjustment to cosmic reality, 186; as aid to clinical hygiene, 193; as fruit of meditation, 241; as method for acquiring knowledge, 190; as necessary to spiritual life, 182, 294; as recalling oneself to being, 181; as receptivity, 176; as revelation of self-love, 185; as saying "Yes" to light, 178; as self-observation, 176; as organic movement, 186; as preparation for action, 351; auto-suggestion in, 179; body during, 223; developed through depth-psychology, 170; difficulties in, 282-297; discursive, 197, 199, 232; discursive, patterns for, 247-281; discursive, procedures for, 235-247; distinctions in, 169; evening, procedure for, 249; experiments in, 286; for unity, 184; general definitions of, 175-183; high, 169; intercessory, 272; kinds and degrees of, 195, 210; morning, procedure for, 247; of aridity, 290; organic phenomena in, 193; mental, 232; purpose of, 232; rational soul in, 182; remaking personal and social life, 188; simplification of, 197; steps in, 196-343; to be sustained by, 394; to combine thought and devotion, 185; to make faith real, 185; transition in, 208; *See also*: Meditation
- Pressure: in self-education, 77; social, 284
- Pretension, psychical, 63
- Pride: as inner foe, 160; lack of knowing, 83
- Problems: facing, in worship, 244; social, 431
- Process, historic, 479
- Processes: organic, related to psychological, 195
- Progress: in self-knowledge, 111; indications of, 161
- Progression: allegory of, 124; information concerning, 110-112; obstacles to, 128-145; role of suffering and crisis, 151-158; striving for results, 372; stages of, 112-123
- Projections: as injustices in the world, 270; as unconscious repressions, 309; of inner conflict, 105; resolutions of, 118
- Prosperity, use of, 280
- Providence, 388
- Psychical culture, lack of, 133
- Psychoanalysis: and confessional relationship, 320; and religious problems, 305; dangers of, 319, 321; related to the soul, 301
- Psychology: and religious experience, 299; as concerned with religion, 322; of Kierkegaard, 304; of resistance, 307; "systems" of, 304
- Psychological practice, 5
- Psycho-physical habits, and relaxation, 224
- Psychotherapist, and religious director, 210
- Psychotherapy: and medicine, 303; as technique, 304; catharsis in, 306; past uses of, 170; relation to religion, 299-332, 300, 303; self-education in, 322-332; through religious groups, 347; unconscious factors in, 309
- Puer Aeternus, 136
- Purgation: and "Dark Night," 292; as completion of conversion, 55; as implication of Way, 46-65; more specifically clarified, 50-68; as privilege, 55; general discussion, 40, 46-50; symbols during, 229
- Purification, process of, 14, 55
- Purity, related to maturity, 159

## Q

- Quakers, 446, 448
- Quality, of the self, 381
- Quest of consciousness, 5
- Quiet, as stage of orison, 203
- Quietism: exaggerations of, 205, 219

## R

- Races, 423
- Rank, Otto, 301, 309
- Rational life, aims of, 60

- Reading, practice of daily, 220
- Real, the, 53
- "Realities," the opposing, 318
- Reality, Intro., 40, 54, 72; acceptance of, 66, 86; as pervaded by God, 478; awareness of, 186; approaches to, Intro.; artist's reaction to, 14; cause and effect on aspect of, 251; consciousness of, 113; dedication to, 253; facing of, 8, 250; meditation on, 169, 270; solitary response to, 186; sustaining nature of, 252; the Supreme, 476; to conform to, 55
- Rebirth, 40, 101-107; dream symbols of, 136; symbol of, 313; through crisis, 103
- Recollection: as valuable in training, 203; definition of, 202; in spiritual life, 288
- Recreative process, 182
- Reformation: effects of, 169; of others, 289
- Regression, and growth, 117
- Reintegration, 117
- Relationship: basis for, 402; between action and insight, 352; between psychotherapist and religious director, 210; confessional, 320; mutual love as basic in, 403; of posture to prayer, 226; of spirit to body and mind, 303; personal, defined, 400; purposeful, 399; reciprocal, with God, 94
- Relaxation, in meditation, 223
- Release, from the mother, 121
- Religion: a necessity, 10; and scientific knowledge, 477; as demonstrating self-regard, 135; as invincible, 70; as relationship, 26; as showing personality value, 135; false concept of, 26; in depth-psychology, 300; in self-knowledge, 322; psychological functions of, 305; substance of, 163
- Religions: all religions, 412; as therapies, 87; pseudo-, of totalitarianism, 346
- Religiosity, vague, 346
- Religious: attitude, 87; director, 210-217; spirit, 6
- Religious Way: 24; beginning and following of, 110; finding of, 11; general statements of, 18-39; paradoxical statements of, 12-18
- Renunciation: for vision, 51; of immaturities, 56; of self-love, 56; of spirit of the world, 58; of the ego, 47, 48; opposed to repression, 58; the greatest, 52; *See also*: purification
- Reorientation, and the center, 372
- Repressed drives, 331
- Repression, 58
- Resignation, Act of, 280
- Resistance: to life, 72; psychology of, 307; to changing the Ego, 308; to dream content, 311
- Responsibility: as way to maturity, 329; in character development, 74; of self-acceptance, 85; social, 423
- Rigorous, and spiritual director, 217
- Romans*, 74
- Roots, as necessary to action, 365
- Rules, for life of action, 356
- Ruysbroeck, 190
- S
- Sacrifice, conscious, 331
- Saints, 426
- Salesian Method, the, 237, 240
- "Sanctuary of Sorrow," 157
- Science: and Christian teaching, 92; and religious knowledge, 477; as illustration of truth, 16; the paradox as in, 15
- Search, the; for the Way, Intro., 4-10
- Security: and inner unity, 184; two kinds of, 438
- Seed, the, 73, 145
- Self, the: as assuming two shapes, 140; as center of individual and group, 120; as different from the ego, 485; as disguised, 287; as encased in shell, 70; as God within, 271; as opened to God in prayer, 176; as the "God in us," 485; better, 187; denying of, 31; dying to, 101; essential quality of, 381; false image of, 70; inheritance of, 376; knowing and feeling of, 83; nature of, 70; real, and the Way, Intro.; relation demanded by, 336; seeming and real, 70; seeming or false, 112, 148, 251; thwarting of, 30; true, 72, 88
- Self-abnegation, 87
- Self-acceptance, 40, 84-88
- Self-analysis, 210, 244
- Self-change: as social change, 189; need of help in, 210; slowness of, 189
- Self-conceit, 140
- Self-conscious being, 7
- Self-consciousness, 22, 249
- Self-criticism, 135
- Self-deception: and egocentricity, 138; to strip oneself of, 69
- Self-delusion, 71, 161
- Self-denial, 218
- Self-education: as appeal to egocentricity, 71; as needing help, 307; between introvert and extravert experiences, 332; need of fasting in, 331; pressure in, 77; procedures in, 171; religious psychological method of, 329; through meditation, 190
- Self-emergence, 84
- Self-hate, 135, 136
- Self-justification, as proof of evil, 137
- Self-knowledge, 22, 40, 69-84; a focus of, 106; as affecting action, 432; as self-acceptance, 83; dark night in process of, 292; difficulties of, 76-83; egocentric resistance to, 79; progress in, 83, 111; through analysis of dreams, 310; understanding of religion necessary in, 322
- Self-love, 55, 140; as just and reasonable, 414; as narcissism, 136; danger of, 162; disease of, 185; forms of, 59; subtlety of, 77; wise, 22

Self-respect, 57  
 Self-observation, 73, 177  
 Self-perpetuation, 84  
 Self-preservation, 181  
 Self-recognition, 122  
 Self-regard, 134  
 Self-revelation, 87  
 Self-sacrifice, 136  
 Self-scrutiny, 381  
 Self-stripping, process of, 204  
 Self-transcendence, of love, 438  
 Self-will, 30, 267  
 Selfishness, 95  
 Sensitiveness, 420-422  
 Sentences, for meditation, 260-264  
 Sex and love, 61, 402-405  
 Sin, and unconscious mind, 328  
 Shadow: activity of, 315; and the unconscious, 120; as "other aspect," 120; as related to archetypes, 317; as giving substance, 306; meeting one's own, 81; of ourselves, 157  
 Sheean, Vincent, 416  
 Shell: definition, 70; way out of, 332  
 Sight, internal, 378  
 Silence, 176, 183  
 Simplicity: as a stage of orison, 199, 203; definition, 21; in acting toward God, 163; of the Christian, 399  
 Simplification, in prayer, 197  
 Sincerity, emotional, 403  
 Single-mindedness, 266  
 Singleness, in heart, 36, 37  
 Sleep, and unconscious mind, 249  
 "Slowly on You, too, the meanings: . . ." 375  
*Snow Blind, The*, 383  
 Social change, and self-change, 189  
 Society: based on psychology, 462; better state of, 342; changes in modern, 461  
 Society of Friends: 34  
 Socrates, 437  
 Socratic movement, Intro.  
 Solitude, insight in, 188  
 Soul, the: action of, 182; central part of, 88, 106; journey of, 374; larger principle of, 413; unknown region of, 216  
 "Soul-image": encounter with, 122; symbols of, 120, 121  
 Source, of human spirit, 10  
 Spirit, the: and truth, 478; as God, 472; birth from, 104; cultivation of, 248; demands of, 142; relationship to body and mind, 303  
 Spiritual: new birth, 156; principle personified, 123  
 Spiritual life: degrees of, 114  
 Stages in prayer, detailed description of, 195  
 Stages of progression, 114; psychological description of, 117-120  
 Steps: in perfect prayer, 196; in worship, 243  
 Strength: 95

Subject matter: for meditation, 169, 232, 234  
 Success, as not required, 360  
 Suffering: and love, 153; role of—in progression, 145; as a repairing process, 154; decrease of, 77; through craving to possess, 72  
 Surrender, 151  
 Sustenance, by prayer, 394  
 Symbols: in dream analysis, 312; Magna Mater, 123; Old Wise Man, 123; Puer Aeternis, 136; Tree of Life, 312; and holy sentences, 260; as inborn, 228, 229, 230; as used in religion, 228; Rebirth, 313; related to conscious and unconscious mind, 229; transcendental character of, 327

## T

Talkativeness, harmfulness of, 287  
 Tao, 65, 484, 494  
 Taoism, Wu-wei in, 66  
 Teachings: of Ghandi, 436; *See also*: Jesus of Nazareth  
 Temple of God, 462  
 Temptation: of beginners, 289; of spiritual directors, 213  
 Tension between individuals, 128  
 Theresa, St., 201, 204, 215, 290  
 Theocentric, St. Vincent de Paul as, 445  
 Theocentric, activities of, 430  
 Thinking, symbolic, 229  
 Third Order, The, of Franciscans, 456, 457  
 Thirst, real, 380  
 Thomas, of Spalato, 456  
 Thought: analytical, 188; and devotion, 185; as habitual cast of, 132; integral, 188  
 Thurman, Howard, 173  
 Threshold, of the mind, 228  
 Training, spiritual, necessity of, 167  
 Transcendent function, 319  
 Transference, in worship, 348  
 Transformation, and outer activities, 360  
 Transition, in prayer, 208  
 Treasure, 463; as found in affliction, 147; Kingdom of Heaven as, 52  
 Tree of Life, symbol of, 312  
 Tremendum, as aspect of Godhead, 118  
 Truth: as beauty, 50; as "generating hatred," 142; as love of a fact, 51; barrier to, 96; in science, 15; possessed by the, 77

## U

Ugliness, moral, 265  
 Unconscious: and the Way, Intro.; as related to the conscious through symbol, 229, 318; as the world, 81; collective, 118, 310; consciousness of forces in, 136; discovering connections of, 79; factors, aided by psychotherapy, 309; goals of, 8; inundation of, 317; "of the future," 119; "of the past," 119; personal, 310; protests of, 87; reconditioning of, 11

Unhappiness, 158  
 Unity: longing for, 6; search for inner, 184  
 Universal benevolence, 20  
 Universality, of the Way, Intro.  
 Universe, false, 53  
 Unlived life, 331; *See also*: Darkness,  
 shadow, unconscious

V

Values, absolute, 483  
 Vedanta, 234  
 Vianney, Abbe, 390  
 Vice: knowing one's own, 69; mystical, 205  
 Victorious living, and mistakes, 159  
 Viewpoint, the double, 119  
 Virtue, fear as useful in, 217  
 Visions, and religious experience, 289  
 Vocation, and emancipation, 33  
 Voice, of the Beloved, 37

W

Way, the: approaches to, Intro.; as commitment, 26; as denying self-will, 30; as fidelity to inner vocation, 32; as forsaking of self, 35; as one in all conceptions, 19; as paradoxical law, 12-18; as releasing of real self, Intro.; as steps to simplicity, 21; as total response to best, 24; as voice of beloved, 37; as voluntary change of will, 23; as willing one thing, 28; beginning of, 44; conditions of, 11; demands of, 167; discussion of, Intro.; duplications of, 39; factors in progression on, 112; general statements of, 19; misconceptions of, 10, 11; progression on, 109; purgative, 235; results of, Intro.; special training for, Intro.; through universal benevolence, 20; to prepare for, 35; unconscious related to, 11; universality of, Intro.

Willing, one thing, 28  
 Worship: grades of, 177; requirements of, 177; Christian worship, 178  
 We, the, as source of real life, 148  
 We-activity, beginning steps in, 360  
 We-feeling: character developed by, 78; sense of, 360; through negative experiences, 152  
 We-psychology, and self-education, 78  
 Whole, selfhood of the, 481  
 Wieman, Henry Nelson, 467  
 Will of God, 92; *See also*: Paradox, way  
 Willingness, and courage, 93  
 Wisdom, 395  
 Woolman, John, 385, 410, 422  
 Word, use of one, 264  
 Work: as prayer, 363; as result of commitment, 350; knowing the honor of, 362; true work defined, 361  
 World, the: as impossible to satisfy, 285; effort at remaking, 351; in the service of, 138; injustices in, as projections, 270; opinion of, 133; process of integration within, 351  
 World Man, answer to the, 18  
 World States, interdependence, 410  
 Worship: steps in the act of, 243; and transference, 348; and work, 350; as essential to clinical hygiene, 193; contemporary procedures in, 243; description of, 179, 180; effective in healing, 347; readjustment of personality in, 245; real nature of, 295; self-analysis in, 244  
 Wrath, the God of, 480

Y

Yogis, 297

Z

Zen monk, 64







































UNIVERSAL  
LIBRARY



138 747

UNIVERSAL  
LIBRARY